



GOD AND DEVIL WORLD

BOOK 05

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

Epub creation by Lisa Hayes

God and Devil World

(神魔系统)

by

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

(资产暴增)

Synopsis

In less than an instant the world as we knew it was at its end.

That's right. The Apocalypse. In a single blink Zombies appeared and mutated monsters began to rampage all throughout the world. Now it was the human species turn to fight for survival and planetary dominance!

On the same day that the world descends into chaos we meet Yue Zhong. Initially only hoping to get to his friends and escape to a refugee camp our protagonist sets out, inadvertently building a team along the way. After a series of fortuitous events and a few serious hunches our hero decides it's time to do more than just survive!

Yue Zhong begins to form the foundations of an enormous survival plan... before he suddenly discovers that he has only gotten over the first hurdle.... Unbeknownst to Yue Zhong and company, the world outside of China is mostly a wasteland! Country sized swathes of nuclear radiation and an extreme shortage of supplies in the world after the nuclear explosions was quickly becoming the "norm". Mutants, Evolved animals and what's worse, intelligent out of control dinosaurs had quickly appeared and claimed their own sections of the planet. There were several innately powerful Evolved races which appeared that were more than 10 times stronger than humans, nearly all of them possessing bodies impenetrable by normal bullets. The fabled orcs' were another of these Evolved races, the leader of which had in fact enslaved many of the remaining human beings.

Unceremoniously exposed to such a cold and heartless new world, Yue Zhong is faced with a choice: Find a deep dark hole and hope it goes back to "normal"? Or overcome all obstacles and struggle towards Evolution!!!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Editing by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401: Yangtze Gang

"Ah!!!! Help!!! Save me!!" Liu Zi Ning screamed out in agony.

Yue Zhong kicked out viciously, his foot connecting with Liu Zi Ning's abdomen, sending him flying back into a clothes' rack, before he slumped to the floor.

"Young Master!!" Right at this time, 2 Enhancers who had decent levels charged forwards, helping Liu Zi Ning up.

Liu Zi Ning was arrogant and despotic, and his father being worried that he might one day have his just desserts, assigned for 2 experts to guard him. It was precisely because of the existence of these 2, Liu Zi Ning had not tasted hardship before!!

Liu Zi Ning looked at his broken right hand, and screamed out in madness: "My hand's broken!! Kill him!! Kill him!! I'll bear all responsibilities!! Bring his head here!!! Don't hurt the woman beside him, capture her alive!!"

"Yes, Young Master!!" The 2 experts exchanged a look, as the gleam in their eyes turned dangerous, and pulled out daggers from their shirts. They then shot towards Yue Zhong explosively.

The weapons control in Guilin City was strict, and thus, fights between gangs usually involve only melee weapons. As long as anyone made use of firearms, it would be considered an act of revolt against the government, and the Special Forces, armed police and Army would all deploy, and take down the threat. Therefore, unless it concerned the survival of the triad, no one was willing to risk using firearms.

The only circumstance when guns were allowed was the hunting parties left the city to scavenge. Even then, each firearm would require a large number of ammunition, and had to be left in the possession of guarantors. The moment something went wrong, these guarantors would be dragged down as well. Lastly, the most

threatening weapons that could be loaned out were only the rifles. Heavy artillery weapons would never be issued.

Yue Zhong took a step forward, reaching out his hands and easily grabbing the head of one of the experts. He swung viciously to the right, sending the expert right in the path of the other guard, and their heads smashed together violently, before they crumpled to the ground.

If Yue Zhong had not shown mercy, those 2 experts would have been killed already.

"You want to kill me?" Yue Zhong's eyes blazed as he took slow steps towards Liu Zi Ning.

"Don't come over!! Yue Zhong!! Don't come over!!!" Liu Zi Ning saw the devil-like Yue Zhong nearing, and became frantic, as he scrambled backwards.

At this time, 7 men came over and saw the pathetic appearance of Liu Zi Ning, as one of them came up to ask, his face bearing a knife scar: "Young Master Liu! What happened?"

Liu Zi Ning saw the scar-faced man and immediately shouted: "Good timing!! Huang Weili!! Go kill that man!! Kill him!! I will get my father to promote you immediately!! I'll gift you 5 virgins and 20 tonnes of rations!!"

"Yes, Young Master!!" Huang Weili was immediately hooked by that proposition, as he got excited and raised his head to look towards Yue Zhong as he began to yell: "Which bastard...."

"Young Master Yue? My apologies! My apologies! Sorry! Sorry!! I deserve to die!! I was a fool!! Young Master Yue, please have mercy, and forgive my stupid mistake!!" The moment Huang Weili saw Yue Zhong, his expression changed, and he knelt immediately, trembling as he pleaded.

The 6 other subordinates of Huang Weili also had similar expressions, as they knelt down at once. Back then, when Bai

Xiaosheng wanted to silence them, his expression was extremely natural, obviously having silenced countless people before. They did not dare go against that group of people who easily wiped the village of zombies clean.

"Who is he exactly??" Gao Xiaoyun looked at the those people kneeling in front of Yue Zhong, and her heart was filled with shock and regret.

"Bai Xiaosheng!" Yue Zhong called out indifferently.

"Boss!! What's the matter?" His voice had just resounded, when Bai Xiaosheng suddenly appeared in front of everybody, and other than Yue Zhong, no one knew where he appeared from.

Seeing Bai Xiaosheng, Huang Weili and his group became even more terrified. This man was numb to killing, his methods ruthless, and his ability shockingly high. If they had acted against Yue Zhong earlier, they would have become a pile of corpses.

Yue Zhong pointed at Liu Zi Ning, Huang Weili and the rest: "Yangtze Gang wants to lay a hand on me! Since it's like this, let's take them down!! Go bring some men and kill them. Since our Green Stone Triad is about to make its debut, we will need a stepping stone to bring us into the limelight. Let Yangtze Gang fill that role. This is the Liu Zi Ning, the son of the leader Liu Xuan He. Bring these 6 men with you, they should know loads about Yangtze Gang."

Bai Xiaosheng became excited and replied: "Hehe!! Great! Cooping up at home these past few days have been so boring, my bones have become rigid! Oh yes, after we take down the Yangtze Gang, if there are any women, give me one or two ok Boss?! I'm almost bored to death!!"

Although Bai Xiaosheng was lustful and indulged in the company of beauties and hated complications, as an Evolver, his blood was also filled with the thirst of battle. Other than having sex, only fighting and killing could give him the same adrenaline.

"Don't you have to get going by now??" Yue Zhong raised his eyebrow at Bai Xiaosheng.

"Yes Boss!" Bai Xiaosheng shot forwards, and kicked out at Liu Zi Ning's head, causing him to faint.

Bai Xiaosheng grabbed Liu Zi Ning's hair, and dragged him like a dead dog as he turned to face Huang Weili and the rest, commanding in a cold tone: "Those who don't wish to die at my hands, Come with me!"

Huang Weili and the rest felt their body shiver, as they stood up, and followed Bai Xiaosheng docilely.

Mu Xiangling came to Yue Zhong's side, and had a curious look: "Yue Zhong-gege! Are we about to fight?"

Xin Jiarou looked at Yue Zhong with a resolute expression: "Master! This battle, let this slave fight for you!"

Yue Zhong declined immediately: "No, Your current level is only 1! It's not time for you to join in battles yet"

Although Xin Jiarou had huge potential as an Agility-based Evolver, and had gained some equipment from Yue Zhong, causing her stats to be almost the same as a Level 20 Enhancer, her combat experience was simply too low. If she were to face off against those Enhancers, she would definitely lose. Hearing Yue Zhong reject it, Xin Jiarou did not press the issue further.

Gao Xiaoyun looked at the pure and elegant looking Ning Yuxin, as well as the absolutely charming and mature Xin Jiarou, and her eyes were filled with endless jealousy. Those 2 absolute beauties were existences she herself would never be able to compete with, and Yue Zhong had gained their approval, on top of that, that Bai Xiaosheng had appeared. The expressions and behaviour of Huang Weili and the rest had shown her clearly that Yue Zhong was not simply just the son of a lowly civil servant.

"Let's go!!" Yue Zhong brought the 3 ladies out, without so much

as glancing at Gao Xiaoyun.

Gao Xiaoyun opened her mouth to say something, but the words got stuck in her throat, as her eyes turned red, and she started wailing in anger and hatred.

Yangtze Gang was one of the biggest triad in Guilin City, with about a 1000 people under them. There were about a hundred plus of them who were actual expert fighters as well. They had carved out a living for themselves engaging in black market dealings, and they earned a huge amount of ration tickets each day.

In a lush nightclub within the Yangtze Gang's territory.

Liu Xuan He was currently bellowing in rage: "What?! Zi Ning had been abducted? Which bastard has such guts, and actually dares to abduct my son?"

One of the smaller leaders, Li Qin replied solemnly: "It's the Green Stone Triad! Young Master was abducted by them!! There's a high-ranking leader in there called Yue Zhong, and he's the son of a small civil servant!"

Li Qin was usually in charge of gathering intel, and the moment Liu Zi Ning was captured, he heard of it quickly and sent people out to investigate.

Liu Xuan He roared out in anger: "Green Stone Triad!! I want you all in hell!!"

Every dragon had a reverse scale, which could not be touched. Liu Zi Ning was Liu Xuan He's reverse scale, whoever touched his only son, he would never let the person go.

Right at this time, an ordinary Yangtze Gang hooligan came running into the room pathetically: "Boss!! Boss!! Someone came to mess with us!! The various guards have all been killed!!"

The moment the hooligan just pushed open the door, the flash of a blade appeared by his neck, and his head was sent flying, landing on the floor, as fresh blood spurt all over the place.

At almost the same time, a gunshot rang out, and before Li Qin had even caught sight of the intruder, there was a bullet hole between his brows, as he crumpled lifelessly to the floor.

Killing Li Qin and the hooligan within a breath, Bai Xiaosheng walked in as he smiled in an extremely terrifying manner at Liu Xuan He: "You must be the leader of the Yangtze Gang! I'm Bai Xiaosheng, one of the elders of the Green Stone Triad! Today I shall use your head to exchange for 2 beauties with my boss!"

Liu Xuan He stared back at Bai Xiaosheng with an extreme chill in his eyes, as he asked solemnly: "I'm Liu Xuan He! Our Yangtze Gang and your Green Stone Triad never had any conflicts, why the sudden clash?"

Bai Xiaosheng's body disappeared in a flash, and appeared behind Liu Xuan He in an instant, as a blade came rushing down towards Liu Xuan He's head: "Simple! You being alive is a threat to us! So you have to die! Old fogey, I let you live for a few seconds more, you should be appreciative of that!"

Liu Xuan He pressed a button under his table, and the chair he was on immediately retracted. At the same time, a pressure weighed down on Bai Xiaosheng, causing his speed to slow significantly.

Liu Xuan He stared at Bai Xiaosheng and his eyes were filled with venom: "Green Stone Triad!! Yue Zhong!! Bai Xiaosheng!! I will remember you guys. This time, as long as I'm alive, I will definitely not let you guys have an easy life. I will hunt you down, and cause you to live forever in fear of my coming retribution!!!"

Chapter 402: Counter Attack

There was a secret rail mechanism below Liu Xuan He's chair, and it would allow him to escape from this place.

"That is why you must die!!" Following a fierce growl, a sharp spike came shooting out from the ground, piercing Liu Xuan He's entire body like a giant bloody meat skewer.

Liu Xuan He's eyes flashed with resentment, as he spat a mouth of blood out, resentfully he stared at the sharp spike that had come bursting out of the ground.

Bai Xiaosheng swung his blade casually, and chopped off Liu Xuan He's head.

The floor of the building split, as Chen Shenggang appeared with the support of a rock pillar, and he gazed at the headless corpse and asked: "This is Liu Xuan He?"

Bai Xiaosheng kicked the head of Liu Xuan He, and coldly replied: "Yep! I'll leave the clean up to you!!"

Chen Shenggang took a glance at the 3 dead bodies, before stepping on the ground hard. The earth split open, and swallowed up the 3 corpses.

With Liu Xuan He's death, the entire Yangtze Gang soon fell apart. The majority of the gang members were absorbed by men brought by Yue Zhong, and those who resisted were immediately killed and buried. At the end, only a dozen other core members who were out searching for resources managed to escape the ordeal.

Within Guilin City, such matters between triads were extremely normal and frequent. In this apocalyptic world, as long as a strong and capable Enhancer served as the backbone, a triad could be quickly formed. However, Yangtze Gang was after all a huge triad with over a 1000 members and over 20 Enhancers of at least Level

20. Such a triad was actually annihilated, and it sent shockwaves throughout Guilin City.

Over at the Green Bamboo Gang headquarters, a male came up to Gao Minghao's side and said slowly: "Leader! Yangtze Gang was just taken down!"

Gao Minghao put down the book in his hands, as his eyes widened with shock: "Tang Shi. Who did it?"

Tang Shi replied solemnly: "It was the Green Stone Triad!"

Tang Shi continued softly: "Who the leader is, no one knows, it is only known that amongst their upper echelons, there's a Yue Zhong. Those who actually went to massacre the headquarters were these guys called Bai Xiaosheng, Ying Kaishan and Chen Shenggang! Those who saw them act were all killed, and as for their abilities, other than Bai Xiaosheng being extremely fast, the rest are unknown. But, it's certain that they're all high level Enhancers."

Gao Minghao sighed, as his fingers touched the tabletop gingerly: "Yue Zhong right? Seems like another hungry wolf has appeared in our Guilin City!"

Tang Shi asked in a low voice: "Leader! Shall we touch him?"

Gao Minghao shook his head: "There's no need! The Yangtze Gang wasn't easy to annihilate! They had taken it down just like that, there would be others who would naturally act! There's no need for us to move!"

After absorbing the Yangtze Gang, Yue Zhong's Green Stone Triad doubled in size overnight, and became a huge triad that had over a thousand people. The main backbone of the group was still only the 30+ trustworthy Enhancers that he brought in. However, the intel and reach he had within Guilin City had naturally increased by a very large degree

Within 2 days of taking over Yangtze Gang, groups of policemen

charged into the various ex-Yangtze Gang's territory, and conducted raids. Any gambling dens, restaurants, bars, or entertainment spots, were subjected to the raids, and business was affected. Over 200 members of the Green Stone Triad were arrested and thrown in jail after being charged with various offences.

Yue Zhong just brought the upper echelons of the Green Stone Triad to hide and wait out the storm, not squaring off against the police in Guilin City. However, with this decision, the Green Stone Triad that he formed lost faith, and almost collapsed immediately.

The Glorious Golden Jade was a 5-star hotel in Guilin City, and every night, it would be lit up with countless lights, and cars would be in and out of the place. In this apocalyptic world, even though fuel was precious, and the rental of vehicles was expensive, the number of luxurious cars here was still staggering.

Within a smoke-filled lavish room.

A suave-looking middle-aged man with golden hair and dressed in a black suit was currently toasting a fat old man opposite him, who was flanked on either sides by 15,16-year-old girls as he said: "This time, it's truly thanks to you, Superintendent Dan! We could clear up the poison that is Green Stone Triad thanks to your help! Here, I shall toast you!"

The golden hair male with a sturdy and suave look was called Ma Li Tie, and he was an Elder of the Freemasons, one of the four big triads in Guilin City! The Hong Triad here was different from the one in Vietnam, as it was a coincident that they both had the same name. The name Hong Triad was powerful and distinct, and many wildly ambitious underground people had chosen the same name when establishing their own triads. *1

The Yangtze Gang was a subsidiary group of the Hong Triad. If the forces were to combine, Hong Triad could be considered to have over 10,000 people. To prevent the government from

clamping down on them, they had chosen to separate their forces, and convert the remaining into subsidiaries. The Yangtze Gang was one such subsidiary, incidentally, also their biggest one.

The old fat man with the protruding belly was precisely Dan Hong, the superintendent of Xin Yang District. As the Xin Yang District was flourishing and had high human traffic, the director that was sent from there had a sizeable amount of power as well. Dan Hong happened to be the trusted aide of the Mayor of Guilin City, Chen Ying, and in another few months, he would be able to become the Deputy Director of the Public Security Bureau. Within the police force, he had huge presence and influence.

The fat Dan Hong reached for the skirt of the girl younger than his son with his pudgy hands, and touched her inappropriately, as he replied with a bureaucratic air: "That Green Stone Triad dares to open up gambling dens and engage in prostitution, trading underaged children, such heinous crimes! As government officials, we are honour-bound and rightfully due to deal with these despicable sort of illegal groups!"

Beside Dan Hong, there was a bespectacled man of about 26 or 27 who chuckled lightly at Dan Hong's words before speaking. "That's right! Superintendent Dan, I implore you to officially announce an arrest warrant for Yue Zhong, Bai Xiaosheng, Ying Kaishan and Chen Shenggang! We must get rid of these hooligans, and retain peace and security in Guilin City!"

The young man was Ma Li Tie's trusted aide and general Jiang Li Hong! He was a crafty individual with cunning ideas, and was known to others as the Bespectacled Snake.

The moment the police force were to issue that warrant, then Yue Zhong and the other 3 would become enemies of the entire Guilin City. They would be forced to live underground, and the Green Stone Triad would become the target for the cleanup of the government.

Dan Hong replied with disinterest: "This! I would still need to go back and discuss with the leader!!"

Dan Hong was extremely clear on these sort of games. If he were to really issue that warrant, he would become the target of these 4 high level Enhancers. By then, it was either the death of Yue Zhong and the rest, or he would be killed by them.

Regarding high level Enhancers, unless it was to a non-salvageable situation, the police force would not just casually force them into a corner as well. The moment they did that, the government special forces would step in, and annihilate these offenders at all cost. Hence, if one wanted to point their fingers at the Enhancers, there had to be concrete proof of their negative effect on society, only then could the warrant be issued.

Any warrants issue for the arrest of Enhancers required the approval of the higher ministers within the government. As a superintendent of the police force, Dan Hong was allowed to arrest them, but if it was discovered that he had a hand in the shady dealings, then he can forget about everything in his career. Dan Hong could deploy the police to capture Yue Zhong's men, but he could not casually issue the warrant of arrest of the Enhancers. Since this would affect his livelihood, he naturally wasn't as interested.

Jiang Li Hong chuckled, and handed over a cheque over: "Superintendent Dan. As long as you settle this for us, this would be yours!"

Dan Hong glanced at the cheque, and his heartbeat quickened. The figure on the cheque was a 1,000 tonnes of rations. Dan Hong's monthly salary was only a 100-jin of rations, to get a 1,000 tonnes of ration, he would have to slog for at least a 1,000 years. This 1,000-tonnes of rations was comparable to a billion RMB prior to the apocalypse, if not more. He had seen a number of ration tickets, and knew that this was real.

Jiang Li Hong clapped twice, and a beautiful lady in revealing clothes pushed a metal cage into the room, and within the cage, there were 2 girls who looked exactly the same, both wearing white dresses, their ages about 11 or 12.

The moment Dan Hong saw the twins inside the cage, he inhaled sharply, and excitement could be seen in his eyes. He liked such arrangements, and the 2 girls inside the cage were the best he had ever seen.

Jiang Li Hong stared fixedly at Dan Hong who had a beast-like expression and chuckled: "Superintendent Dan, as long as you help us once, this pair of twins would be yours. They're still virgins, no man had ever touched them. I think, you must like them alot."

Dan Hong licked his lips, and kept the cheque in his pocket, his eyes fixed on the twins like an excited hunter, saying: "Good!! I'll promise you!! Send them to my room!!"

Ma Li Tie looked at Dan Hong with contempt and laughed coldly, he had seen plenty of such lustful perverts. The Hong Triad had taken in many such beauties, and had set them aside as gifts to various governing officials. As long as Dan Hong accepted the twins, he could control Dan Hong, and naturally, Dan Hong would become his dog.

One Hong Triad member suddenly burst into the room reporting to Ma Li Tie: "Elder!! Yue Zhong is here!! He's currently inside our casino!!"

"Yue Zhong? Why would he be here?" Ma Li Tie's expression changed, and immediately stood up to go to the security room.

Inside the casino of the Glorious Golden Jade, there were people bustling everywhere, as gamblers gathered and excited engaged in different tables, waving chips and dealing cards. In any era, as long as there was stability, gambling would occur. The gamblers were here to bet and win money, but more so to release the stress and fear of the uncertain future.

Yue Zhong brought Ning Yuxin and walked into this casino, and most of the gamblers here were already feverish, not noticing them.

Ning Yuxin grabbed Yue Zhong's arm, as she looked around at the people with a crazed expression in their eyes, and frowned: "Why are we here? Yue Zhong! You will lose 9 out of 10 times, don't pick up this bad habit!"

Yue Zhong laughed indifferently, and went to a table which bet only on "Small, Big *2", and threw chips that he had exchanged for 100 tonnes of rations onto the table, coldly calling out: "I'm betting big! This time you must give me big!"

"100 tonnes!!"

"What a large sum!!"

"This guy has capital! He actually bet with a 100 tonnes of ration off the bat!!"

"That chick beside him sure is pretty!"

"....."

A bunch of gamblers around Yue Zhong started engaging in discussion.

Yue Zhong stared at the dealer, activating his [Art of Fear]: "Shake it! I need to win!"

A huge oppressive Spiritual attack overwhelmed the mind of the dealer, causing him to engulfed in an illusion. His hand shook, as he tried to shake according to how he was trained, before opening the dice cup, and the result made him feel like he was doused in a bucket of ice.

"Big!!"

"It was Big!! Damn it! This brat sure has luck!!"

"If I had known I would have bought Big as well!"

"....."

At this side, all the gamblers exclaimed with regret upon witnessing the scene.

"Big!" Yue Zhong continued, tossing the 200 tonnes-equivalent of chips on 'Big', before coldly staring at the dealer again.

The poor dealer had no way of controlling himself as he tossed the body according to Yue Zhong's orders again.

"It's Big again!!"

"What the shit!! How is this possible?"

"....."

Those gamblers started getting excited, after 'Big' had opened twice, this caused them to become excited.

"Continue, Big!!" Yue Zhong kept his eyes on the dealer and exclaimed.

The dealer just stood there like a frigid body and followed Yue Zhong's orders and shook another 'Big'.

"Hot damn!!"

"Master!!! This is the God of Gamblers!! He definitely is the God of Gamblers!!"

"God of Gamblers!! Please accept me as your disciple!!"

"....."

Those gamblers around Yue Zhong started to look at him with a look of reverence and admiration.

Yue Zhong called out indifferently: "Continue! Big!"

"Big!!"

"I want 'Big' as well!!"

"....."

Most of the gamblers immediately threw their money on 'Big'.

The dealer again rolled the dice under Yue Zhong's orders, resulting in a 'Big'.

By now, the casino had lost 2,000 tonnes of food, and all the gamblers whooped in excitement.

"Continue, Big!" Yue Zhong's face did not change at all, as he commanded coldly. He wanted to make use of this dealer before he was swapped out.

This time, all the gamblers had thoroughly admired Yue Zhong like he was a god, and threw all their money on 'Big' as well. Some other gamblers came from the other tables as well to join in the fray.

The dealer rolled a 'Big' again under Yue Zhong's support.

By this time, Yue Zhong had fleeced arounda 3,600 tonnes of rations' worth of chips, and the rest of the gamblers had their gains as well.

Chapter 403: Bringing Down The House!

"Wait a moment!" Right at this moment, the manager of the casino came running forward, his face full of perspiration, and he brought a few security guards with him.

"What! Is your place not going to pay up after losing?" Yue Zhong glanced at the manager and his security guards, barking out coldly while smirking.

"Fuck! This daddy had lost over a tonne of ration tickets! I've just started to make back my loss and you guys don't want to pay?"

"I didn't say anything when I was losing, now that your casino is losing you want to ignore us?"

"....."

The various gamblers around Yue Zhong started to curse out loud, and the entire casino became tense.

Yue Zhong hugged Ning Yuxin close to him with one arm as he observed the events unfolding while smiling coldly. There was no need for him to act, and these gamblers who had just chanced on a windfall would automatically band together to make a ruckus.

The manager glared at Yue Zhong and said in a solemn voice: "Sir! I suspect that you're cheating!! You must be an Enhancer! This casino doesn't allow Enhancers to gamble!"

"I did not see any of such announcements anywhere! Your casino is obviously unwilling to pay up! Everyone, let's trash this place! We must snatch back our money!!" Yue Zhong laughed coldly, before suddenly exploding out and kicked out explosively at the manager, causing him to fly back 6-7 metres, knocking a few tables over.

After taking out the manager with a single kick, Yue Zhong shot forward and sent out a flurry of punches at the security guards, the punches so quick that only shadows could be seen. The guards

were knocked back explosively, spitting out a mouthful of fresh blood.

The moment Yue Zhong acted, the whole casino plunged into chaos, and screams rang out. Within the big hall, many tried to escape. Some gamblers who had lost terribly saw that no one was paying attention to them, and made a beeline for the chips exchange. They beat up the service staff, before stealing those ration-tickets and running for the exit in a frenzy.

Right at this time, a burly young man with an eagle-like gaze and the snarl of a wolf came into the lobby floor with a number of subordinates, as he barked out coldly: "Who dares to cause trouble at my place, are you tired of living?!"

This fierce looking young man was one of the 10 strongest fighters in Hong Triad, the Blade Demon Han Wen Li! His enhancement level reached 40, and he had killed a huge number of Mutant Beasts, zombies as well as human opponents. The strongest fighter of the Green Bamboo Gang Wang Wen Shen was killed by him.*1

Yue Zhong glanced at Blade Demon Han Wen Li and issued an order coldly: "Kill them all!"

White Bones, who had been posing as an ordinary gambler, suddenly launched its assault. 10 sharp bone spikes shot out from its body, aiming for Han Wen Li.

Han Wei Li's vision and attention was fixed on Yue Zhong, and when he was ambushed by the sudden assault from White Bones, he was taken aback.

However, he was after all still an expert that had been through countless battles, and he quickly condensed a few blade shadows to deal with the bone spears.

After the sounds of metal clashing, the 10 bone spears were actually blocked by Han Wei Li.

Peng! Just as Han Wen Li managed to defend by a narrow margin, Yue Zhong had already pulled out his Stinger and fired a shot at Han Wei Li's head.

In that instant, Han Wei Li, who had expended his all to defend against the 2 of them, had his head blasted into smithereens, as the ever familiar red and white pulpy chunks splattered on the floor. As he fell, his lifeless body was instantly pierced by a bone spear.

After penetrating Han Wei Li, the bone spear that was dyed red by the blood grew forward in a line and pierced through the subordinates that had followed in. In an instant, the dozens of Hong Triad members found their bodies sliced in two, as their innards and blood gushed out onto the floor. Blood curdling, miserable, hair-raising screams resounded throughout the entire casino both from the victims and bystanders.

Witnessing the gruesome and terrifying scene, all the gamblers, dealers and service staff felt intense fear, and began to run for their lives.

Ning Yuxin looked on at the horrible plight of those Hong Triad members, and her face turned paler than a sheet. It was the first time she was witnessing a one-sided fight of this level of cruelty!

Yue Zhong shot a look at the security cameras and smirked, doing a 'cut throat' motion, before following Ning Yuxin and White Bones out of the place.

Ma Li Tie watched the events through the security cameras, and saw the countless corpses, his eyes filled with intense fury and he screamed: "I will kill him!! I want to kill him!"

Dan Hong saw the numerous Hong Triad members who had their lower bodies sliced off, and his heart was filled with regret, as his fat body trembled.

Jiang Li Hong's brows creased gently, as he thought: "What's going on? Is he giving up just like this? Impossible, he's definitely

not like this!!"

In the Glorious Golden Jade, security was tight, and there were many hidden weapons and traps. If Yue Zhong was to forcefully charge in, Ma Li Tie felt that he would be able to thoroughly teach Yue Zhong a lesson.

Hong!!

At this time, the entire hotel shook, as though a giant had knocked into the building with extreme force.

With that huge sound, the Glorious Golden Jade began crumbling and collapsing unto itself, as the building broke apart. Over 200 Hong Triad members were buried within the debris.

Bai Xiaosheng patted the man beside him on the shoulder and laughed as he watched the building fall. "Chen Shenggang, this time, you did great! With this, I'm sure that at least 3/4 of those filthy trash inside are dead!"

Chen Shenggang wiped the perspiration off his face. His expression was one of pride, yet he humbly said: "It's all due to the Boss!! If it wasn't for his idea, I wouldn't even know that my ability could be used like this! Furthermore, Boss had been in there for some time drawing their attention, otherwise I would have practically no way of utilizing my skill!"

The collapse of the Glorious Golden Jade was precisely due to Chen Shenggang making use of his [Earth Manipulation] skill that forcefully caused the foundations of the building to give way, in turn resulting in the entire building being destroyed.

The attention of Ma Li Tie and the rest were all on Yue Zhong, and this gave Chen Shenggang the needed time to cast his skill.

"Chen Shenggang! Come here!"

"Yes!" Under Yue Zhong's orders, Chen Shenggang quickly came to his side.

"Separate this area!" Yue Zhong pointed to a huge pile of debris.

On top of that very pile of rubble, was a Shadow Wolf standing watch. In fact, it could be used to sniff out the scent of people who were still alive inside the debris.

Chen Shenggang walked over, and activated his skill. The ground started to open up, revealing 2 Hong Triad members. Both of them were entirely drenched with blood.

Yue Zhong only gave them a cursory glance and White Bones shot out 2 sharp spikes into their chests. Killing them immediately was always the best plan, so as to remove later potential threats.

With the guidance of the Shadow Wolf, the ground opened up a number of times after that, and the remaining Hong Triad survivors were killed by White Bones without mercy.

The ground split open again, but this time, a huge wolf-like claw shot out, slashing towards Chen Shenggang.

At the same time, White Bones exploded out with a sharp bone blade that directly slashed at the wolf claw, chopping it off and causing blood to spray out!

Chen Shenggang's face flashed with shock and fear, and retreated a few steps. If it wasn't for White Bones, his neck might have been snapped by that huge wolf-like claw.

From the rubble, Ma Li Tie's agonized scream of fury rang out: "Yue Zhong!! I am Hong Triad's Elder Ma Li Tie!! You can't kill me!! Otherwise, the entire Hong Triad will come after your blood!! You won't have a place to live in Guilin City at all!!"

Within the rubble, Dan Hong's trembling voice also sounded: "Yue Zhong!! I am Dan Hong!! The superintendent of Xinyang District!! You can't kill me!! If you kill me, it's tantamount to slaying a government official! The government would definitely not let you off!!"

Inside the rubble, Jiang Li Hong was currently breathing

raggedly, blood dripping from the side of his mouth. Besides him, it was only Dan Hong, the pair of twins trapped in the metal cage, as well as Ma Li Tie who had transformed into a werewolf that were still alive.

When the building had started to collapse, Jiang Li Tao had immediately activated his ability [Air Barrier], and made use of the metal cage to block some of the falling debris. Otherwise they would have all died, or at the very least, been permanently crippled.

The collapse of the Glorious Golden Jade had seriously spooked Ma Li Tie, Dan Hong and the rest. It was the first time that they had skirted the edge of death.

Yue Zhong looked at the pile of rubble and barked out coldly: "Get out all of you! I'm giving you only 20 seconds. If not, I'm going to lob a grenade in there!"

As of now, a single hand grenade would be able to decimate the rubble and killing everyone within it. There was absolutely no cause of worry that these people wouldn't immediately go to heaven, or hell.

With the threat, Ma Li Tie and the rest climbed out from the rubble gingerly.

Ma Li Tie, who had turned into a 3m-tall werewolf earlier, and having an arm that was chopped off, looked at Yue Zhong and slowly spoke: "Yue Zhong! This time, I recognize your strength! As long as you let me leave here alive! Everything in the past will be forgotten by the Hong Triad. The Green Stone Triad would also be considered our good friends!"

Ma Li Tie only wanted to live right now, as to future plans, he would leave it to only after ascertaining he had a future.

"Seal his movements!" Yue Zhong eyed Ma Li Tie and ordered detachedly.

White Bones suddenly shot out 3 sharp bone blades and sliced off Ma Li Tie's remaining right arm and both legs, crippling him, as his limbless body fell to the floor.

"Ah!!! Yue Zhong!! I'll kill you!!" *2 Ma Li Tie screamed out in agony and burning hatred.

Seeing Ma Li Tie's wretched appearance, Jiang Li Hong, Dan Hong as well as the 2 lolis inside the cage shivered with immense fear.

Dan Hong looked at Yue Zhong and trembled visibly, as he stammered: "You can't kill me!! I'm a government official!! If you kill me, the government won't let you off!!"

Yue Zhong threw a Dark Magic Blade in front of Dan Hong, pointing to Ma Li Tie, and held his Stinger to Dan Hong's head, threatening: "Dan Hong, Chop off his head, and work for me. I will then leave you with your life! Otherwise I can immediately blow your brains out! *3

You have 5 seconds to decide! 5...!"

Chapter 404: The Clutches of Foreign Forces!

"I'm sorry!" Hearing Yue Zhong's words, Dan Hong was filled with the fear of death, and he immediately grabbed the Dark Magic Blade and swung it towards Ma Li Tie's head.

"Dan Hong! You can't....." Ma Li Tie had not finished cursing, and his head was chopped off, rolling away.

Yue Zhong eyed Dan Hong and chuckled coldly: "Good! Good! Well done!!"

With the swing, Dan Hong had severed ties with the Hong Triad. Like this, he had become a chess piece for Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's gaze then landed on Jiang Li Hong, turning cold all of a sudden, and intending to get White Bones to finish him off.

Jiang Li Hong looked at Yue Zhong, and a chill came over him, as he hastily cried out: "My name is Jiang Li Hong, and I was Ma Li Tie's general in the past. I'm also a Protector of the Hong Triad! I'm a Level 32 Enhancer, and possess the ability [Air Manipulation]. I'm willing to denounce my past and swear loyalty to you, Sire! Please spare my life! I know a lot of information on the Hong Triad. I'm definitely of use to you!"

Yue Zhong eyed Jiang Li Hong and commanded in a low voice: "Bring them all away!!"

A few soldiers stepped up, and brought Jiang Li Hong, Dan Hong and the 2 girls in the cage away, disappearing into the darkness of the night.

Just as Yue Zhong and his group disappeared without a trace, the sounds of police sirens wailed from afar, and after a long while, a police car then arrived at the scene.

At a nearby apartment, Yue Zhong looked at Dan Hong: "Dan

Hong! You have already killed Ma Li Tie. The Hong Triad would not let you go. I want you to issue out a warrant for the leader, vice leader as well as the other 6 Elders of the Hong Triad!"

Dan Hong laughed bitterly as he replied: "Yue Zhong! Issuing a warrant of arrest is not as simple as you think! To get the approval of the higher-ups is especially difficult. The leader, vice-leader and 6 Elders of the Hong Triad are all high level Enhancers, even the leader is an Evolver. Unless they had committed a huge crime like murdering over a number of people and causing the ordinary people to lead difficult lives, we can't randomly issue a warrant for their arrest! Otherwise, it would definitely be rejected!"

The leader, vice-chief and the 6 Elders of the Hong Triad were not without any protection. Dan Hong had dared to flout the rules in a bid to deal with Yue Zhong earlier, but even he did not dare make any moves against those from the Hong Triad. Not to say just him, even the mayor himself would have to think twice before making a move on any of these huge triads.

Yue Zhong frowned, his gaze on Dan Hong turning unkind. If this was truly the case, then he had just saved a piece of trash that had no use to him.

Dan Hong felt his body prickling with needles when he was stared at by Yue Zhong, and started breaking out in cold sweat.

Jiang Li Hong offeree: "Boss!! The chief and 4 of the Elders are currently outside hunting Mutant Beasts and zombies. Ma Li Tie was also dealt with already! It could be said that the Hong Triad is at its weakest now! There's only vice-chief Mauritius and Elder Bruce left at headquarters!! As long as you work together with Superintendent Dan, you can easily take down the Hong Triad!! According to my knowledge, Shen Ying or Mayor Shen has no favourable impression of the Hong Triad, if we were to eradicate them, he would definitely sit aside and watch without making a move!"

Dan Hing hastily chipped in: "Old Jiang is right! As long as any conflicts between Enhancers do not affect the rest of the city, Mayor Shen Ying would not intervene. He has always hated those Enhancers who have been a little out of control."

Yue Zhong frowned and asked in a chilly tone: "The Hong Triad's vice-chief and Elder are foreigners?"

Jiang Li Hong affirmed with a hint of indignation: "Yea!! The chief Chen Hongye was part of a multinational corporation called the CMT Group in the past. Mauritius and Bruce were part of the upper management as well. They had escaped from Nanning into Guilin City together, making use of their resources to establish the Hong Triad. Hong Triad is also the only gang with the most foreigners, and majority of the foreigners would choose to join Hong Triad. They're all united, and hold high positions in Hong Triad, of every 3 seats, at least 2 belongs to the foreigners."

In China's territory, there actually was a triad that allowed foreigners to possess 2 out of 3 seats of authority, and this caused Yue Zhong to be taken aback.

Yue Zhong stared at Dan Hong and asked coldly: "Are his words for real?"

Dan Hong flinched, and replied without hesitation: "Yes! Not a single falsehood. This intel is only known to the upper management and powers close to Hong Triad. However, as for the fact that the Chief and his 4 Elders are out hunting, I have no idea whether that is true or not. Only the upper management of Hong Triad would know."

Yue Zhong pondered deeply for a while, before ordering Dan Hong: "I've decided! Let's go destroy the Hong Triad! Dan Hong! Go get people to round up the external members of the Hong Triad. I'll handle the rest of it."

Dan Hong was caught up with Yue Zhong's intimidating aura and he just replied: "Yes!"

"Maybe I should backstab him!!" When Dan Hong left Yue Zhong's establishment, that thought suddenly popped into his mind. However, the moment he remembered the state of Ma Li Tie, his heart jumped and he quickly squashed all thoughts of betraying Yue Zhong.

Dan Hong consoled himself: "In any case, Mayor Chen dislikes those triads. This time, the war between the Green Stone Triad and the Hong Triad can be said to be the best scenario for us. Even if the Green Stone Triad won, they would suffer huge losses. Let them whittle each other's forces then!!"

Dan Hong wasn't a heroic person who did not fear death, instead, he had relied on his father's connections previously and his bootlicking to get to his current position. Naturally, he had no way of siding with justice or otherwise, choosing instead only to benefit himself.

Very quickly, under Dan Hong's orders, numerous police vehicles went on the streets again, this time aiming for the territories of the Hong Triad. They started to apprehend the members of the Hong Triad and threw them into jail.

In this post apocalypse, the influence and authority of the police was stronger than the past by at least 10 times, no one dared to go against the police. Unless a person had a death wish, or he was a truly strong Evolver/Enhancer.

Every single jail cell was soon filled up with members of the Hong Triad.

Inside an office building, Mauritius, who looked about 36 or 37, with a huge built body and blond hair was currently hollering at another blond man, with a similar body built and short light blond hair. This other person was younger, looking about 20+, and had incredibly good-looking features. "Those damn yellow-skinned monkeys!! Bruce!! Did you actually use enough ration tickets to feed them?"

Mauritius was a white supremacist. To him, other than caucasians, every other race were lower class. He had come to China because he could enjoy a levitated position and treatment, as well as a fat paycheck. He looked down on the Chinese, and viewed the rest of Southeast Asians with contempt.

Bruce chuckled as though they were sharing a joke: "I've already given bananas to those monkeys! But I think they're just disobedient. After all, since there're so many monkeys, there will definitely be some who can't sit still. Mauritius, don't you worry. They just want to earn more cash. I've been dealing with them for so long, as long as you have the cash, and you're white, you're the closest thing to God in their eyes!"

CMT Group used to span across several countries, and was a huge conglomerate in Europe. Prior to the apocalypse, Mauritius would receive lavish treatment wherever he went in China. Those government officials could not wait to kiss his ass and seek his investment in their locations, allowing them to gain chances for promotions.

Mauritius calmed himself down, then spoke: "What a bunch of greedy monkeys! Bruce, go push them back!! These monkeys are low-class and stupid, but they're useful cannon fodder! We must finish our task that Lord Apostle had assigned us, and we need those monkeys as the fodder."

Bruce replied loudly: "Yes!" before heading out.

Mauritius continued to ponder: "Who is it exactly that is trying to go against us? Don't tell me... the government knows what we're doing? No, not possible, only we know of that secret. If the government of Guilin City has discovered, then our enemy would be an entire army.

"Lord Bruce, please wait!!" Just as Bruce was about to step out, and head to Level 1, there was a man who stopped him.

Bruce turned around to discover Jiang Li Hong and the 2 beside

him, Yue Zhong and White Bones.

At that instant, White Bones released a sharp bone spike that pierced Bruce's head, killing him instantly.

Bruce was a Level 45 expert, but under White Bones' sneak attack, he had no chance to exhibit his ability before he was killed immediately.

6 other sharp bone spikes shot out in all directions of that level, causing 6 other members of the Hong Triad to be immediately killed.

"Boss! We're clear! All the security cameras are under my control!!" One of the soldiers who possessed the ability [Communications Control] had gained access into the system security, and notified Yue Zhong with a smile.

Yue Zhong nodded lightly towards the soldier, before bringing Jiang Li Hong, White Bones and 20 other well-equipped soldiers as they charged up the stairs.

Bai Xiaosheng was leading the way as the vanguard, and he activated his own insane speed, flitting through the hallway and killing anyone who stood in their way. Almost any enemy that strayed into his path would immediately be decapitated.

Besides Bai Xiaosheng, Ying Kaishan and Zheng Minghe weren't just decorative lamps, and they charged forwards killing those hooligans who lacked any order or command.

Under the combined assault from these 3, Yue Zhong and the other 20 soldiers did not meet much resistance all the way till they reached the 13th level.

That was when the entire building rang out with screeching sirens and wailing alarms!

Chapter 405: The Judgement Corps!

"Die!! Die!! Die!! Haha!!" Bai Xiaosheng's eyes were red with bloodlust, as he roared with mad laughter and charged into the midst of the enemies. He swung his blades unceasingly, cutting any unfortunate Hong Triad members that stepped up to face him into 2 pieces. *1

Bai Xiaosheng, Ying Kaishan and Zheng Minghe charged forwards, with their combined strength, even when some Enhancers from the Hong Triad appeared, they took them out easily.

Wave after wave of Hong Triad members appeared, only to be slaughtered by the trio, and pretty soon the 14th and 15th levels were cleared of guards.

Another foreigner with blond hair and dressed in a suit came up to Mauritius in a panic: "Mauritius, those yellow-skinned monkeys have already pushed to the 17th Level!! What do we do?"

Mauritius slammed the table, his face ashen, as he barked out: "What are you panicking about? Send the Judgement Corps out! Wipe the enemy out! Do not leave a single one alive! The Judgement Corps will be more than enough to deal with them!"

The spirits of the subordinate immediately lifted, as he became excited and left: "Yes!! The Judgement Corps!! That's right!!"

Mauritius had a grim face as he cursed under his breath: "Damn monkeys, you dare challenge my authority! I'll let you have a taste of civilized weapons!"

"Go to hell!! Haha!" Bai Xiaosheng was overcome by bloodlust, as he slaughtered the Hong Triad warriors without mercy. His face was a mask of mad laughter, as he led over 20 experts and charged into the 17th Level.

Just as Bai Xiaosheng brought his men to a corner of the 17th

storey, out of the blue, a number of soldiers suddenly appeared. They were dressed in khaki-camouflage military suits, and they were holding M4s as they charged and fired wildly at Bai Xiaosheng and his men.

Blanketed by the sudden rain of bullets, Bai Xiaosheng's troop of over 20 men were all of a sudden under assault, and some fell onto the floor.

The rest of the soldiers immediately dove for cover, or used their abilities to begin defending themselves. Out of the 10 experts that had been hit, 8 of them had quickly rolled to nearby points of cover, only 2 unfortunate soldiers had their brains exploded.

It was the first time Yue Zhong's troops had faced casualties since coming to Guilin City.

Amidst those soldiers dressed in khaki-camouflage military suits, there were 4 of them supporting an anti-tank rocket launcher, and at the first moment, they had aimed at the soldiers who were using their abilities to create barriers, and fired.

Hong!! Hong!!

Following the sounds of explosions, 2 of the Enhancers who had the ability to create barriers were immediately blasted into pieces.

These khaki-suit soldiers were the Judgement Corps that Mauritius had as his trump card. Every single one of them had undergone the strictest training regimes of special forces, and had over 3,000 rounds of various ammunition on them. Every one of them was proficient in all sorts of modern weaponry, and they had used the System equipment to strengthen themselves. All of them were at least Level 15, and were well-equipped, as well as experienced in combat. At the same time, the force was made entirely of foreigners, and in this foreign land, they were incredibly united, their fighting will and morale high, and although they were only a company, their force was comparable to an elite battalion.

In just a short exchange of 20 seconds, Yue Zhong's side had already lost 4 elite soldiers who had experienced countless fights. If it wasn't for the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, there might have been more casualties.

After the Judgement Corps managed to impede the advance of Bai Xiaosheng and his troops, a few of them pulled out hand grenades and started to lob them over.

"Damn bastards!!" One of the soldiers had a [Wind Manipulation] skill and he activated it, causing a strong whirlwind to blow the grenades back towards the Judgement Corps.

"Time for your own medicine!" Bai Xiaosheng smirked coldly as he watched the grenades fly back.

Seeing as the grenades were about to land back in their midst, 5 of the Judgement Corps soldiers fired at the grenades coldly.

Hong! Hong!

Those grenades which were blown back exploded in mid air due to their precise aim.

"They're all experts!" Bai Xiaosheng witnessed this, and his heart turned cold. That sort of gun control and marksmanship was unseen even amongst the 20 experts he led himself.

The Judgement Corps switched to their grenade launchers, seeing that the hand grenades are useless, and started bombarding the soldiers with explosives.

Hong! Hong! Loud explosions occurred continuously, and the various points of cover were destroyed. An Agility-based Enhancer was forced to leap out from his spot, as he activated his skill, intending to rush towards another location.

Bam! Bam! Bam! The moment the Agility-based Enhancer stepped out of his cover, 3 bullets penetrated his head, killing him instantly.

The entire Judgement Corps was like a powerful weapon of war that suppressed Bai Xiaosheng and his troops. The primary reason for this was that they relied mainly on melee weapons and a few handguns so they couldn't fight back well.

Amongst Yue Zhong's troops, there were a few sharpshooters of course, however, when those normal handgun bullets landed on the suits of the Judgement Corps, they just bounced off, not injuring them in the slightest.

The Judgement Corps was not arrogant nor impatient, fighting steadily and destroying points of cover systematically, forcing the soldiers out, before neatly picking them off. The tide of the battle was beginning to turn to their favour.

"Kill them all!"

Smash! Right at this time, following the sounds of breaking glass, 4 sharp bone blades swept through the necks of 4 Judgement Corps soldiers near the window, immediately decapitating them.

The pitch-black body of White Bones had appeared after it leapt in from the window, and without giving the enemy a second to react, it had created 10 sharp bone blades from its body and it started spinning madly. The spinning blades caused immense carnage amongst the Judgement Corps!

The soldiers around White Bones that were caught up in its whirlwind of deadly blades were all ripped to shreds, as flesh and blood splattered everywhere simultaneously. It was a most terrifying scene.

White Bones had single handedly killed 8 soldiers of the Judgement Corps with its initial attacks. It now raised its huge axe and charged towards the rest of them.

The commanding officer of the Judgement Corps looked at White Bones and shouted an order hoarsely: "Attack!! Kill him!! Kill him!!"

Not than 10 members of the Judgement Corps turned their aim towards the attacker and began firing wildly, as a dense barrage of bullets assaulted the fast approaching White Bones. Unfortunately, all they did was bounce off its resilient bones, not causing any form of damage.

White Bones displayed a speed that was 9 times that of a normal person, and in just a second, it managed to cross a distance of dozens of metres, as it rushed into the midst of the group of Judgement Corps. It did the same move when it appeared, turning in a furious whirlwind and slicing 6 of the Judgement Corps members into sloppy pieces.

White Bones dashed about the battlefield, this time appearing by the side of 4 other Judgement Corps soldiers, instantly turning them into meat paste.

"Ah!!! Freak!! Monster!!" Seeing this horrifying scene, one of the soldiers could not take it anymore and screamed as he fired wildly at White Bones.

In just a single second, White Bones leapt past that soldier, and his body was sliced into 6 or 7 pieces, as they slid onto the floor, blood flowing everywhere.

The officer commanding the Judgement Corps hurriedly reloaded his own gun as he shouted out: "Use grenades!! Don't waste the bullets! He's not afraid of bullets!!"

10 of the soldiers immediately loaded the grenade launchers and aimed at White Bones.

White Bones flashed about, walking on the walls like a ghost, and the 10 soldiers trying to operate the grenade launchers could not get an accurate aim on him.

Sharp bone spikes shot out from White Bones like arrows, directly piercing the heads of the 10 soldiers, nailing their now dead bodies to the ground.

Bai Xiaosheng watched all these, and his heart trembled: "Too strong!! Is this the true strength of White Bones?"

Bai Xiaosheng had always thought his speed was above White Bones, but if the two were to really clash, he would definitely be taken down in just a single exchange. White Bones was impervious to guns and blades, and its ability to shoot out bone spikes out from anywhere from its body was too fearsome.

Ying Kaishan looked at White Bones clearing the Judgement Corps by itself, and was shocked. That little ambition in his heart was also suppressed: "So strong!! He undoubtedly is Yue Zhong's most loyal and trustworthy aide!"

White Bones was practically a meat grinder as it took the lives of the Judgement Corps one by one, in a short matter of 20 seconds, over 50 soldiers of the Judgement Corps had fallen at its hands.

"Go to hell!! Monster!!" The leader of the Judgement Corps, a Level 40 Enhancer, stepped forth and activated a barrier in front of him, stopping White Bones' advance and its bone blades.

Another commander wielded a Dark Magic Blade and swung it viciously at White Bones.

With a flash, White Bones' body disappeared from the 2 commanders' view, and leapt to the dozen other soldiers, again spinning in a whirlwind with its bone blades, turning those unfortunate soldiers into meaty pulp.

White Bones' intelligence had been enhanced once, and it had learnt to exercise its own judgement on the battlefield. Of course it would not just stay fixed on one single target when it could fight many.

Another 7 soldiers of the Judgement Corps had been killed right in front of their eyes, and by this time, the rest of the surviving soldiers were starting to collapse and lose their will. They fought to retreat, and one even jumped out of a window by the side.

"Kill!" Bai Xiaosheng was the first to charge out as he wielded a Dark Magic Blade.

By this time, the Judgement Corps had lacked all sense of a troop, and only the 2 commanders were still resisting.

Ying Kaishan waved his hand, and activated his [Freezing Cold] ability, as countless sharp ice picks formed out of thin air and shot towards the 2 commanders.

Of the 2, the one with the [Barrier] ability activated it again, easily blocking the ice picks. The other swung his blade rapidly, crushing the incoming ice picks.

"Kite! Be careful!!" The blade-wielding commander turned to look at his comrade as he was defending, and his face changed.

Bai Xiaosheng had made use of that small pocket of time when their attention was diverted to appear behind the commander with the [Barrier] ability.

"Too late!!" Bai Xiaosheng chuckled coldly, and the sharp daggers in his hands went straight through the throat of the commander.

The Judgement Corps' commander slid to the floor, his eyes filled with shock and disbelief.

"Kite!!" The blade-wielding commander Larman, bellowed with grief and rage as he swung his blade towards Bai Xiaosheng.

Larmen had enhanced his Level 3 [Blade Technique Specialization] skill, and although his speed could not compare to Bai Xiaosheng, his blade skills could force Bai Xiaosheng to a standstill.

Zheng Minghe saw this and commanded his men to continue their advance.

Ying Kaishan and Shang Lun exchanged a look before they charged at Larmen. The soldiers behind continued upwards with Zheng Minghe in the lead.

Larmen was already beneath Bai Xiaosheng in power, as he was surrounded by Ying Kaishan and Shang Lun, his situation was looking grim. However, he was still a decent fighter, and they would need time to kill him.

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!!" On the 18th storey, a soldier threw his weapon and pleaded, after witnessing White Bones easily chopping his comrades up.

By this time, the entire Judgement Corps had suffered a tremendous loss, out of their commanders, 1 had died, the other was stuck, and the rest of the soldiers were quickly losing their will to fight. They could not see hope in the situation, and begged for mercy as a last resort.

The warriors from Europe were tenacious when battling, but the moment there was no hope to be seen, they would easily surrender as well.

White Bones' eyes flashed, and the bone spear shot out, sparing the soldier who had just surrendered, before slicing the neck of another soldier behind him, sending the head flying.

"Surrender!! I surrender too!!"

"I've surrendered too!!"

"....."

The soldiers were all thoroughly frightened out of their wits, as they threw their weapons down, and hugged their heads kneeling on the ground.

"Strong!!" By the time Zheng Minghe had brought his men up to the 18th storey, they saw the numerous soldiers kneeling in surrender, and his heart could not remain calm.

The combat ability of those soldiers were truly fearsome, and Zheng Minghe had experienced it for himself. They complemented one another, their training was adequate, and their combat will was high. If it wasn't for White Bones charging suddenly into their

midst and causing them to lose their will, this battle would have been harder to win. Yue Zhong's side might have paid a more painful price as well.

"The people from Green Stone Triad! I'm Mauritius! I hope to talk to your leader!! There must be a misunderstanding between us!!" At this time, a voice resounded on every level of the building.

Chapter 406: [Raven] Nano Combat Uniform Design!

Mauritius continued: "I'll be waiting on the 22nd Storey!"

"Boss, what do we do?" Zheng Minghe turned to ask Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he ordered: "Continue the assault! All the way to the highest level! Crush their resistance entirely!"

Receiving Yue Zhong's orders, White Bones shot towards the 19th storey like an arrow.

The 19th storey was the entertainment level for the Hong Triad, and there were many beautiful women in revealing clothes on that level. There were Chinese, and 8 foreigners as well, although the 8 foreign women were ordinary looking.

When the women saw White Bones charging up with its entire body covered in blood and some flesh, their bodies trembled, while fear flashed in their eyes.

White Bones surveyed the surroundings, and charged into the 20th storey after ascertaining that there was no threat on this level.

There was nobody left on the 20th or 21st storey by this time, and when Yue Zhong reached the 22nd storey, he saw Mauritius seated with proudly behind a big desk staring at him coldly.

Beside Mauritius, there were 13 blond-hair foreigners, every single one of them with a powerful stature, and they emitted a powerful aura, obviously looking dangerous and unwise to provoke.

Mauritius looked at Yue Zhong, before coldly barking: "I'm Mauritius, you must be Green Stone Triad's Yue Zhong? Who's the leader, bring him to see me!"

In Mauritius' eyes, asians were lower beings, and he was only willing to speak to the leader of the Green Stone Triad. Talking to Yue Zhong was equivalent to throwing his face and lowering his position.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and he waved his hand, and fired his Stinger directly once.

Peng! A single gunshot rang out!

One of the foreigners standing beside Mauritius had his head blasted, and fresh blood splattered on the ground.

Yue Zhong coldly replied: "This is my turf! You'd better be obedient! If you want to die, I don't mind sending you on your way!"

One of the foreigners immediately bellowed in fury, reaching for his gun at his waist: "Bastard!! You dare to kill Mooney!! I won't let you off!!"

With another peng! The level 30-plus Enhancer had not even reached his gun, and his brains were similarly blasted apart, his lifeless corpse slumping onto the ground.

Yue Zhong swept his gaze across the remaining 11 experts and coldly barked: "If you want to die! By all means, move as you like! Otherwise, stay the fuck still!"

White Bones, standing beside Yue Zhong, was wielding its huge axe and staring at the experts as well. The moment there was any strange movements from them, it would charge forwards without hesitation.

The remaining 11 foreigner experts looked at Yue Zhong and White Bones, their hearts beginning to feel a tinge of fear, as they trembled slightly, and not daring to move.

Mauritius forcefully suppressed the building rage inside him and spoke slowly: "Yue Zhong!! We came to your China in a bid to extend our hand in helping you guys!! Is this how you treat your

foreign friends who came in peace? The Chinese government would definitely not tolerate these terrorist actions of yours that destroy such relationships between countries. If you leave here now, it's still not too late! Otherwise, I will definitely lodge a complaint with the Chinese government, and get them to apprehend you!"

When dealing with the Chinese, the best method was to threaten government action. Be it before the apocalypse or after, Mauritius worked this tactic like a charm.

There was a tradition of the government being mindful of the westerners, even when there were foreign rapists who raped women in broad daylight, they would at most get 15 days of detention. These foreign rapists did not have any backing in the first place.

Mauritius differed because he was sent by an European conglomerate, and the government had to attend to his every request, hence he could twirl them around his fingers.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, and he fired once more.

With a peng! Another foreign expert lost his head.

Yue Zhong coldly replied: "Mauritius, you are full of bull! Whatever you have said, is bullshit! If you have the capabilities now, go activate the army to surround me! Otherwise, anymore of your nonsense and I'll finish you off!"

Yue Zhong threatened: "Mauritius, you have only one chance now. Take your men, stand down, and surrender. Otherwise, I'm going to kill you all!"

"Damn you, you yellow-skinned monkey!! I'll kill you!!" Mauritius was cursing inwardly, it was the first time that he had received such treatment from a Chinese person. As someone who was used to being revered, it was tantamount to humiliation.

Mauritius could not hold his anger in, and he barked out

furiously: "In your dreams!! Damn monkey! You want me to surrender to you, impossible!! Charge!! Kill him!!"

Just as Mauritius bellowed in rage, 6 gunshots rang out almost simultaneous succession, and 6 of the experts had their heads blown off.

Of the 4 remaining experts, 2 of them had just twisted slightly out of their original position, when 2 sharp bone spikes pierced their heads, nailing them to the wall!

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!!" One of the younger experts was shaking with fear as he screamed out.

The other expert also threw his weapon down, his hands raised high as he hugged his head and kneeled.

Mauritius had just stood up, when a sharp bone spike shot out, piercing his body through his right shoulder, nailing him to the wall.

Mauritius screamed out in pain as he cursed out loud: "Ahh!! Fucking monkey!! You will definitely regret this!! Once my master comes to China, he will definitely kill all you bitches and burn you to death!!"

Mauritius wasn't an Enhancer, and was just an ordinary person. He could become the vice-chief of the Hong Triad purely because he had a number of experts under him, as well as the Judgement Corps.

Yue Zhong stared at Mauritius coolly and asked: "Who're you people? What group are you from?"

Mauritius looked at Yue Zhong and revealed a grim smile, before spitting at him: "Peh!! You will never get the answer you want!!"

Ying Kaishan walked up at this moment, glancing at Mauritius before saying: "Boss! Hand him to me! I will make him spit out everything he knows!"

Yue Zhong replied in a cold tone: "Good! I'll hand him to you! If he dies or whatever becomes of him, it doesn't matter! I just want the information in his brain!"

"Yes, Boss!"

Ying Kaishan smiled sardonically, and walked up to Mauritius. He grabbed his body and pulled him forcefully from the bone spike, dragging him into another room.

"Ah!!!!!"

In a few moments, the tragic and pitiful screams of Mauritius could be heard within the room.

"I'll speak!! I'll speak!!! I'll tell you everything!! Ah!!!!!"

Mauritius had not been able to withstand even 20 seconds of the torture and had collapsed entirely at Ying Kaishan's hands.

The 2 remaining foreigner experts were shaking, not knowing what exactly had happened to Mauritius.

Yue Zhong, meanwhile, had went to the desk and rummaged through the items, seeing if he could discover any important or interesting information.

Just as he pulled out a drawer, he came across a set of designs:" Ah! What's this?"

"Level 5 Treasure [Raven] Standard military combat equipment bionic nano - combat service design. [Raven] Nano Combat Uniform is manufacturable, with khaki as its chosen colour, dotted with camouflage, anti-radiation, 7.62mm bullet-resistant, increasing all attributes by 3 points. Manufacturing requires the blood of a Type 2 Mutant Beast...."

The moment Yue Zhong laid hands on the set of design, a huge amount of information regarding it was transmitted to his brain. This set of designs detailed the instructions on manufacturing the [Raven] Nano Combat Uniform!

The main component of the [Raven] Nano Combat Uniform was the Type 2 Mutant Beast blood, the rest of the materials were pretty ordinary. The manufacturing process wasn't too tough as well, while it was cumbersome, as long as one followed the instructions, anybody could create the [Raven] Nano Combat Uniform.

Yue Zhong grabbed it tightly and became excited: "This is great! With this, I can create an Enhancer army!"

While the [Raven] Nano Combat Uniform's defence could not compare to the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, it had an extremely useful effect, which was the +3 to all attributes, and thus it was a quality System equipment.

The drop rate of decent equipment was very low, and under Yue Zhong, there were only about 20 people with Level 2 Enhancing equipment. There was one other who wore a Level 3 Enhancing armor, and only Yue Zhong himself wore a Level 4 defence equipment.

If he could manufacture this [Raven] Nano Combat Uniform, Yue Zhong's subordinates would all gain a huge boost to their abilities. +3 to all attributes was equivalent to a total of 18 points of enhancement.

The reason why the Judgement Corps had been so domineering was partly due to these [Raven] Nano Combat Uniforms.

Yue Zhong held the [Raven] Nano Combat Uniform designs tightly as he thought to himself with a feverish passion: "Type 2 Mutant Beast blood eh? What a pity, I have not thought to harvest them in the past. Seems like I need to go hunt a few Type 2 Mutant Beasts!"

At this time, Ying Kaishan pulled Mauritius out of the room and reported: "Boss!! It's done! He's told me everything!"

Yue Zhong's brows arched as he said: "Oh? Speak!!"

Ying Kaishang then proceeded to repeat whatever Mauritius had told him to Yue Zhong. Hearing it, Yue Zhong's spirits were dampened, as though his heart was being weighed on by a huge stone.

Mauritius hailed from an organization called the Kingdom of God. It was a group that was made up of a number of European conglomerates that existed prior to the apocalypse, coming together when the apocalypse happened, with a united plan for true World Domination...

Chapter 407: Kingdom of God

CMT Group was among those conglomerates as well, and all these major corporations had huge amounts of assets as well as technology. They were spread out all over different countries, and had as many as over a million employees.

After the world has changed, countless leaders and army generals have become zombies. A large number of these corporate giants managed to survive however, and they came together and formed the Kingdom of God, with its unique religion and gained a foothold in many places.

Among these huge conglomerates, there were some who had control over satellites. And because of this edge, with the control of the satellites, the Kingdom of God could reach anywhere in the world.

Mauritius happened to be the envoy for the Kingdom of God based in Guangxi's area. The Hong Triad was also a means that he created to enter and take control of Guilin City slowly. With the Hong Triad as a cover, he had been establishing and growing his power without stop, while patiently waiting for a chance. As long as Guilin City became unstable, he would make use of the opportunity to deploy the Judgement Corps and take over.

The Kingdom of God was a rigorous and secretive, with clear division of labor as well as adequate manpower. They were advanced in technology, and had over 3 million survivors under them, as well as an army size of 300,000. On one hand, they sought to unite and control the entire Asia region, at the same time, for the future, they have begun to make moves all over the world. Be it in Africa, North or South America, India, Japan, Southeast Asia, the Middle East, they had people establishing power and biding their time.

The city of Berlin, according to rumors, had been swallowed by

them and became their main headquarters already.

In comparison, Yue Zhong had only about 200,000 survivors under him, and his army of 10,000 was separated in 2 different provinces. He could only manufacture rifle bullets and other light firepower. When compared to the Kingdom of God, Yue Zhong was basically no different from a beggar.

Yue Zhong had recently harbored the intent to unify the whole of China, however, there were simply too many people. In Guangxi alone, there were already 50 million people, and the zombies were also about 40 million. With that many zombies, subjugating the entire Guangxi region was going to be extremely difficult.

Furthermore, it was the apocalypse era now, and there were all sorts of characters about, everyone had their own ideals and ambitions. No one was willing to offer up their own establishments. Even Yue Zhong himself, if someone wanted to wrestle the bases he had painstakingly built up, he would not be willing to give up.

"My capital is still too small!!" Yue Zhong clenched his fists tightly and sighed. He was just an ordinary university student prior to the events of the apocalypse, and he had been slogging nonstop to reach where he was currently. As for the Kingdom of God, they were already established multinational companies that came together, sharing talents, technology and resources among themselves. The starting point of both parties was simply not on an equal level. Yue Zhong's current achievements would still be nothing compared to them.

This Hong Triad was just a small pawn in their grand scheme of things, amongst their thousands of establishments. Even if Yue Zhong destroys it, it wouldn't affect them much.

Yue Zhong adjusted his train of thought, and threw the looming threat of the Kingdom of God to the back of his mind: "Forget it! I'll deal with it as it comes! I need to make the most of whatever I have

now!! It's best to live to the fullest!"

After conquering the Hong Triad, Yue Zhong had gained the set of designs for the [Raven] suits, as well as 3 battalions' worth of equipment, 15,000 tonnes of rations, and a huge number of melee weapons.

At the same time, the rest of the subsidiary triads and territory came under the Green Stone Triad's control.

When the surrounding triads saw Hong Triad collapsing, they also acted in a rush to snatch up territory, as though there was a precious feast, and everything of the Hong Triad was gobbled up cleanly.

Yue Zhong's Green Stone Triad gained a huge footing, and in one leap, it became a huge triad of over 5,000 members. Many solo wanderers and Enhancers also requested to join the Green Stone Triad, adding on to their forces.

News of the Hong Triad's downfall spread like wildfire, shocking the entire Guilin City.

The remaining 3 big triads, the Green Bamboo Triad, Scarlet Phoenix Triad and Heavenly Dragon Triad all bolstered their defences. They were extremely cautious and wary of this new contender that was filled with aggression and vicious tactics.

With Dan Hong acting as the backer behind Green Stone Triad, no one else came to cause trouble for the gang anymore.

Yue Zhong also made everyone within the triad undergo training to toughen themselves and sharpen their claws. Day in day out, he made use of militarized training regimes to push them like mad.

Without training, they would just be a motley bunch of hooligans, only after proper training would they resemble an army.

"Open up!" Yue Zhong came to a dark and dingy jail cell, and he ordered one of his soldiers.

"Yes! Boss!" The soldier took out a silver key and opened up the cell.

Yue Zhong strode into the centre of the cell, and looked at a burly foreigner, who was dressed raggedly and his hair in a disheveled mess.

Yue Zhong gazed at the man, who was Larman, and spoke slowly: "Larman! I'm Yue Zhong. How about working for me?"

Larman was an Enhancer of above Level 40, and had been one of the commanders of the Judgement Corps. He had the leadership and combat abilities. His blade skills could put him on par with Bai Xiaosheng who surpassed him greatly in speed. It was because he was no match for the combined efforts of Bai Xiaosheng, Ying Kaishan and Shang Lun, that was how he was captured alive.

Larman glanced at him: "I'm someone from the Kingdom of God, this you know. Yet you still want to recruit me?"

Yue Zhong laughed: "Not an issue! As long as you promise to become my subordinate, and be loyal to me. I have done my investigations, you're not a white supremacist. Your character is upright, and you're strict on yourself, and have never done anything to humiliate the fairer sex. Such a person, I admire, and can accept as my underling."

Larman stared at Yue Zhong for a while, before shaking his head: "I won't work for you! You should go!"

Yue Zhong glanced at Larman and spoke indifferently: "Larman, don't tell me you don't want to see your wife or son anymore?"

The moment he heard this, he seemed to turn into an enraged bull as he struggled against his chains with bloodshot eyes, and bellowed in rage at Yue Zhong: "What have you done to them? They're innocent!!!"

Yue Zhong stared back and retorted coldly: "I've not done anything yet! However, as per military rules, they're considered

family members of captives. According to martial law, they would become slaves, and given to those who contributed. Since you're not willing to work for me, I won't force you. However, after today, your son and his future descendants, should there be no accidents, will become slaves to others for generations to come."

Larman was thoroughly furious as he spat: "You devil!! You dare to cast my son as a slave!! Do you still have a moral code?!"

"Moral code! You don't have the right to speak to me about that!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and his tone became extremely chilly: "I've discovered over a dozen girls that have not even reached 12 years in your judgement corps facilities! There were even 7 corpses! Such beasts, and you dare speak to me about morality? What a joke! If you were so righteous, why didn't you stop those bastards? Don't spout bullshit like 'I don't know'!"

By this time, Larman's expression had turned extremely pale, as he mumbled: "I didn't know!! I truly didn't know!! How did it come to this? Hooooow??"

It was not that Larman did not know, it was just that he did not care. He was after all, not the leader of all the foreigners. The true leader was Mauritius, and he had treated Chinese as garbage, and most of his subordinates had the same attitude.

Compared to the rest of the foreigners, Larman and a few others were considered decent, but they minded their own business and didn't butt into other people's matters. He knew a few of his fellow countrymen had raped women, but he didn't know that there were actual deaths, and no one bothered to tell this pedantic soldier.

Yue Zhong glanced at Larman and turned to walk away: "Those men, I have chopped them in two! Maybe you might think that I'm brutal. However, to me, they deserved it, and this is the way I handle things around here! For protecting 6 of my countrymen, I can set your wife free! I'll let her leave here alone. But you must be clear, in this world order, the moment she leaves my protection, a

lady all by herself, would definitely be devoured with nothing left. I've said my piece, and since you're not willing to submit to me, I won't force you. You can stay here for your entire life, as a punishment for being my enemy!"

"Wait a moment!!!" Just as Yue Zhong turned around to leave, Larman's voice sounded from behind him.

Larman spoke with resolution: "I'm willing to work for you!! Yue Zhong!! However, I have a condition. My blade will never be used against my fellow countrymen! If you want me to fight against them as enemies, I will never help you slaughter them!"

In order to protect his own wife and kid, Larman made the difficult decision to submit to Yue Zhong. With his character, the moment he decided on throwing in with someone, he would definitely give his all, and not think twice about it. That was why he had that condition.

Yue Zhong smiled faintly and agreed: "No problem!!"

After Larman agreed to help Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong handed control over the remaining 32 Judgement Corps soldiers to him. They had also agreed to submit to Yue Zhong. With the lead of their original commander, their combat abilities recovered to a certain degree.

Larman brought the soldiers and they swore fealty to Yue Zhong, causing the fighting ability of Yue Zhong's subordinates to rise substantially. This group of Judgement Corps was enough to devastate even a company of soldiers.

When Yue Zhong had just finalized the arrangements, Gao Minghao sent the message to request for his help.

Chapter 408: The 4 Great Triads!

At the entrance of Guilin City, a huge vehicle fleet had assembled, and the atmosphere was bustling with excitement.

The hunting of a Type 3 Mutant Beast was a huge matter, and just the Green Bamboo Triad alone would not be able to cover the matter up. To ensure the success of the hunt, almost all the experts had been gathered.

Every part of the Type 3 Mutant Beast was definitely a treasure, as long as they successfully hunt it, they would gain countless benefits. If at that time, there were equipments dropped, they would also be likely to power up whoever picks it up.

A burly, middle-aged man with a cape on his back and his entire body decked in black tuxedo, his features defined and eye-catching, led 7 other subordinates as they came up to Gao Minghao and his voice rang out brightly: "Gao Minghao!! Long time no see!!"

When the other party saw the middle-aged man walking over, the 10 experts of Green Bamboo Triad standing beside Gao Minghao had a huge change of expression, their bodies turning rigid. They stared at the man with caution and alarm.

This man who was dressed in the black tuxedo was called Di Ya, and he was the chief of the Heavenly Dragon Triad. Although he looked like an easy-going hero, his temper was explosive, and he could just easily slaughter his enemies as and when he felt like it.

Gao Minghao returned the look, before exclaiming in an amiable fashion: "Di Ya! Long time no see!"

In this world, whose fist was bigger was the boss. Even a normal villager with no culture, after gaining strength, would be able to start something on his own and become the leader of a faction he established. It was not strange. As for people like Gao Minghao with the natural flair and charisma of a leader, not many were left.

Di Ya looked at his surroundings, and frowned, as he said loudly: "Is Ding Lei not here yet? What audacity! Women just can't be punctual!! Cannot achieve anything, but good at spoiling things*!"

Right at this time, an absolute beauty with a killer body appeared, her delicate face seemed to be frosted over, and she was wearing a black leather suit, and emitting an extremely cold aura. She walked over as she stared daggers at Di Ya, coldly snorting: "Di Ya! Are you looking down on women? Shall we have a go? The Scarlet Phoenix and Heavenly Dragon, see who is the bumbling fool and who is capable enough?!"

This beauty who seemed to be the epitome of cold and who could freeze people with her looks was the chief of the Scarlet Phoenix Triad, Ding Lei. Beside her, there was a troop of ferocious looking female guards, who looked at men as though they were thrash. There were 20 of them, and while most of them were ordinary looking, their eyes were sharp and fierce, and their bodies muscular. Only 2 of them were beauties as well.

Di Ya looked Ding Lei up and down, taking in her incredibly hot figure, and teased: "Ding Lei! Why not, we have a huge war in bed!! Let's see who wins, shall we? Hehe!!"

"Di Ya! Speak further if you want to die!!" Ding Lei's eyes shot out a cold light, and she stepped forwards, disappearing from her position in an instant.

"Fast!! She has gotten faster since last time!!" Di Ya's eyes flashed, as he raised his right hand and defended his right.

The black high heels landed viciously on Di Ya's raised arm, knocking him back by 2 steps.

After an entire second, the rest managed to react, seeing Ding Lei standing in front of Di Ya.

Gao Minghao felt a chill as he stared at Ding Lei, his eyes narrowing: "What an insane speed!! She sure is worthy of the

nickname Rapid Flying Phoenix! Genius dual-attribute Evolver!!"

Rapid Flying Phoenix was Ding Lei's nickname. In Guilin City, amongst almost 900,000 survivors, naturally awakened Evolvers numbered only about a 100. Every single one of them could be considered geniuses.

And Rapid Flying Phoenix Ding Lei was a naturally awakened dual-attribute Evolver, a genius amongst geniuses. She had carved a way out in a male-dominated world through slaughter, and established a predominantly female Scarlet Phoenix Triad. Her strength was not a joke.

The moment Di Ya was forced back by 2 steps, the 10 soldiers beside him brandished their blades.

Di Ya growled and ordered as he raised his hand: "Don't move!!"

Even if the 10 of them acted together, they would not be a match for Ding Lei. If they really acted against her, it might result in their deaths.

Ding Lei had been able to create a name for herself and established the Scarlet Phoenix Triad, it could be seen she wasn't any merciful or weak opponent. The number of deaths at her hands had also reached the hundreds.

Di Ya smiled at Ding Lei: "My apologies! It was unbecoming of me! Shall we leave it at that?"

Di Ya had originally planned to provoke Ding Lei to test her strength. The moment he discovered that she had not remained the same, and instead, improved tremendously, he wasn't willing to continue aggravating her and making an enemy out of her. It would spell disaster for him, as well as the Heavenly Dragon Triad.

Gao Minghao walked up and played the mediator: "Ding Lei! Treat it as giving me face, let's forget about earlier! Di Ya's also rash with his mouth you know that!"

Ding Lei withdrew her stance, and coldly snapped at Di Ya: "Di

Ya, you'd better watch your trashy mouth! Otherwise, sooner or later, you'll have to pay the price!" After saying this she turned and went back to her side.

Hearing those words, the gleam in Di Ya's eyes turned cold multiple times over, yet his face still wore that casual smile. He waved his hands, and contained the temper of his subordinates who had been provoked by those words as well.

Di Ya glanced about, and did not notice any sign of Yue Zhong nor his members of the Green Stone Triad, and asked Gao Minghao: "The Green Stone Triad has guts eh? They dare to make us wait! Gao Minghao, I heard that the Elder Yue Zhong from there and your subordinate Hu Yi are good friends. How much do you know about him?"

Gao Minghao had a light smile on his face, not giving anybody any insight into his thoughts: "Hu Yi did not mention much to me! It's the first for me also, knowing that his friend had such abilities, that they actually brought men and swallowed up the Hong Triad! They must be capable enough!"

Hearing Yue Zhong's name, Ding Lei who was standing silently by one side, narrowed her eyes as well.

The Green Stone Triad that Yue Zhong established had become the focal point of the entire Guilin City. They had swallowed up one of the 4 Great Triads, the Hong Triad, and caused everyone to be wary of their own positions, at the same time, curious about this new contender on the scene.

Di Ya chuckled: "When Chen Hongye comes back with his men, and sees everything of his taken away, I wonder what his expression will look like? That Yue Zhong is lucky though, to think he actually had such a good opportunity. If Chen Hongye was back here, I don't think he could have caused such a huge wave."

To gain steady enhancement, staying back in the city isn't a solution. Only by constantly heading out to hunt zombies and

Mutant Beasts would there be chances to grow.

Therefore, there would always be Enhancers who would head out every once in awhile to strengthen and enhance themselves through hunting and fighting.

"Not cause a wave?" Gao Minghao laughed coldly in his heart when he heard that. He was extremely clear, that while Chen Hongye did bring a bunch of elites out to hunt, the defence of the Hong Triad back at base was not something to scoff at. Yue Zhong had still managed to break past everything and gobbled them up, it could be seen how powerful Yue Zhong was.

Gao Minghao and Di Ya had exchanged blows a number of times behind the scenes. He knew how Di Ya was innately, and hence, he didn't think that Di Ya actually meant what he said.

Di Ya glanced at Ding Lei and added on: "Oh right! Ding Lei! I heard that Yue Zhong was a lolicon that knew no boundaries!! He would play with a young virgin every single day. Seems like he has already killed over 15 of them! Are you going to allow such a pervert to remain living on this earth?"

Hell hath no fury like a woman scorned, and a woman's fury would be 10 times more poisonous than a man's. Ding Lei had carved a road of slaughter on her rise to prominence, and her methods were vicious. She especially hated perverts who preyed on younger girls, and those perverts would either be cut in two or tortured or had their genitals removed. Their deaths were exceptionally cruel. Hence, other than the nickname 'Rapid Flying Phoenix', Ding Lei had another well-known nickname: 'Cold Witch'.

Ding Lei's eyebrows arched, and she shot a cold glare at Di Ya: "Di Ya! Shut your trap!"

Di Ya guffawed, and continued: "True! After all, the Green Stone Triad is now one of the 4 Great Triads. Even the Rapid Flying Phoenix would need to think twice before making a move on

someone else's Elder, otherwise trouble might come knocking. Who knows, if the Scarlet Phoenix Triad were to be wiped out by the Green Stone Triad, our proud Rapid Flying Phoenix might just become like the Ice Fairy. Hehe!"

Di Ya had not finished, but his underlying meaning was clear, and cold.

In this world, being a female leader was extremely tough, when she was strong, no one dared to take advantage of her. However, the moment she fell from power, her outcome would definitely be a lot worse.

Ice Fairy was an exceptional female leader before Ding Lei grew in power, and her strength was unparalleled. However, she was tricked because of love, and was caught in a trap by a pretty boy. Her triad was then swallowed up and herself, in the arms of other men, leading a life that was worse than dogs, with utter humiliation and shame.

While heroes could not resist against beauties, likewise, numerous beauties had fallen at the antics of good-looking men. Human nature was like that, and there hasn't been any exception since time immemorial.

With the tragic plight of the Ice Fairy as an example, Ding Lei did not believe in love, nor men, and killed them like dogs. In her rise to prominence, she had recruited countless female experts as well, and the only men in the Scarlet Phoenix Triad led slave-like lives, not a single one was above Level 10.

When Ding Lei heard 'Ice Fairy', the temperature around her body seemed to plummet a few more degrees, as her hand shifted, and an extremely sharp blade appeared within her hand. She stared at Di Ya and spat out coldly through gritted teeth: "Di Ya! One more word! One more word and you'll be sorry!!"

Di Ya could perceive the amount of killing intent and hurriedly changed the topic, while still smiling: "Hehheh! I'm not speaking!"

Di Ya knew his words had touched a sore spot of Ding Lei, and the moment Ding Lei was provoked, she would explode out. Of course, there was a possibility where the line was not yet reached, but to him, it was still not going to be a nice outcome.

Right at this time, Gao Minghao's pupils narrowed: "He's here!!"

Ding Lei and Di Ya both swivelled, looking towards their back.

They discovered Yue Zhong as well as Larman leading the Judgement Corps, and he was flanked by Bai Xiaosheng, Mu Xiangling, Ning Yuxin and Xin Jiarou.

When Ding Lei's gaze travelled to Mu Xiangling, she turned once more to look at Yue Zhong, this time, the look in her eyes became much colder.

Gao Minghao cupped his hands and smiled at Yue Zhong, welcoming him: "Yue Zhong! You're here!"

Yue Zhong chuckled back and received his welcome: "Chief Gao! I'm here!"

Gao Minghao laughed out brightly, and spoke in a gracious manner: "What Chief Gao! Just call me Minghao! Aren't we friends?"

On the surface, Gao Minghao's treatment of others was very broad-minded, and he had charisma. A number of experts of the Green Bamboo Triad had been won over by his attitude and sincerity.

Di Ya eyed the ladies beside Yue Zhong with envy and coldly provoked: "So you're Yue Zhong!! You truly are a lolicon eh!! Even on the battlefield, you brought a little loli, you really know how to enjoy yourself!"

"You're seeking death!! Trash!!" Bai Xiaosheng, who was standing beside Yue Zhong, immediately lashed out, and his body flashed, disappearing from his position, appearing beside Di Ya, with the intention to slash at his head.

Di Ya was not prepared in the slightest, and as Bai Xiaosheng's speed was insanely fast, in that short distance, Bai Xiaosheng could easily kill any Enhancer of Level 40.

In that moment of crisis, Di Ya displayed his prowess, reacting by taking a step back, and his right hand surrounded by a shield of tornado, blocking his right, intending to use that whirlwind defence to block that slash from Bai Xiaosheng, while he condensed a ball of whirlwind in his left hand, preparing to unleash a deathly blow at Bai Xiaosheng.

Just as Di Ya was about to attack, Bai Xiaosheng had already leapt back and appeared beside Yue Zhong, while still cursing out loud: "Old fart! Clean your mouth! The next time you speak out of line, this Daddy will chop you up!"

With that provocation, Di Ya's temper flared, as he took a step forward, only to see Yue Zhong stepping forwards as well, blocking his way.

Yue Zhong glared coldly at Di Ya, his tone icy: "Old trash! You want to set the Heavenly Dragon Triad against us Green Stone Triad?"

While Yue Zhong was asking that, White Bones had also appeared beside Yue Zhong, preparing to engage Di Ya in a pincer fashion.

Facing that intense intimidation, Di Ya's brain worked quickly, as he suppressed the fury in his heart, and dispelled the whirlwinds in his hands. He took a step back and glared at Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong! I'm Di Ya, the chief of Heavenly Dragon Triad, your man actually dares to make a move on me! How do you intend to punish him?"

Yue Zhong eyed him coldly and retorted: "Why should I do that! You just insulted me. You, trash, insulted me, and the fact that I did not cut your tongue off is giving you enough face as it is!"

Chapter 409: Mutant Sparrow Flock!

Even if Di Ya had the abilities of the Mutant Teenage Ninja Turtles, upon hearing those words of contempt from Yue Zhong, he could not help flaring up: "Yue Zhong you!"

Yue Zhong continued in a challenging tone: "How? Do you want to have a go? If you want to! We can go right now!! Ming Hao and the chief of the Scarlet Phoenix Triad can act as witness!"

Di Ya's mind was in a flurry, as the grim look in his eyes flashed by. He hesitated a while, and in the end, did not choose to engage Yue Zhong. He had no information on him, and did not want to die without knowing why.

Di Ya retreated, as he shot a look at Ding Leo and Gao Minghao: "Ding Lei! Gao Ming Hao! Are the 2 of you just going to stand there, and allow this insult to me from this Yue Zhong? If it's like this, I'll announce that the Heavenly Dragon Triad will back out from this hunt."

Hearing his words, Ding Lei and Gao Minghao both had change of expressions. If Di Ya's Heavenly Dragon Triad were to really pull out, then they would have no choice but to leave more experts back at base. Like this, the hunt of the Type 3 Mutant Beast would definitely increase in difficulty by countless times.

Gao Minghao stepped up and tried to mediate: "Yue Zhong! Treat it as giving me face! Each of yall take a step back, and let's forgo this matter!"

Yue Zhong looked at Di Ya coldly, before retreating back to his side.

Mu Xiangling leapt onto Yue Zhong's back like a little kitten, and giggled as she teased Yue Zhong: "Heard that? You perverted lolicon!! Hehe!! Now you're famous oh~!! Big~~~Ge~~~Ge!"

Yue Zhong shot Mu Xiangling a look and said: "Mu Xiangling, if

you're going to be this playful, do you believe that I'll leave you alone at home?"

This time, because Mu Xiangling had been pestering him non-stop, Yue Zhong had relented and brought her out. If there was a chance, Yue Zhong still wanted to try and make her into an Enhancer.

Mu Xiangling immediately scrambled down from Yue Zhong's back and put on a docile and cute expression, saying: "Yes! I won't dare anymore! I'm sorry! I will be good and listen!"

Yue Zhong frowned lightly, and was helpless against this little girl.

Mu Xiangling was extremely beautiful, and knew how to tease and be cute. She could act pitiful at times, and fake her crying, and basically any trick that most women knew, she could employ them perfectly. When it was time to be good, she was obedient, when she saw the chance to be mischievous she would leap on it. Yue Zhong could not bear to lecture her, and really was helpless.

Furthermore, Mu Xiangling was extremely smart, and picked up everything fast. Her talent was not lesser than the naturally awakened Evolver Yao Yao. Such an adorable loli was naturally liked by everybody, and she caused smiles everywhere she went. Even if she took some liberties, Yue Zhong did not take it to heart.

Gao Minghao looked all around him, before chuckling at Yue Zhong and said: "Since everyong is here! Let us set off!!"

Within Guilin City, even when all 4 Great Triads had already deployed most of their experts, the remaining smaller triads still did not pose too big a threat to any of them.

The fleet started to move, consisting of over 3,000 Enhancers and a few Evolvers, as they made their way into the distance.

Hunting Mutant Beasts allowed Enhancers to become stronger. Since Guilin City was considered safe and stable, and there was the

army that had swept the nearby zombie hordes, this allowed for the Enhancers to frequently head out to hunt. If it was any other smaller establishments, surviving from the zombies would be already tough, not to mention hunting Mutant Beasts.

The strong became stronger! The weak became weaker! Such was the cruel way of the world.

That huge crowd of humans attracted the countless Mutant Beasts.

Before even reaching 10km after leaving Guilin City, the skies was suddenly filled with a black cloud of sparrows.

"They're Mutant Sparrows!!"

Seeing the sky becoming dark with the Mutant Sparrow flock, a number of the troops on the ground reacted.

Since everyone had made ample preparations for the hunt, the moment they saw the Mutant Sparrow flock, they went into their vehicles for cover.

Those Mutant Sparrows were one of the common avian mutant beasts, and the best way of handling them was to take cover within huge vehicles. Not many people were willing to take on these critters, mainly because they were low level, high in numbers, and if one was not careful, they would be swallowed up by them.

The dense flock soon landed on the ground and a disaster seemed to strike at the humans gathering, causing the vehicles to be rocked about.

If there were no large vehicles, if these 3,000-over Enhancers didn't give their all to defend, at least half would die being pecked alive.

In a hummer, Mu Xiangling was currently shivering in Yue Zhong's embrace, her face pale white. She had just witnessed a Enhancer not making it in time into a vehicle, and in just 3 seconds, that enhancer was engulfed and became a skeleton.

At the same time, the Mutant Sparrows were ramming against the hummer, and the pattering noise was deafening. If the armor of the hummer was to break down, Mu Xiangling would not know what to do.

She glanced at Yue Zhong, and saw that his face was still serene, and her trepid heart regain some form of calmness: "He's so collected! He's really reliable, just a little too overbearing."

In the midst of the Mutant Sparrow flock, White Bones was spinning about with its bone blades, grinding the Mutant Sparrows like a whirlwind.

Even though it seemed hopeless, those sparrows still attacked White Bones in droves, and they would be sliced and diced, but wearing White Bones' Stamina down.

Right at this time, a line of fire suddenly shot out from one corner of the human gathering, entering the huge cloud of Mutant Sparrows, and a number of them immediately fell like rain, having been incinerated.

That fire seemed to be a signal, as immediately, wind blades, iron rocks, countless ice picks, vines, floating metal plates, and even summoned beasts appeared, and started assaulting those Mutant Sparrows.

Those Enhancers had grown impatient of waiting, seeing that the Mutant Sparrows were not leaving, and if they were to remain here for too long, they would definitely be buried here.

Yue Zhong saw the Enhancers rapidly casting their abilities and thought: "So many Enhancers! If only they were under me, how great that would be!!"

The more survivors there were, the more Enhancers that were bound to emerge. Amongst these 3,000 Enhancers, a number were even Evolvers, and most of these Evolvers did not belong to any of the 4 Great Triads, either establishing their own triads, or working

as solo hunters.

If these 3,000 Enhancers were to be controlled by Yue Zhong, he had absolute confidence in dealing with Wuyan Hong and his Great Empire of Vietnam.

However, it was a pity everyone of them had their own ideals and thinking, if he wanted to get them to band together, it was going to be extremely difficult. Furthermore, those with capabilities were seldom willing to submit to another. In this apocalyptic world, the moment many gained strength, their ambitions also soared.

Under the relentless assault of those abilities, the body count of the Mutant Sparrows started to reach over 8,000, before the rest of the flock decided to flee.

Upon seeing that the Mutant Sparrow flock had finally left, many emerged from their vehicles, and started grabbing the bodies of those Mutant Sparrows. They were after all meat that was hard to come by. In Guilin City, meat was obtained like that.

Bai Xiaosheng came to Yue Zhong's side and said: "Boss!! Shall we go and snatch some too?"

Yue Zhong shook his head and rejected: "No need!!"

Yue Zhong had brought along 20 huge trucks, but their purpose was to be stored with the bodies of Type 2 Mutant Beasts. He could not be bothered with these little critters.

Since the Mutant Sparrows were low levelled, their meat would not be able to strengthen survivors unlike the Type 2 Mutant Beast meat. However, to ordinary survivors, just the meat of a Mutant Sparrow was a hard to come by delicacy.

With the arrival and departure of the flock, they left 8,000 corpses. At the same time, 20+ Enhancers had been pecked into a pile of bones by them.

After picking up the meat, 200 of the Enhancers immediately withdrew from the operation, and brought the meat back to Guilin

City. This amount of meat was enough for them to lead a comfortable life for quite a while, and they were naturally unwilling to risk their lives further.

After facing that attack, the fleet continued their advance, and along the way, there were a few other ordinary Mutant Beasts that were attracted by their scent. However, they didn't amount to much against such a huge army of Enhancers.

After trekking for almost an entire day, the fleet finally came to their destination, a moderate sized mountain range.

After the apocalypse set in, the mountain range had undergone a huge change as well. There were mutant trees that grew everywhere, their trunks reaching up to 10m and above. All sorts of mutant vegetation and flowers covered the entire range as well, which became the resting grounds to various Mutant Beasts. From time to time, there would be mighty roars emitting from within the range that sent chills down one's spine.

All hints of human constructions were already consumed and enveloped by mother nature, and most roads that were carved out previously were either covered by huge trees, or enveloped by the rest of the flora, turning the place into a overgrown, dilapidated scene.

In this mountain range, there was a large number of monstrous Mutant Beasts gathered, and this was the location that many expert from Guilin City chose to strengthen themselves.

Many Enhancers picked this place to continuously hunt and enhance themselves. Of course, hunting a Mutant Beast was no easy matter, and everyday, there would be Enhancers that die at the jaws of these Mutant Beasts, but there were those who had strengthened considerably through the training as well. It was a training heaven for the strong, and living hell for the weak.

Chapter 410: Mountain Range

It was as though they caught the scent of humans, because there was a rustling of the grass, before Mutant Rats the size of pigs came charging out of the forest, making a mad rush for the group of Enhancers.

"Level 18 Mutant Beast: Mutant Mountain Rats! They possess sharp teeth and formidable strength, which can bite through even steel!" The moment Yue Zhong saw those Mutant Mountain Rats, the information about them popped up.

When they saw the incoming horde of Mutant Mountain Rats, many Enhancers charged forwards with their weapons drawn. These were one of the weaker groups of Mutant Beasts residing in the range, and was perfect for low-level Enhancers.

"Xin Jiarou, go kill that!!" Yue Zhong pointed to one of the Mutant Mountain Rats that has charged over with the intention to maul them, as he threw a Dark Magic Blade to her.

"Yes!! Master!!" Xin Jiarou eyed the Mutant Mountain Rat, as her scalp turned numb. She was someone who had not even killed a chicken prior to the apocalypse. However, for the sake of her daughter, she still held up the Dark Magic Blade, her body trembling slightly as she faced the Mutant Mountain Rat.

Yue Zhong spoke behind her: "Don't fear! As long as you calm yourself down, it is not your match! Your strength is way above it, but remember, no one will help you! Only you can help yourself. Even if you really died, I wouldn't lend a hand."

Yue Zhong had handed a lot of equipment to Xin Jiarou, and although she was only Level 1, her attributes were even higher than that of a Level 30 Enhancer. Once she learnt to get past the psychological barrier, slaughtering the Mutant Mountain rats wouldn't be an issue.

Xin Jiarou held the Dark Magic Blade tightly as she shivered, her heart full of fear.

The speed of the Mutant Mountain Rat was fast, like a galloping horse, and it charged towards Xin Jiarou with a fearsome aura, pouncing towards her viciously.

"Am I going to die?" Xin Jiarou was frightened stiff, and she could not move, her mind going blank.

"Mama!!!!!!" Just as Xin Jiarou was about to be knocked down by the Mutant Mountain Rat, the piercing scream from behind jolted her awake.

Xin Jiarou twisted with all her might, and the sharp claws barely touched her shoulder, but the paw managed to hit her shoulder, slapping her viciously, and a tremendous force sent Xin Jiarou sprawling to the ground.

Under that immense assault, Xin Jiarou's shoulder was broken, and her heartbeat dulled, causing her to spit out a mouthful of blood.

Even with the protection of the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, Xin Jiarou's body constitution was too weak, and she could not withstand even the force of a Mutant Mountain Rat. This was the weakness of Agilty-based Enhancers, their DPS was high, and they could dodge well, but the moment they were hit, their defences were pitiful.

Mu Xiangling saw that her mother had fallen to the ground, and her face turned pale, as she struggled in Yue Zhong's arms and screamed: "Mama!! Mama!! Mama!! Yue Zhong!! Yue Zhong-gege!! Please help, save my mother!! If you don't, she's going to die!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes were cold as he held Mu Xiangling tightly, sealing her movements, and not allowing her to make any rash moves: "No! You'd better open your eyes and watch carefully! She needs to start relying on herself to get past this obstacle! In the

future, if you want to become an Enhancer, you'll also need to overcome your fear like this!"

After which, Yue Zhong glanced at Ning Yuxin as well, and she trembled slightly, knowing full well that Yue Zhong was talking to her also. If she wanted to become a powerful Enhancer, she had to overcome her initial fears.

When the Mutant Mountain Rat injured Xin Jiarou with its mid-air leap, the moment it landed, it turned around swiftly to launch a second attack.

"I can't die here!! I can't die!! If I die, what's going to happen to Xiangling? I must live!!" With the threat of death looming over, Xin Jiarou's eyes turned bloodshot and she managed to muster her potential.

Xin Jiarou saw the Mutant Mountain Rat flying over, and she exerted her maximum speed, enabling her to take in the movement of the Mutant Mountain Rat. She adjusted her body slightly in response, and used her right hand to sweep the Dark Magic Blade upwards to slice at it.

The Dark Magic Blade was extremely sharp, and the Mutant Mountain Rat had no way of defending against that hit, as it was instantly sliced in two, fresh blood and its innards splattered onto Xin Jiarou, making her look hideous.

"Congratulations on reaching Level 2....."

"....."

"Congratulations on reaching Level 5, you have gained 2 attribute points to be allocated!"

After killing the Mutant Mountain Rat, Xin Jiarou instantly soared to Level 5, at the same time, a skill book and 10 Survivor Coins dropped in front of her.

Xin Jiarou wiped the blood off the corner of her mouth, as she picked up the skill book and survivor coins and offered them to

Yue Zhong. She spoke with a new hint of resolution in her eyes: "Master! I've accomplished my task."

After killing the Mutant Mountain Rat on her own, Xin Jiarou had gone through an earth-shattering change, she has already shedded her image of a weak woman, and was on her way to becoming a strong female warrior.

Yue Zhong took out a packet of Life-Saving Grass and threw it to Xin Jiarou, before taking the skill book and survivor coins: "Eat this! Take a rest first!"

Xin Jiarou swallowed the packet of Life-Saving Grass and stood quietly beside Yue Zhong.

"Level 2 Skill: Treatment of Bone Injuries. Skill only allows bone injuries to be treated. No effect on other injuries. Usage expends 8 Spirit. Non-doctors, priests, paladins and other healer classes can only utilize skill once a day."

"This skill, which of you wants to learn?" Yue Zhong held it up in front of Mu Xiangling and Ning Yuxin, as his own path was that of a combatant, and every skill had to be geared towards fighting. Furthermore, he possessed the Level 4 Regeneration Skill, hence he didn't need another healing skill.

Mu Xiangling took a look at the book and immediately exclaimed: "Me! I want to heal my mum!!"

Without any hesitation, Mu Xiangling took it and immediately learnt it, when suddenly, her face fell and she groaned: "My Spirit is not high enough! I only have 7 points of Spirit, I can't activate the skill!"

Yue Zhong thought for a moment, and then pulled out a Fireball Ring from his pocket and gave it to Mu Xiangling.

She immediately brightened up, and kissed Yue Zhong's hands, as she put it on, and thanked him profusely: "Thank you Ge-ge~~! Ge-ge is the best~~!!"

Upon equipping the Fireball Ring, Mu Xiangling immediately activated the healing skill, and a white light shot into Xin Jiarou.

Under the combined effects of the white light and the Life-Saving Grass, Xin Jiarou's broken shoulder blade recovered quickly.

When the light dissipated, Xin Jiarou tested her shoulder gingerly, and her eyes flashed with joy, and reported to Yue Zhong: "Master! My body is healed, I can continue to fight!"

"Then go take care of that Mutant Mountain Rat!" Yue Zhong pointed at another one casually, as he told Xin Jiarou.

The Green Stone Triad was currently occupying a huge region, and the rest of the Enhancers did not dare get too close.

This was also part of the agreement, that the 4 Great Triads would claim the best spots and resources. They could monopolize them and thus, increase faster in strength and gain more Enhancers.

As for those solo wanderers and smaller factions, they could only gobble up the leftovers, or risk their lives by venturing further into the mountain range to hunt bigger Mutant Beasts.

After killing one Mutant Mountain Rat, Xin Jiarou had increased confidence and experience in dealing with them, and she pumped everything into Agility. She raced forth, and in a flash, appeared in front of a Mutant Mountain Rat.

The Mutant Rat pounced towards Xin Jiarou, who lightly dodged the attack, and slashed out with the Dark Magic Blade, instantly severing the unfortunate beast in 2. Compared to her earlier pathetic performance, it was as though she had completed some arcane transformation into another person, one who was extremely comfortable with hunting.

After killing the Mutant Mountain Rat in one slash, Xin Jiarou shot forwards and slashed down at another Mutant Mountain Rat that had just appeared.

The status as an Evolver coupled with the ample equipment that Yue Zhong gave her, with the various enhancements and her own talents she was well prepared. She started a killing spree and grew stronger without stop, as her level increased again and again.

Not long after, the Mutant Mountain Rat horde was wiped out by the huge gathering of Enhancers, with only 6 unfortunate fatalities had been ripped apart, and another 30 who suffered various degrees of injuries.

Once they cleared the horde, the huge troop decided to leave the mountain range temporarily, setting up camp at a nearby village about 5km away. They had already rushed for an entire day, and many were exhausted.

Furthermore, battling against the Mutant Beasts in the dark of the night was tantamount to suicide. At night, the humans suffered a decrease in their abilities, but the Mutant Beasts could employ more of their strength. There were very few like Yue Zhong who were suited for fighting at night.

"Master! My current level is 14!" Inside a room of the town, Xin Jiarou exclaimed with excitement and a little exhaustion to Yue Zhong.

Growing from a Level 1 to a Level 14 within a day, such a speed vastly outstripped Yue Zhong. However, this was because Xin Jiarou was an Evolver, and she had gained the boost of equipment from Yue Zhong, allowing her to reap such benefits and results in a day's worth of combat.

Without all the various enhancements from the equipment, Xin Jiarou would not be able to kill so many Mutant Mountain Rats.

Upon hearing that Xin Jiarou had grown to become a Level 14 Evolver, Ning Yuxin's eyes shone with envy. She had also killed a few Mutant Mountain Rats with the help of White Bones, but her enhancement level was only 7. Those aided forms of enhancement were slower, and thus the slower growth.

Mu Xiangling leapt into Xin Jiarou's embrace and giggled: "My mama is the best! Hehe!"

Xin Jiarou hugged Mu Xiangling back as she ruffled her hair, eyes filled with motherly love.

Yue Zhong watched the 2 of them, and his face broke into a smile. Xin Jiarou had proved today, that his investment in her was not wasted. As long as she continued fighting on, she would quickly grow to become a terrifying existence.

"Yue Zhong!!! I want your life!!!" In the town, at a corner of an alley, a man who was dressed in a black cloak cursed out under his breath, his eyes filled with a look of utter hatred and venom.

Chapter 411: The Ravenous Beast Horde Attacks!

As the majority of the humans were falling into deep slumber, under the cover of the moonlight, groups of Mutant Beasts started gathering around the small town.

Amidst the dark patches of grass, multiple pairs of eyes that were shining green stared fixedly at the humans patrolling at the entrance, as though they were staring at delicious food.

The surroundings were suddenly filled with a soundwave that was beyond the human hearing range, and under the indication of the soundwave, those Mutant Beasts that were lying in wait suddenly made their move and charged towards the town.

The Enhancers of Guilin City had gone hunting this way countless times, and they had long since laid countless warning traps around the town. The moment the Mutant Beasts moved, almost all of the traps sounded at the same time.

"Ambush!! Ambush!!"

The moment the alarms rang out, the warriors by the wall immediately shouted at the top of their lungs.

In just a few breaths, all the human warriors who were just entering sleep immediately got up and grabbed their weapons, as they charged towards the outside.

When hunting the Mutant Beasts, facing an ambush during the night was the most dangerous, the moment one was careless, it could spell doom for the entire party.

The warriors got up, and under the command of the various leaders, they quickly dispersed to the various key points of the town.

This small town was established by the countless parties of Guilin

City to help with the hunting of Mutant Beasts. There were all sorts of traps laid around the town, and when several Mutant Beasts got close, they fell into these traps.

Yue Zhong had brought his experts from the Green Stone Triad to the front of the town at the first notice.

"So many Mutant Beasts!!" Yue Zhong looked and was shocked.

They discovered that beyond the perimeter, there were countless Mutant Mountain Rats. They charged forth with disregard for their own lives, filling up the holes and traps, making the ground even for the rest of the horde to advance.

Pretty soon, the Mutant Mountain Rats would be able to break past the defences and get closer to the town.

Earlier, when the factions had entered the town, they had allocated defence positions, all they had to do was to take charge of their own locations. As there were too many factions, this was the best solution to deal with any potential problems. Even the 4 Great Triads would only be able to instruct their own subordinates, as for the other warriors, they would not be able to command them.

Yue Zhong glanced at the densely packed horde of Mutant Mountain Rats, and ordered White Bones: "White Bones! Charge! Make sure that they're all mutilated!! And try not to let them destroy the traps!"

Receiving Yue Zhong's orders, White Bones hoisted its huge axe, and charged into the Mutant Mountain Rats' horde.

As White Bones entered their midst, bone spikes started to shoot from various points of its body, piercing those Mutant Rats, sending them flying towards Yue Zhong's side.

The low-levelled Enhancers under Yue Zhong immediately stepped forwards and used their Tang Replica Swords to finish off the Mutant Rats, gaining enhancement in the process.

Even Mu Xiangling was using the sharp Dark Magic Blade to help

finish off the Mutant Rats.

With the help of White Bones, the subordinates of Yue Zhong managed to enhance themselves at an incredible speed, their levels rising rapidly.

The rest of the experts just stood and waited silently for his orders.

Yue Zhong had Night Enhancement Skill, and he could see that beyond the positions of the Mutant Mountain Rats, there were countless pairs of eyes that shone green, staring hungrily at the town. The moment he committed all his troops to fight, their stamina would dwindle, and it would be a problem to face the monsters behind.

After White Bones had evolved into the Second Order Dark Skeleton, its battle ability had rose to a fearsome level. It stood alone at the front of Yue Zhong's defence, and was like an immovable mountain that blocked all advance! The moment those Mutant Mountain Rats got close, it would shoot a bone spike out and throw the unfortunate beast backwards, before it was slaughtered by the humans.

Yue Zhong observed a while, before ordering Xin Jiarou: "Go and kill as many as you can! Raise your level to 16 then come back! Add all your points to Stamina now!"

The level of these Mutant Mountain Rats were at 18, and to Xin Jiarou, they were the perfect hunting targets.

"Yes! Master!!" Xin Jiarou brandished her Dark Magic Blade and charged towards the Mutant Mountain Rats, easily entering their midst, and started a massacre.

At this moment, Yue Zhong still had White Bones holding the fort, and he could sit and relax, while helping his low level subordinates strengthen themselves.

However, near his spot, there was a weaker gang, and the when

the Mutant Mountain Rats horde had used the corpses of their fallen comrades to fill up the traps, they managed to tangle with the small triad.

This gang was called the Knife Association, and they were made up of a chief and 20 other experts. Their chief Cai Mingliang was an Agility-based Evolver. The knives in his hands whooshed about, and numerous Mutant Mountain Rats met their end at his hands. However, the 20 experts beside him did not have decent levels, most of them hovering at Level 21 or 22, additionally, their equipment was inadequate, hence, there was growing exhaustion as they faced the relentless rat horde.

All of a sudden, 6 of the Mutant Mountain Rats charged at one of the experts wielding a Tang Sabre who had coincidentally just killed 2 other Rats.

"Ah!! Boss!! Save me!!" The expert had just sliced off the head of one Mutant Rat, when the other 5 immediately pounced on him, biting him with their razor sharp jaws, as he screamed out in agony.

"Wang Yue!!!" Cai Mingliang's eyes turned bloodshot, and activated his skill, charging towards Wang Yue in a flash. As he sped along, he sliced the 16 Mutant Mountain Rats blocking his way. Fresh blood and innards splattered all over the ground in his wake.

Cai Mingliang arrived at Wang Yue's side, and slashed 5 times quickly, slicing the bodies of the 5 gnawing Mutant Mountain Rats in twain.

"Wang Yue!!" Cai Mingliang howled in agony as he looked at Wang Yue, whose throat had already been ripped wide open by one of the Rats, leaving only a corpse.

"Boss!! Save Me!" Another Knife Association member screamed out this time, he had also just been accosted by 4 Mutant Rats, and their defence was starting to collapse.

Cai Mingliang's body disappeared in a flash and appeared right beside that expert, instantly killing the 4 Mutant Mountain Rats.

"Save me!! Save me!! Ah!!!!"

However, Cai Mingliang was only one person, even if he gave his all to run about the battlefield, there was a limit to how much he could do, and he could only watch helplessly as his comrades died in front of him.

The vice-chief of the Knife Association Luo Shi sliced off the head of one Mutant Rat before turning to shout at Cai Mingliang: "Boss!! We can't hold off any longer!! We will definitely die if this goes on! Let's ask the Green Stone Triad for help!!"

Cai Mingliang panted heavily as he replied: "If we go now!! What if they demand for something that is hard to accept? What if he wants to swallow our Knife Association?"

Luo Shi hollered as he killed another Mutant Rat with difficulty: "Boss!! If this goes on, we're all going to die!! If we die, what's the point of the Knife Association?!"

"Boss! Help!!!" Another expert of the Knife Association screamed out, and was immediately pounced on by a few Mutant Mountain Rats, before being bitten to death.

Cai Mingliang witnessed yet another death of his subordinates, and gritted his teeth as he ordered one of the experts: "Hong Ming!! Go request aid from Green Stone Triad, say that we're willing to join him, ask Yue Zhong to send some aid!!"

Everyone had a job and spot to defend, and no one could retreat without the 4 Great Triads' orders. If any one faction or person dared to abandon his post, then anyone would be able to execute them later. Furthermore, upon return to Guilin City, the family members of the deserters would be killed without mercy as well.

Under such cruel laws, even if the road seemed helpless, those Enhancers had to fight on to the death. Otherwise, they would

implicate their friends and families back at Guilin City.

Hong Ming quickly came to Yue Zhong's camp.

"Damn!! They're too strong! With such an expert in the Green Stone Triad, no wonder they became one of the 4 Great Triads!" When Hong Ming arrived at the campsite, he saw Yue Zhong commanding the lower level Enhancers to strengthen themselves, and the lone killing figure of White Bones on the frontlines.

White Bones alone could defend the location. It must be known that as Yue Zhong commanded Green Stone Triad, and since they were one of the 4 Great Triads, the location they had to defend was larger than most of the ordinary triads by at least 10 times.

White Bones had been enhanced 4 times, and evolved to the Second Order Dark Skeleton level. After its evolution, it was stronger than other Dark Skeletons by at least twice, its combat ability was extremely tyrannical, to the point where it could even take down a normal Type 2 Mutant Beast with only a fair amount of effort. It was considered even more dangerous than most Type 2 Mutant Beasts. However, in comparison, its Speed, Strength and Stamina was still lacking.

Hong Ming came to Yue Zhong and kneeled, as he kowtowed profusely: "Boss Yue!! I'm Hong Ming from the Knife Association!! Please send some reinforcements to save us! I'm begging you!!"

Yue Zhong eyed Hong Ming a little coolly: "Hong Ming! We had agreed beforehand on the defence zones! The Green Stone Triad is defending a location 10 times that of yours! I need my manpower here. Please hold on for awhile, I will send some men over later."

Yue Zhong was well aware of the fact that the Knife Association had an Agility-based Evolver. With that Evolver, the Knife Association could hold out for at least another 20 minutes.

Yue Zhong had planned that after 20 minutes, when the Knife Association was down to their last bit of strength, Yue Zhong

would then go and rescue them. That way, the Knife Association would have no strength to bargain for any part of the Type 3 Mutant Beast.

Hong Ming did not hesitate as he immediately offered: "Boss Yue, as long as you send men to save us! We from the Knife Association will be willing to join the Green Stone Triad, and become part of you guys!"

Yue Zhong's tone immediately changed: "Great! Then I shall bring some men to help now!"

If the Knife Association were to join the Green Stone Triad, then the power in Yue Zhong's control would naturally increase some more, therefore he was willing to save them now.

Yue Zhong immediately summoned Larman: "Larman! Come with me!"

"Yes, Leader!" Larman brought the ex-Judgement Corps as they followed Yue Zhong closely, making their way towards the Knife Association's zone in haste.

Yue Zhong led his men and quickly slaughtered their way through the zone, only to see the remaining members of the Knife Association closely huddling in a circle, surrounded by a swarm of the Mutant Mountain Rats, desperately hanging on.

Yue Zhong heroically brandished his 2m-long Black Tooth Blade and charged into the Rat swarm. With every gargantuan swing, 4 or more of the Mutant Mountain Rats would lose their heads.

Facing these densely packed but low-level beasts, the Black Tooth Blade in Yue Zhong's hands was the most effective weapon, as the area of effect was large, and he could kill many of them in a single swing.

"Charge!!" Larman bellowed as he pulled out his own Dark Magic Blade and shot towards the Mutant Rats.

The platoon of the ex-Judgement Corps warriors also pulled out

their Tang Replica Swords and followed Larman's lead as they charged towards the Mutant Mountain Rats. The strength of these warriors was their marksmanship, modern weaponry proficiency as well as experience. Their close-quarters combat was decent as well, and killing these Mutant Rats was not an issue.

On the other side, Cai Mingliang brought his men and they slaughtered their way through, both sides joining forces and forcing the Mutant Mountain Rats back.

Cai Mingliang came over in front of Yue Zhong, with a complicated gleam in his eyes, and he spoke solemnly. "Cai Mingliang greets Boss Yue! This time, it's thanks to Boss Yue's timely rescue, otherwise my brothers and I would have died here!"

Yue Zhong nodded slightly and replied: "I got it! Take your men! Let's construct some barricades immediately!!"

Yue Zhong had brought along some tools as well.

To maintain the defence on Cai Mingliang's side, the fortification required was definitely not little. The main reason why they were struggling was because they had underestimated the effectiveness of fortifications. They had grown complacent, and didn't expect the forces of the Mutant Beasts to attack so fast, hence they had thoroughly suffered.

Whereas compared to Yue Zhong, everywhere he went, he would bring along the necessary materials and tools for fortification. A simple construction could potentially save the lives of countless warriors at the right time.

After they forced the horde back, Yue Zhong's subordinates began nailing large steel beams into the ground. After they established a few stakes, they started tying a layer of sharp wires in between the stakes, and in a matter of minutes, a simple defensive structure was erected.

"Yes, Boss!" Cai Mingliang saw those simple yet effective

structures, and his respect for Yue Zhong rose, before bringing his men to help out in the ongoing fortifications.

Chapter 412: Chen Hongye! Assassination Attempt!

The defences of the other parts of town were still tight, and with the protection of the numerous experts scattered throughout, the dense horde of Mutant Mountain Rats could not break through, instead getting slaughtered.

There were also parts where the Mutant Mountain Rats managed to overrun the humans, and they swept the place clean of the Enhancers that were stationed there.

The number of corpses of Mutant Mountain Rats had reached 3,000, and over 60 Enhancers had been killed as well.

Without giving the humans a chance to rest, the Mutant Beast horde lying in wait behind the Mutant Mountain Rats began their assault.

The Mutant Beasts waiting behind the Mutant Mountain Rats were actually Mutant Civets. These mutant beasts were Level 21, their bodies as tough as wolves, and claws extremely sharp. Behind the Mutant Civets, following closely behind were Mutant Leopard Cats. Behind them were Mutant Vietnam Golden Monkeys, Mutant Pangolins, and others. The entire horde was making their way closer, like an army of beasts.

Yue Zhong stared at the incoming horde, and his expression fell: "Damn it!! How can we defend an attack on such scale?"

In the dark of the night, only people with night vision capabilities like Yue Zhong, as well as some of the Evolvers could see the status of the town. Whoever saw the incoming horde, would feel their scalp go numb from fear and desolation.

The moment the horde pushed into town, the battle exploded into full blown proportions.

Ice spikes, sword qi, blade beams, fireballs, wind blades, ground

spears, all sorts of abilities exploded out, exhibiting their might at the front lines. Countless Mutant Beasts were instantly pulverized by the numerous abilities raining on them, but at the same time, there would be unfortunate humans that died at the vicious claws and swipes of the Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong had recalled White Bones and Xin Jiarou back, ordering Larman and his troops forwards with their modern weaponry to unleash carnage on the Mutant Beasts charging towards them.

Yue Zhong was worried that they would encounter a huge horde of Mutant Beasts, and had brought along 10 127mm heavy machine guns.

The 10 127mm machine guns aimed towards the horde of monsters, and let loose a volley of fearsome firepower. With the dense rain of bullets, a number of Mutant Beasts instantly got punched full of holes even before nearing the defence post. Facing that type of firepower, only those Mutant Beasts above Level 40 would be able to defend against it with their bare flesh, as for the rest, they could only die.

"What do we do? If this continues on, we will definitely die at the jaws of these brutes." Yue Zhong eyed the situation as he racked his brains.

Yue Zhong had only 50,000 rounds of ammunition in his possession, and if they continued to fire at this rate, the bullets will run out sooner or later. And once it came to close combat, his subordinates would definitely face defeat.

Right at this time, a giant mouse of about 5m with scales that looked like rocks leapt out from the horde, squashing a number of other Mutant Beasts as it made its way towards Yue Zhong's area in a frenzy. The bullets of the heavy machine gun only served to bounce off that insane armor.

"Level 53 Strange Beast: Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat. It

possesses an extremely hard carapace and monstrous strength."

"Prepare the grenade launchers! Fire!!" Larman saw the Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat and hollered at the top of his lungs.

6 soldiers handling the grenade launchers stepped forwards, aiming at the Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat and fired.

Hong! Hong!

A number of the rockets all exploded on the Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat, and those explosives that could easily blast an armored vehicle only resulted in 2 very small bloody holes, not even endangering the Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat's life. On the contrary, it only served to enrage it even further, as it released a stronger killing intent, its eyes turning bloodshot and charged at Larman and his subordinates.

Seeing the Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat rushing over, the faces of Larman and his subordinates fell, if the Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat successfully reached their site, they would definitely die, if not injured heavily.

At this time, White Bones took a step forwards, as a number of bone spikes appeared, and propelled itself onto the head of the Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat. It then condensed a sharp bone drill, plunging it deep into the wound that resulted from the explosives earlier.

The sharp bone drill penetrated the wound of the Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat, and started to spin rapidly, causing the wound to enlarge. The sharp bone drill then proceeded to mash the brains of the Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat into paste!

The moment the brain was pulverized, the Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat slumped to the ground, dropping 2 Skill Books and an amount of Survivor Coins. The 2 Skill Books were a Level 3 Stamina Consolidation and Level 3 Agility Consolidation.

The moment the Type 2 Mutant Mountain Rat died, the

remaining hundred some Mutant Rats dispersed and started to retreat in various directions. Within the town, there were still a large number of Mutant Leopard Cats and Mutant Civets that happened to be the natural predators of the Mutant Mountain Rats. If it wasn't for the threat of the Type 2 Mutant Beast, the rest of the Mutant Mountain Rats inside would have long since escaped as well.

"This!!! Maybe we have a chance!!" Yue Zhong saw the dispersing Mutant Mountain Rats, and his eyes shone brightly.

At this time, a shadow flitted over like a whirlwind, pouncing on White Bones, knocking it to the ground, as it opened its huge jaws and bit at its neck. "Level 56 Mutant Beast, Type 2 Mutant Civet!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a strange glint as he changed towards the Type 2 Mutant Civet.

Just as the Type 2 Mutant Civet opened its huge jaws, White Bones immediately shot out a sharp bone spike towards the throat of the Mutant Civet.

At the same time, a bone blade shot out from White Bones' body, locking the limbs of the Type 2 Mutant Civet.

The Type 2 Mutant Civet had a terrifying speed, as it dodged the killing strike from White Bones, but its movement was tied down by White Bones very same maneuver.

Yue Zhong shot towards the attacking Type 2 Mutant Civet like an arrow, his right hand condensing the domineering Devil Flame Spear, striking it at the Type 2 Mutant Civet. As he lunged into his attack he penetrated its head, incinerating the brains of the Type 2 Mutant Civet.

The Type 2 Mutant Civet slumped to the ground, becoming a corpse, at the same time dropping a green-coloured treasure box and Survivor Coins.

"Congratulations on reaching Level 53, you have gained 2

attribute points to be allocated."

With the death of the Type 2 Mutant Civet, the rest of the Mutant Civets also dispersed, retreating towards the distance.

Yue Zhong's side had a large number of Mutant Civets, and when they scattered, the pressure on his subordinates were alleviated a lot.

Yue Zhong relaxed a little after killing the Type 2 Mutant Civet, and could feel the chance for victory: "As expected, one must kill the Type 2 leaders. Otherwise, we would not stand a chance against these hordes of Mutant Beasts."

Just when Yue Zhong was starting to relax, a dark shadow charged out suddenly from a dark corner, and a blade came sweeping downwards as though it was splitting the skies, slashing towards Yue Zhong.

As it was the moment where Yue Zhong had just let down his guard, he was caught unprepared, and just as his Danger Perception warned him of the danger, the black blade had already appeared in front of him.

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps, dodging towards the right, and raising his left arm to defend.

The black blade came slashing down on Yue Zhong's left hand, and went through the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, sending Yue Zhong's left arm flying, fresh blood splattering.

At the same time, a fearsome blade energy was sent through Yue Zhong's wound, knocking him backwards 6 or 7 metres, as he spat out a mouthful of fresh blood.

"Larman! I'm Chen Hongye! Quickly help me kill Yue Zhong!! As long as we kill him! We can work together to rebuild the Hong Triad!!" As the black blade beam dispersed, a middle-aged man was revealed, holding a Level 4 Treasure Black Swiss Blade. His looks were refined, but his expression was currently grim.

This middle-aged man was Hong Triad's chief Chen Hongye. The earlier took all of Chen Hongye's Spirit, expending a huge amount of Stamina as well. That strike was a Second Order Skill: Shattering Cut.

The power of the Shattering Cut was truly without equal, even slashing apart a Type 3 Mutant Beast Hide. However, its consumption was likewise enormous, almost expending all of Chen Hongye's Stamina and Spirit. He had no choice but to ask Larman for help.

Just as Chen Hongye leapt out, from a small room at the back of the town, 20 other experts suddenly burst forwards, they were precisely the 4 Elders that Chen Hongye brought out, along with their subordinates.

At this point, there were only White Bones, Larman, his subordinates as well as Cai Mingliang and his men from the Knife Association. If Larman was to turn on Yue Zhong now, it was possible that the Knife Association would revolt as well, then Yue Zhong would truly be in danger.

Chen Hongye had waited a long time for this chance. If Yue Zhong had stayed at his own site, Chen Hongye would not have succeeded. He had been patient, and finally gotten the golden opportunity to strike, and his single strike had removed Yue Zhong's left arm, creating possibilities.

Hearing Chen Hongye's words, Larman's subordinates were riled up, and looked to Larman. They were only willing to listen to this commander who had principles, but mostly because he was their commander after all.

Chapter 413: Killing Chen Hongye

Larman's expression changed a few times, as he struggled a while before replying solemnly: "Chen Hongye! I'm sorry, I'm now Yue Zhong's subordinate. I need to follow the code of professionalism! Guys, take up your weapons, and prepare to take the enemies of Boss down!"

Hearing his orders, the 30-plus ex-Judgement Corps members hollered once, before taking up their weapons and started to fire at the 20 elite members of Chen Hongye's troops.

Under the intense and fierce firepower of the 30 or so soldiers, 4 of the elites under Chen Hongye were immediately killed.

The remaining 16 experts of Chen Hongye immediately dove for cover.

Chen Hongye's eyes flashed with desperation: "Damn!! Larman, have you forgotten the honour and glory of the mighty Kingdom of God? We should pledge loyalty to that, isn't it?!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a chilly gaze, as he suppressed his pain, and raised his stinger at Chen Hongye's head: "Chen Hongye! As a Chinese, you dare become a foreigner's dog. You deserve to die!"

Chen Hongye's face turned ugly, before he disappeared in a black light, and appeared 10m away from his original spot.

"What's so bad about it!! The foreigners can give me more money! I get better treatment with them as well, so what's bad about being their dog! Within our country, people like us who have no background, aren't we also the dogs of people with background? Being a dog to power and prestige is better than leading life as a normal person!!"

"The fact that this Daddy became a dog for the foreigners, even the officials in our country have to be deferential to me! As a

foreigner's dog, I'm seen as a higher position than those in our country! What are the normal people in our country considered? Nothing more than ants! If a rich kid accidentally killed someone, nothing will happen to him. However, if the person that died happened to be a foreigner's dog, the entire government and police force will come after that rich kid!"

"Yue Zhong! Those who stay within the country aim to be officials! Elites! Celebrities! Famous people! Those with capabilities all aim to go overseas anyway! I'm just going with the flow! Yue Zhong, the Kingdom of God is not something you can afford to stand up to! Come with me and be a foreigner's dog, if we combine our forces, we can become an overseer of the Asia region!!" Chen Hongye had a twisted and feverish expression as he spoke loudly.

When Chen Hongye was younger, his sister had been raped by a government official's son before. However, because he had worn a condom, just based on that ridiculous reason, he had managed to dodge the punishment and judgement of the law. From that moment on, Chen Hongye's personality became twisted, and worked hard to slog for the foreigners. After the apocalypse, the first thing he did was to join the Kingdom of God, and worked wholeheartedly for them.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly as he activated his Shadow Steps, and wielded his Black Tooth Blade, slashing it at Chen Hongye: "Chen Hongye! If you want to be a dog, that's your problem! I couldn't care less about your past! I just know that since you're in my way, you're my enemy! So, you have to die!"

Chen Hongye's eyes flashed with a look of pity, as he raised his blade to block Yue Zhong's attack: "What a shame! Yellow-skinned people are really a lower lifeform! You still won't listen!!"

As they exchanged blows, the force of the collision knocked Yue Zhong back by one step, his Strength could not compare to Chen Hongye.

Chen Hongye laughed out grimly, as he stepped forward: "With this little bit of strength? And you want my life? What confidence."

At this time, 3 sharp bone spikes shot out from Yue Zhong's waist towards Chen Hongye's own waist.

Chen Hongye's face fell, and the Black Swiss Blade in his hands shot out a few blade beams, splitting the 3 bone spikes apart.

Yue Zhong took the chance to slash towards Chen Hongye's body.

As he hadn't recovered from the previous strike, he gritted his teeth and forcefully used his left shoulder to block the attack.

The moment Yue Zhong's blade landed on the left shoulder, his 6-times Strength exploded, causing Chen Hongye to fly back 5 metres.

Chen Hongye's left shoulder had a few broken bones, and the Type 2 Mutant Beast hide on his shoulder had a little tear as well. He endured the pain as he thought: "Damn! That bastard's strong!!"

Yue Zhong's attack did not stop there, as his movements flowed one after another like water. His pupils narrowed, and he activated his [Art of Fear]. A powerful Spiritual blast bombarded Chen Hongye's consciousness.

Chen Hongye was instantly enveloped by a horrifying illusion, causing his body to stop still.

In the next moment, a sharp bone spike came from behind Yue Zhong, piercing Chen Hongye in between his brows, and nailing him to the ground.

"The Chief is dead!!"

"Beast!! We must seek revenge for Chief!!"

"Kill them all!! We must avenge Chief!!"

"....."

The remaining soldiers became enraged when they saw their

Chief killed, as they roared out and started charging at Yue Zhong. These were the closest aides to Chen Hongye, and were loyal to a fault. They had turned mad with his death.

Yue Zhong looked at them, and his eyes flashed with a cold light, ordering White Bones: "Kill them!"

White Bones leapt towards these soldiers, and its right hand opened, shooting 5 bone spikes out, piercing the heads of 5 of the soldiers, killing them instantly.

Yue Zhong raised his Stinger and opened fire on the other soldiers.

Following the sounds of gunshots, 3 of them had their heads blasted to smithereens and their lifeless corpses fell to the floor.

As they witness this, 3 of the Elders retreated to nearby cover.

White Bones charged into the midst of the remaining soldiers, executing its whirlwind move again, and some of the beasts that were summoned from the summoner inside the group were immediately shredded. It also held out its huge axe, instantly slashing the stomach of the summoner, separating his legs from his upper body.

One Caster-class Enhancer was in the middle of a chant, when a sharp bone spike pierced his brain and nailed him to a wall behind.

In a short span of less than a minute, the frenzied soldiers of Chen Hongye were all killed by White Bones, as broken bones and fresh blood were all over the ground.

From behind a cover, one of the Hong Triads' Elder called out: "Yue Zhong!! We're willing to surrender! Please promise our wellbeing!!"

By now the struggle was over, Chen Hongye had perished at Yue Zhong's hands, they had no hope of obtaining victory anymore. Therefore, they chose the wisest choice available. They were not steadfast soldiers that would die for Chen Hongye after all, and

they had their own plans.

Yue Zhong replied casually: "Fine! As long as you surrender! I can guarantee no harm would come to you! But if you guys think of resisting, then you'll have to pay the price!! Come out!"

There were Mutant Beasts everywhere, and if he could gain the aid of 3 more experts, it would make his job easier as well.

The 3 Elders came out from behind the cover after exchanging looks, as they came in front of Yue Zhong.

The 3 Elders all bowed to Yue Zhong, with a slightly perturbed manner: "Wei Hua Ning (Wu Wen Sheng, Gan Chi Hai) greets Boss Yue!!"

Yue Zhong had a broken left arm, and the 3 Elders were uncertain if Yue Zhong would blame them for it. In this world, the strong often oppressed the weak, with no reason at all sometimes.

Yue Zhong ordered the 3 of them: "Wei Hua Ning, Wu Wen Sheng, Gan Chi Hai, the 3 of you will become Larman's subordinates temporarily, and defend this place. As long as there's no breach, I'll consider it as a merit, and after the battle, I will reward you accordingly."

These 3 Elders had just surrendered, and we're naturally untrustworthy, but Yue Zhong couldn't care about such. He was in dire need of experts, and he had no qualms using whoever he could get his hands on.

If Chen Hongye's soldiers had not been so stubborn and loyal, Yue Zhong had in fact planned to absorb them.

"Yes! Boss Yue!!" Hearing his orders, the 3 Elders heaved a sigh of relief, and knew that Yue Zhong would not harm them since he needed them. Earlier, the viciousness of White Bones and Yue Zhong had left them with a deep impression, and they did not dare harbor any ill intent.

Chen Hongye's Shattering Cut could penetrate even the hide of a

Type 3 Mutant Beast, its power was obviously immeasurable. In the past, no one could even defend against that strike from him. Although Yue Zhong had lost an arm, he was still alive, and managed to turn the tide to strike back at Chen Hongye, exhibiting his might in the meantime.

Wei Hua Ning hesitated a while, before warning Yue Zhong: "Boss Yue! You must be wary of Di Ya!! He's filled with killing intent against you! This time, Chen Hongye had hidden amongst his troops to infiltrate the town to ambush you."

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed: "So it was him!!"

Yue Zhong did not falter as he replied: "I got it! Go on with your business!"

It was a crucial period right now, and even if Yue Zhong knew that Di Ya had been in cahoots with Chen Hongye, he could not do anything. If 2 tigers were to fight, both would definitely be injured, even if he killed Di Ya now, he would be short of one more cannon fodder for the Mutant Beasts.

Wei Hua Ning made his way to the frontlines after replying: "Yes!"

At a distance, within the post of the Heavenly Dragon Triad, the experts were displaying their own abilities, keeping the Mutant Beasts at bay.

A huge wall of earth condensed out of mid air, and blocked various parts, leaving only narrow alleys. When those Mutant Beasts followed the paths, they were immediately culled by the experts of the Heavenly Dragon Triad.

There was an expert who also possessed the [Ground Manipulation] skill, and he could use it to change the way the ground looked. As long as his Spirit did not run out, he could maintain the shape for a decent amount of time.

"Did he succeed?" Di Ya looked towards Yue Zhong's direction as

he muttered.

"Chief! Don't worry! Chen Hongye is definitely not simple. Even if he failed, Yue Zhong would not be in any good shape. Regardless, we will not have suffered!" A short, ugly man chuckled beside Di Ya. This wretched-looking man was Di Ya's adviser, Song Xin.

Chapter 414: The Situation Gradually Collapses!

Right at this time, a Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar came crashing into the huge earth walls like a tank, causing a deep booming sound to resonate outwards. The maze that was created by the high level Enhancer immediately collapsed.

The Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar continued its charge into the camp of the Heavenly Dragon Triad, squashing anything that came in its way. A few of the soldiers who were standing near the earth wall hunting the Mutant Beasts were instantly grounded into meat paste.

The Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar was among the higher level Type 2 Mutant Beasts, and the moment it entered the midst of the humans, it opened its mouth to let out an astonishing shriek that caused the ground to shudder.

A large soundwave pulsed outwards with the Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar as the epicentre, and in an instant, all those Summoner-types and Spirit-types Enhancers without adequate Endurance were instantly killed by the soundwave.

The remaining Enhancers were also not spared, suffering varying forms of giddiness and blood flowed from their orifices, their movements dulled.

At that moment, a number of Black-Scaled Boars immediately charged towards the humans like tanks, causing a path of destruction as they squashed everything in their path, turning more than 20-over Enhancers into meat paste.

The moment the Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar had breached the defences and launched its soundwave attack, it had decimated over 20% of the Heavenly Dragon Triad, and was still rampaging about their camp.

Hong!!

When the Mutant Boar group just breached the camp, there was a huge earthquake, and a terrifying explosion instantly pulverized the numerous Black-Scaled Boars.

This was one of the last line of defences arranged by the Heavenly Dragon Triad. Di Ya wasn't an idiot, and since he had ties with the military of Guilin City, he naturally possessed some talents who could create firepower ammunition. Explosives were one of his various means.

After the dust settled, a number of bungalows had collapsed, and there was Mutant Beast blood everywhere.

Seeing this, the people of the Heavenly Dragon Triad heaved a sigh of relief.

"Snakes!! There're many snakes!!" Right at this moment, one of the Enhancers who possessed the [Night Vision] ability shouted out in terror, his face turning pale.

At almost the same moment, a huge horde of Mutant Snakes of all sizes and colours flew through the air as they landed amongst the Enhancers of the Heavenly Dragon Triad.

Some of the larger snakes were a few metres long, while the smaller ones could be as small as 20 cm, and they made their way towards the Heavenly Dragon Triad members by slithering through the rubble and buildings.

"Ah!!! I've been bitten!" One of the experts suddenly shrieked in agony, a 20 cm small snake with a green and grayish body appearing on his leg. He panicked and swiped towards the snake with his blade.

The small Mutant Snake slithered away quickly, dodging the blow from the Heavenly Dragon Triad member.

At the next moment, the right leg of the expert started to swell quickly, as a dark energy started to bloat up in his body.

"Save me!! Save...." The expert had only time to shout out twice, before slumping to the floor, dead.

"There're snakes here too!!"

"Damn beasts!!"

"....."

Amongst the Heavenly Dragon Triad, there were screams being uttered everywhere, as the snakes came out from all sorts of covers and corners, and they had suddenly launched their assault, causing multiple casualties.

One of the Elder quickly came to Di Ya's side as he asked nervously: "Boss!! What do we do? If we continue fighting, the brothers will all die soon!!"

By this time, the Heavenly Dragon Triad had been forced to their last resort. The 5 Evolvers that they had saved as their last trump card were currently already deployed at the frontlines, and through their joint efforts, they were barely keeping the large Mutant Beasts at bay.

However, no matter how strong the Evolvers were, they had a limit to their Stamina and Spirit, and everyone present was extremely clear on the extreme situation they were in. Collapse was just a matter of time!!

Di Ya replied in an incensed manner: "What else can we do!! Hold on!! Go tell Ji Qing and the rest, they had better hang on! Once we make it past this crisis, I'll give them whatever they want back at Guilin City!!"

In the past, there were many Mutant Beast hordes that attacked the small town as well, but each time, the humans had made use of traps, fortifications and combat ability to retreat. This time, the difference of the attack was that it was launched by almost every single type of Mutant Beast horde out there. It wasn't just a single assault led by a Type 2 Mutant Beast, but rather, wave after wave

of attack, making it incredibly hard to defend against.

Di Ya was filled with dread facing this never ending Mutant Beast horde, and one of the Strength-based Evolver had already been dismembered by a Type 2 Mutant Beast and its horde. Di Ya was thus unwilling to go to the frontlines.

Song Xin suggested: "Chief!! Let's retreat!! If we continue like this, the elites of the Heavenly Dragon Triad will perish here."

Di Ya frowned, and his heart raced, but he still hesitated: "If we just retreat like this! When we go back to Guilin City, we will become the enemy of the rest of the triads!!"

Song Xin laughed coldly: "Chief. Today, we have all seen the might of the Mutant Beast horde. This is definitely not something the human race can defend against! If the 3,000 people inside the town were to defend with all their lives, after tonight, no one will be left alive! We need to break away now and leave this place of death."

Song Xin laughed evilly and analyzed for Di Ya: "If there were people who miraculously survived, they must have abandoned their own posts as well. Like this, they have no right to point at us. If they all died, that's even better! The 3 Great Triads have plenty of experts here, but our Heavenly Dragon Triad would have suffered the least, then the entire Guilin City would be ours!"

Di Ya was still hesitating: "There are so many Mutant Beasts outside now, if we charge out, it will still be suicide!"

By this time, there were countless Mutant Beasts gathered outside the town, going out now was guaranteed death. The inside of the town was instead safer.

Song Xin continued to provide diabolical suggestions: "We can retreat towards the town first! Let the Mutant Beasts breach in, since there are so many experts in town, they can distract them. We can then make use of the chance and escape!!"

Song Xin had an impassioned look as he looked at Di Ya and said: "Chief!! Let's escape! If not now, we won't have the chance anymore!!"

At this time, one of the members came up to Di Ya with a look of fear and shock as he reported: "Chief!! Luo Da Huan... Elder Luo has died in battle!!"

Luo Da Huan was a Strength-based Evolver under Di Ya's command, and his combat strength was astonishing. When he heard the news of Luo Da Huan's death, Di Ya came to a decision: "Alright! Convey my orders!! All members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad are to follow me back to town!!"

The moment Di Ya gave that order, the frontline collapsed, as the members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad made their way to town in a frenzy.

Without the human experts to block them, the Mutant Beasts poured into town like water from a broken dam, as they began to gobble up the humans that they saw.

Di Ya brought the experts of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and escaped for their post, causing a hole in the defence of the small town, and numerous Mutant Beasts began pouring into town, engaging the experts inside the town in combat.

Human nature was selfish, and after Di Ya brought his triad to retreat, many of the other experts who were fighting bitterly also decided to throw in the towel, as they made their way back towards the town, before they were surrounded and killed.

Without the clear command of a single leader, the human side was starting to collapse, and in the entire town, there were many experts trying to escape. They were still entangled with the Mutant Beasts, but without a clear command, they lacked the courage to survive and fight. Therefore, many decided to turn and run, not turning back. Even the Heavenly Dragon Triad had given up, the smaller lone fighters were even more unwilling to fight to the

death.

"What? The Heavenly Dragon Triad had retreated!!! Are you sure?!" Over at the Green Bamboo Triad's camp, Gao Ming Hao's expression was extremely unsightly, and he could not care about his image anymore as he shouted in disbelief.

The gang member replied immediately: "Yes! Boss!! I saw everyone from the Heavenly Dragon Triad escaping towards the town after abandoning their post!!"

Gao Ming Hao gritted his teeth, as he slammed the table, causing it to split into pieces: "Di Ya, you insufferable bastard!!"

The Green Bamboo Triad and Heavenly Dragon Triad were defending locations that were close to each other, and with the retreat of the Heavenly Dragon Triad, the Green Bamboo Triad would be at the highest risk. If they didn't retreat, they would definitely face a pincer assault from the Mutant Beast horde.

"What do we do, Chief?" The upper echelon of the Green Bamboo Triad looked towards Gao Ming Hao and asked nervously.

This concerned the life and death of the entire top brass of the Green Bamboo Triad, if they were not careful, the core power of the Green Bamboo Triad would fall here.

Gao Ming Hao's brains worked at top speed, as he turned his gaze towards Hu Yi, his gaze narrowing: "Hu Yi! I order you and Liu Lie to take 20 men and go take over Chu Ming He and the rest! As long as you can stall for 20 minutes, you're free to disperse after that! If we get through tonight, once we're back at Guilin City, I'll reward you guys accordingly!"

Hu Yi heard those words, and a strange glint flashed across his eyes, he immediately stared back at Gao Ming Hao, pondering silently and only replying after 5 seconds: "Yes! Boss!!"

After which, Hu Yi and his trusted aide Liu Lie headed out, their shoulders squared. Without ample support, bringing 20 people to

defend the area was a suicide mission.

Gao Ming Hao watched the leaving silhouettes of Hu Yi and Liu Lie, before his eyes flashed and he ordered solemnly: "My orders! All members of the Green Bamboo Triad are to immediately withdraw towards the town!"

"Yes! Boss!!"

Under the command of Gao Ming Hao, all the members of the Green Bamboo Triad immediately abandoned their posts and retreated towards the town.

As Liu Lie walked beside Hu Yi, he felt something amiss: "Hu Yi! Where're you going? This isn't the frontlines!"

Hu Yi's eyes flashed with pain, as he slowly replied: "You're right! I'm not going to the front lines! I'm going to join my big bro Yue Zhong! All of you listen up, resisting at the frontlines for 20 minutes is a death sentence! Gao Ming Hao is obviously abandoning us, to buy some time for their retreat! To think that I was loyal to him, only for such an end, it truly chills the heart."

Hu Yi looked at his subordinates and continued solemnly: Brothers! You have followed me for so long. I won't make things difficult for you, whoever wants to stay loyal to the Green Bamboo Triad and Gao Ming Hao can go to fight. You can go to the frontlines to your death. I will not force you! Those who want to follow me to join my big bro Yue Zhong, follow me!"

These 20 members had all antagonized the upper echelons of the Green Bamboo Triad at some point. This time, the fact that Gao Ming Hao had sent them out was precisely to get rid of them, and no one had spoken up for them.

A burly looking man with decent features, and an enhancement level of 27 walked up to Hu Yi and declared: "Hu Yi!! Gao Ming Hao he doesn't want to die, we likewise, don't wish for our deaths!! Since he had cut us off so decisively, we can't be blamed! I, Gao Fei,

am following you!!"

"That's right!! That's right!"

"....."

Everybody all hollered their agreement. No one wanted to die in this god-forsaken place.

"Then, Liu Lie!! Take care!!" Hu Yi turned towards Liu Lie, and spoke a single sentence, before turning and leading his men towards Yue Zhong's site.

Liu Lie struggled for just a moment, before chasing up: "Wait!! I'll come with you guys!!"

The entire party killed the Mutant Beasts that got in their path as they made their way towards Yue Zhong's site. By the time they reached there, they had killed over dozens of Mutant Beasts.

By then, Hu Yi's body was covered in blood as he came to Yue Zhong's side and spoke with excitement: "Bro!! I'm here!!"

Yue Zhong eyed him and immediately asked: "Little Leopard! How come it's you! What happened?"

Yue Zhong knew that this brother of his was extremely loyal, even when Yue Zhong had established the Green Stone Triad which went on to become one of the 4 Great Triads, Hu Yi had not immediately come to throw his lot with him, instead remaining at Green Bamboo Triad to contribute merits for Gao Ming Hao. Now that Hu Yi had brought his men here, there must have been a problem.

Hu Yi looked towards Yue Zhong and replied: "Bro! Gao Ming Hao sent us to our deaths, I wasn't willing, so I brought my men here. The Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad have both retreated! Now there's only you left on the outskirts of town! Bro, what are your plans?"

Yue Zhong pondered, as his eyes flashed with a resolute glint:

"Guard here!! I will not retreat!!"

Liu Lie could not help but ask: "But why? Boss Yue! Both the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad have retreated! The Mutant Beast horde will come here shortly. Staying here will only mean death!!"

Yue Zhong replied: "We have constructed enough fortifications to hold the weaker ones off! If we go back to the town, the defences there are weak and non-existent! Going there would mean certain death! Little Leopard, go bring men and join the frontlines. You'll be tasked with handling the large-types, is that ok? Any other problems, leave it to me to handle!"

Hu Yi chuckled: "Hehheh! Bro!! Leave the big Mutant Beasts to me then! Brothers! Onwards!"

Chapter 415: Yue Zhong's Combat Strength!

In the hunt this time, Yue Zhong had brought along 300 of his subordinates, and amongst them, the majority were just fresh ordinary humans who had received a little training.

While they were unable to defend against the assaults of the Mutant Beasts, they could construct defences, fortifications and lay traps. It was because of their help, that Yue Zhong managed to lay his entire site with various fortifications, killing a number of the lower level invading Mutant Beasts.

These simple constructs had sharp steel beams, and barriers with spikes, stacked sandbags, and various other little traps. While they were ineffective against the Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar, to the ordinary Mutant Beasts, these simple traps could harm them fatally, to the point of taking their lives.

Many of the Mutant Mountain Rats would smash into sharp steel beams, as they struggled painfully. When some of the quicker Mutant Civets stepped on the jagged wires with force, it would cause their paws to be directly sliced off. With the numerous sandbags acting as blockades for the important channels, only one or 2 Mutant Beasts would be able to enter at any one time.

With the aid of these fortifications, Yue Zhong's side could easily slaughter the Mutant Beasts under the command of the various experts, withstanding the seemingly endless assault of Mutant Beasts.

It was just that these fortifications were effective against the lower level Mutant Beasts, against the bigger Mutant Beasts, it was a bit of a stretch. A simple charge of a Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar could destroy the entire defence!

The large-type Mutant Beasts were the enemies and counter to these simple fortifications, and just a herd of them could cause mayhem and destruction. Without the cover of the defences, his

subordinates would find it infinitely harder to defend against the Mutant Beast horde.

At this moment, in front of Yue Zhong's site, a large number of the Mutant Civets had suddenly dispersed, giving way to 20 Mutant Pangolins with thick armors that were charging over.

"Fire!!" Larman looked at the 20 Mutant Pangolins and bellowed angrily.

The 10 heavy machine guns proceeded to unleash a fiery carnage, as the bullets that could pierce tanks only served to bounce off the armor of the Mutant Pangolins.

Seeing this, everyone's faces turned white.

Right at this time, Hu Yi roared out as well as he leapt forwards, with the Black Tooth Blade that Yue Zhong handed to him, charging towards the Mutant Pangolins as he shouted: "Leave them to me!!"

"Die!! Die!! Haha!" Hu Yi charged into the midst of the 20 Mutant Pangolins, as he laughed out maniacally, his blade flashing about. The 20 Mutant Pangolins were instantly sliced apart, blood flowing.

After taking care of those Mutant Pangolins, Hu Yi immediately retreated back behind the defences. He had to conserve his Stamina, and leaving the smaller and weaker types to the rest was the best choice.

"Bai Xiaosheng!!" Yue Zhong saw that things had come under control, and immediately summoned Bai Xiaosheng.

"What's the matter Boss?" Bai Xiaosheng came with a bored expression as he asked. As one of the top experts under Yue Zhong, he hadn't taken any action yet. Seeing the soldiers on the frontline giving their all, his heart was ignited and he was getting restless.

As an Agility-based Evolver, there were still differences in power. Bai Xiaosheng's combat strength was naturally stronger than Cai

Mingliang by a huge margin. If they were to fight, Bai Xiaosheng could kill Cai Mingliang easily.

Yue Zhong ordered solemnly: "Go into town now, any scattered lone Enhancer or those who are running away, get them to rely on us! Tell them to join us!"

Bai Xiaosheng guffawed and dashed away in a flash, not before saying: "Making use of the opportunity to swallow the other powers!! Boss you sure are crafty!! Haha! But I like that! I'm going!!"

Yue Zhong gazed at Bai Xiaosheng leaving, before he turned his attention towards the newly gathered 20+ Black-Scaled Ferocious Boars making their way over under the lead of the Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar.

It was that same Type 2 Ferocious Black-Scaled Boar that had destroyed the defences of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and caused them to be routed. If it wasn't for the Type 2 Ferocious Black-Scaled Boar, the Heavenly Dragon Triad would definitely have been able to hold out longer.

Yue Zhong looked at that tank-like beast and its followers, took a deep breath, his eyes showing a resolute glint, and began charging forwards towards them with White Bones by his side. He was not the weak Yue Zhong like he was back then, and he had already Evolved to a level where he could definitely take them. This fight, he would definitely win.

White Bones leapt over Yue Zhong, suddenly exploding out with a bone blade when it was in front of the herd of Mutant Black-Scaled Ferocious Boars. It easily crossed one of the Mutant Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar, slicing it in two as it passed by.

Currently, White Bones' Sharpening ability had caused the bone blades from its body to become extremely sharp, adding on to evolving into a Dark Skeleton, and the skill further enhanced +1, the sheer piercing power of the blades were truly terrifying. It

could easily cause a high-level Mutant Beast like the Mutant Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar to be sliced to death. Even a Type 2 Mutant Beast with a slightly lower defence would not be able to withstand a single slash from White Bones.

White Bones was like a tyrannical killing machine. Its bone blades extended in all directions, and the 20 Mutant Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar could only be sliced into pieces of bloody meat when faced against it. It was exhibiting its fearsome might after having evolved into the Dark Skeleton.

When the Type 2 Black-Scaled Mutant Boar saw its little brothers being slaughtered, it immediately bellowed in anger, and a strong, oppressive soundwave was released in all directions.

Under that destructive soundwave attack, Yue Zhong's body slightly shuddered, it could be said that the soundwave attack did cause him some discomfort, otherwise he was fine. After all, he was a dual-attribute Evolver, possessing the Spirit and Endurance growth attributes! His body was truly sturdy beyond belief, even a bullet would not be able to harm him overmuch.

The Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar was just recovering from its sound wave attack, when Yue Zhong condensed a Devil Flame Spear in his hands after expending 40 points of Spirit and 10 points of Stamina.

"Burn for me!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he tossed it out with all his strength. The sharp Devil Flame Spear whistled through the air, and buried deep in between the brows of the Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar.

The terrifying might of the Devil Flame Spear immediately exploded out, piercing deeply into the armor, and penetrating the brain, before instantly enveloping the entire head cavity, incinerating the contents.

"Congratulations on reaching Level 54, you have gained 2 points of attributes to be allocated!"

"Congratulations on reaching Level 55, you have gained 2 points of attributes to be allocated!"

Following the 2 repeated sounds of notification, the mountain-like Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar toppled over, dropping a skill book and a hundred Survivor Coins.

Yue Zhong chose to allocate all 4 points into Agility, before walking over to pick up the items.

Agility was extremely important to a warrior, it could allow the person to react instantly. If the Agility wasn't strong enough, then there would be a lack of capability to deal with instantaneous changes. A high Agility was also needed to deal with any decently skilled Agility-based Evolver, otherwise, he could be easily taken down by said Agility-based Evolver.

"Level 4 Skill Book 2nd Order Strength Consolidation! Learning this skill will permanently increase Strength by 50. Requires Strength Consolidation to be enhanced thrice."

With the death of the Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar, the remaining 40 some Mutant Black-Scaled Ferocious Boars scattered around the town began to escape rapidly, some of them even exploding in anger! The finished swallowing a number of the weaker Mutant Beasts around, before they ran towards the Mountain Range.

All of a sudden, a dark shadow shattered a number of glass shards as it pounced towards Yue Zhong with a speed that exceeded Bai Xiaosheng.

On the battlefield, Yue Zhong was extremely perceptive, and the moment the dark shadow moved, he had felt it, and retreated immediately, while keeping an eye on the attacker's movement. It was a Type 2 Leopard Cat, similar in nature to Lightning.

Yue Zhong had retreated quickly, but the speed of the Type 2 Leopard Cat was faster, in just a short breath, it managed to

pounce on Yue Zhong, knocking him to the ground, opening its jaws in an attempt to bite down on Yue Zhong's head.

At this moment, a sharp bone spike pierced the Type 2 Leopard Cat from the side, nailing it to the ground.

Following that, another bone spike shot out almost instantaneously, piercing the body of the Type 2 Leopard Cat.

Yue Zhong immediately took out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade and slashed the head of the Type 2 Leopard Cat viciously, immediately splitting it open. A large orb of experience floated into his body, along with huge amounts of scorching blood splattering on him, but it wasn't enough to level up.

The Type 2 Leopard Cat dropped a Level 3 Skill Agility Consolidation and 100 Survivor Coins.

"It's a Good chance!!" After killing the Type 2 Mutant Leopard Cat in a single slash, his mind raced, and he immediately emitted a long howl towards the skies.

In a forest outside of the town, there was a roar of reply, filled with threatening might.

Under the threat of that furious roar, the remaining 500+ Mutant Leopard Cats inside the town immediately retreated towards the forest.

Following the new source of strength was the fundamental law of the Mutant Beasts.

Seeing the retreat of the Mutant Leopard Cats, Yue Zhong's heart was relieved. After all, Lightning, who was hidden in the forest, was one of Yue Zhong's hidden trump cards. Now, with the addition of another 500+ Mutant Leopard Cats coming under Lightning's command, the strength of his hand had increased yet again.

Right at this time, there was a horrifying howl that resounded, sounding neither like a tiger or leopard. The sound was so

terrifying, as though it was a sound not possible on this earth. Everyone who heard it immediately trembled, their hearts filled with an uneasy premonition.

Chapter 416: Continuous Level Up!

Ever since Yue Zhong had subdued Lightning, he had developed a bond with Lightning, and when that howl had sounded, he could feel the fear rising from Lightning.

Yue Zhong's heart immediately fell, and could guess the true nature of the beast: "That was definitely at least a Type 3 Mutant Beast!!"

The 4 Great Triads had at first intended to bring men to clear up the smaller Mutant Beasts, before slowly hunting the Type 3 Mutant Beast. However, they did not expect the Type 3 Mutant Beast they thought was their prey to make a move first! This Mutant beast was obviously smart enough to control the large portion of the Mutant Hordes in the mountain range to launch an assault, planning even, by sending the Type 2's to battle, causing almost the entire town of humans to be killed.

A small poisonous snake suddenly emerged from a dark corner, darting towards Yue Zhong's legs.

Yue Zhong's reaction was quick, and his foot immediately came down on the Mutant Poisonous Snake's body, squashing it directly with Strength.

"So you're attacking here now?" Yue Zhong looked towards the surroundings, and with his Night Vision, he could clearly see countless Mutant Snakes gathering around him, their levels of varying degrees, and there were even larger hordes of Mutant Snakes slithering towards his site.

"This won't do! I need to get Lightning to act! Otherwise, we'll lose!" Yue Zhong's mind spun and he quickly let out a sharp howl towards the skies.

Lightning, who had been hiding in the forest, received the order and replied with an angry howl of its own. It charged out, leading

its 600+ little brothers, as they raced towards Yue Zhong's location.

On the other side, White Bones was currently darting about, its bone blades flashing enchantingly. Within 10m of its body, all the Mutant Snakes were currently being slaughtered or nailed to the ground.

Countless Mutant Snakes of varying sizes were currently slithering towards Yue Zhong, and in the dark where moat couldn't see well, with countless snakes on the ground slithering about, it was a really skin-crawling scene.

The numerous snakes intended to seal Yue Zhong's route of escape, as they started to gather, and shot towards Yue Zhong with a lightning speed.

"Go to hell!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, and conjured his Devil Flame at the first moment, as a huge ball of his Devil Flame emitted outwards from him. It continued to spread to a distance of 20m, instantly turning all the Mutant Snakes into ash.

Right at this time, a 30m-long Mutant Python opened its jaws wide, shooting towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong pointed a finger at that giant Mutant Python, as a fire arrow shot out, piercing the jaws of the snake and exploding upon contact. It started to burn and in a few moments, it turned the entire head of the Mutant Python into mush.

With the ever increasing strength of Yue Zhong's Spirit, the Devil Flame in his hands had obviously become alot stronger and much more threatening. As of now, he had reached a level of control with the Devil Flame that was natural as flipping his hands.

After the death of the Mutant Python, another 10 green Mutant Snakes came out of a corner and darted towards Yue Zhong, but just as they entered the radius of his body, they were immediately burnt to crisp by the Devil Flame.

A large number of the Mutant Snakes started to pounce continuously towards Yue Zhong, using their own bodies to wear down Yue Zhong's Devil Flame armor.

Suddenly, 40 30m-long Mutant King Cobras appeared in all directions, opening their jaws and firing their innate ability, which was a dark poisonous spit, aiming at Yue Zhong!

Yue Zhong's expression fell, and increased the output of the Devil Flame around himself further. The black poison spit launched by those Mutant King Cobras landed on the Devil Flame and sizzled out in a dense poisonous cloud.

Yue Zhong then held his breath, before activating his Shadow Steps, and shot himself towards one of the Mutant King Cobras in a manner of seconds. The Devil Flame Sword in his hands danced, and the Level 43 Mutant Beast was immediately chopped in two by a single swing.

On the other side, White Bones was entangled with the Mutant Snake horde, as the dozens of sharp Bone Blades from its body sliced the heads off 10 of the Mutant King Cobras, sending them flying.

White Bones had just slaughtered a full 10 of the Mutant King Cobras, when a variant turned up, its length 40 metres, its body scales shining with a metallic luster, its jaws opened wide as it shot towards White Bones.

"Level 65 Mutant Beast: Type 2 Mutant King Cobra! It possesses immense strength and a dangerous venom!"

Yue Zhong shot a glance at the huge beast, and saw that White Bones had been bitten on the right leg by the Type 2 Mutant King Cobra.

When snakes launched an attack, their speed was the fastest then. Although White Bones possessed a speed that was 10 times that of humans, it could not dodge the attack of the Type 2 Mutant

King Cobra.

With a single bite of gargantuan strength, the sound of breaking bones resounded, White Bones' entire right leg had been ground into powder!

The fiery demonic eyes of White Bones flashed, as 2 sharp bone spikes appeared from its brows and directly pierced the eyes of the Type 2 Mutant King Cobra.

When the sharp bone spikes pierced the eyes of the Type 2 Mutant King Cobra, a large amount of blood and mucus spurted out from the wounds.

Using the bone spikes, White Bones supported itself and removed itself from the mouth of the Type 2 Mutant King Cobra, landing on the ground.

With its eyes blinded, the Type 2 Mutant King Cobra was thrashing about with pain, twisting its body and causing a number of the smaller Mutant snakes to be squashed to death.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong condensed another Devil Flame Spear in his hands and tossed it forcefully at the Type 2 Mutant King Cobra, piercing its head and exploding. The brains were instantly incinerated.

"Congratulations on achieving Level 56, you have gained 2 points of attribute to be allocated!"

Following the sound of notification, the Type 2 Mutant King Cobra slumped to the ground, dropping a green treasure box and 100 Survivor Coins.

Yue Zhong added the 2 points into his Agility, and went to open up the treasure box.

"Level 4 Treasure: Ring of Poison Fang. Upon equipping, Spirit + 10. It comes with a poison attack skill. When using the skill, you can imbue your melee weapon with a thorny venomous attack."

Yue Zhong instantly blinged himself up of course, and his Spirit was enhanced yet again. Now his spirit reached an incredibly terrifying level of 193 points!.

The power of the Devil Flame was dependent on Yue Zhong's Spirit, and with his Spirit increasing all the time, his Devil Flame would become even more powerful. It was due to his current Spirit that he had been able to casually execute 2 Type 2 Mutant Beasts. If it was someone else, even with the Devil Flame skill enhanced 3 times, they might not be able to kill a Type 2 Mutant Beast so easily.

With the death of the Type 2 Mutant King Cobra, the Mutant King Cobras that were under its control began to disperse, escaping in all directions.

Right at this time, Lightning had arrived with its 600+ brothers, and under Its command, they began to pounce on and kill the remaining Mutant Snakes.

The Mutant Leopard Cats were considered agile Mutant Beasts, and their movements swift, adding on to the fact that the Mutant Snakes had lost their leadership, they became delicious food for the Mutant Leopard Cats.

Lightning had swallowed the Type 3 Mutant Beast nuclei that Yue Zhong had given it, as well as the numerous Type 2 Mutant Beast nuclei that Yue Zhong bought from the market, but it still had not evolved into a Type 3 Mutant Beast. However, its strength had increased a lot, its level reaching 67. The moment it entered the battlefield, it shot about like a spectre, and in a manner of seconds, it had killed 3 of the weaker Type 2 Mutant Snakes.

After killing those 3 Type 2 Mutant Snakes, the rest of the snake horde collapsed, as they began to slither away, and the huge gathering of snakes was almost instantly dispersed by half.

Yue Zhong darted about and killed a number of the enormous Mutant Snakes, when suddenly a green shadow leapt out from the

snakes, biting down on Yue Zhong's thigh viciously. Even his 115 points of Agility did not give him enough time to react.

"Level 60 Mutant Beast, Type 2 Mutant Green Snake! Possesses an uncanny speed, and a dangerous venom."

A sharp pain shot up from the bite, Yue Zhong's left leg bone had been shattered by that Type 2 Mutant Green Snake.

"Fuck!!" Yue Zhong bellowed in pain and activated his Gravity Manipulation, causing a few jins of gravity to weigh down on the Mutant Snake. He then swung his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade, immediately slicing the head of the Type 2 Mutant Green Snake off.

By all rights, with the powerful venom of that Type 2 Mutant Green Snake, Yue Zhong was faced with certain death. However, as luck would have it, the bite had went past the trousers, and although the clamping force was enough to break Yue Zhong's leg, it was not enough to pierce the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, hence, he wasn't poisoned, and managed to escape with his life intact.

"Congratulations on achieving level 57, you have gained 2 points of attributes to be allocated!"

The death of the Type 2 Mutant Green Snake gave rise to another huge orb of experience to Yue Zhong, allowing him to promote another level yet again.

At the same time, the Type 2 Mutant Green Snake dropped a skill book and 100 Survivor Coins.

Yue Zhong directly enhanced his Agility, before picking up the skill book to take a glance.

"Level 3 Skill Book: Feline Transformation! After learning this skill, one can turn into a cat person. 6 Attributes would gain a huge increase, compared to the other beast-type transformations, Agility would be enhanced more, whereas Strength and Endurance are enhanced lesser."

The body of the Mutant Green Snake was small, and they were numerous, and was one of the main forces of the snake horde. With the death of the Type 2 Mutant Green Snake, the rest of the green snakes started to disperse, and the snake horde again was decreased by half.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief. Although the Mutant Green Snakes were small, they were numerous, and they were as threatening as any large Mutant Snake, now with their retreat, the pressure on Yue Zhong was lessened yet again.

With the situation somewhat more under control, Yue Zhong started to limp back towards his camp.

Chapter 417: Absorbing the Scattered Troops!

"Heal me!"

The moment Yue Zhong went back to his camp, he immediately summoned Mu Xiang Ling.

With the Level 4 Regeneration ability, as long as Yue Zhong wasn't forced to a point where it was a fatal injury, he could recover extremely quickly. The leg bone that was broken by the bite from the Type 2 Mutant Green Snake would be healed within a day, based on his current Vitality. However, in such a dangerous situation where anything can happen on the battlefield, moving with a broken leg bone was affecting Yue Zhong's combat ability.

Mu Xiang Ling's eyes flashed with concern, as she pressed lightly on Yue Zhong's wound with both hands, activating her [Treatment of Bone Injuries] ability, and a white light entered Yue Zhong's leg. "En!! Yue Zhong-gege, please be careful! I can only heal you once for today!"

With the help of the skill, Yue Zhong's left leg began to heal quickly, and within a minute, the broken bone had finished repairing.

Yue Zhong surveyed his surroundings, and saw that with the combined efforts of his subordinates, as well as the constant repair of the fortifications, they had managed to repel the never ending waves of Mutant Beasts.

It was also mainly due to Yue Zhong hunting a number of the Type 2 Mutant Beasts, causing the hordes to be without leaders, therefore dispersing. Adding on the fact that Lightning had joined in the fray with its little brothers, the defence was sustained.

Even so, the current situation was extremely perilous. Yue Zhong had only 10 subordinates who were above Level 30, while the rest

of the 200-over were mainly constructing fortifications, their enhancement levels not high. They had no combat skills, and their fighting experience was lacking.

Getting those with no skills and experience to focus on the fortifications was still manageable. If they were sent to face any Mutant Beasts, they would definitely lose their lives. They were not like Xin Jiarou, who was well equipped and was an Evolver to boot. These were just ordinary humans, and getting them to challenge Mutant Beasts that were more ferocious than them was out of the question.

Yue Zhong glanced at Ning Yu Xin standing beside him, and threw a number of those Level 3 Skill Books to her, at the same time handing her a set of system equipment, saying: "Learn them. After that, put on these!"

Ning Yu Xin's performance so far was considered decent, and at this critical juncture, it was better to have an additional subordinate with strength. Yue Zhong had only a handful of people he trusted, Ning Yu Xin could barely be counted as one of them.

Ning Yu Xin received the few books and the set of equipment, and her eyes immediately brightened up, as she smiled at Yue Zhong: "Thank you!"

With a set of decent equipment, and powerful skills, one could go through a total transformation, and gain levels to challenge the wilderness. Xin Jia Rou had been able to take on higher level Mutant Beasts because she been supplied with equipment from Yue Zhong.

Mu Xiang Ling eyed the few books that Ning Yu Xin obtained from Yue Zhong, and could not help herself as she grabbed Yue Zhong's arms and whined: "Gege! You're biased!! Xiang Ling wants them too!"

Yue Zhong ruffled her hair as he consoled her: "It's not the time now! Let's see how it goes in the future!"

"En!" Mu Xiang Ling also just pouted a little, but did not hold it against Yue Zhong.

After healing his wounds, Yue Zhong pulled out his Divine Spring Tea, and took a sip. Although the Divine Spring Tea could not enhance Yue Zhong's Spirit further, it could quicken his recovery speed. In the current circumstances, regaining his Spirit was definitely important.

In the town, as the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad had abandoned their posts, there were numerous Mutant Beasts prowling about.

A Level 45 Violent Ape had just grabbed an escaping Enhancer and directly swung him harshly against the floor, smashing his brains.

6 Mutant Civets pounced on one Enhancer and directly ripped his throat off, as they began to chomp on his corpse.

A number of Mutant Lizards came crawling across the various buildings, pouncing as they chased after the human Enhancers, directly ripping them apart!

A certain burly man who was wielding a huge mace that was way above hundreds of jin was currently swinging it about like a tornado, defending 7 other people. As long as any of the Mutant Beasts were unfortunate to get caught by his mace, their bodies would immediately explode from the force of the impact, and knocked back.

This valiant man was the leader of a small triad called the Great God Triad in Guilin City. His name was Zheng Tu and he was a Strength-based Evolver, brave and overbearing in his combat ability,

Zheng Tu was slaughtering the Mutant Beasts as he cursed out loud: "Fuck Di Ya and all his ancestors!! If this daddy can make it back to Guilin City alive, I will fucking slaughter the whole lot of

the entire Heavenly Dragon Triad!!"

Due to Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad's betrayal, numerous Mutant Beasts had made it past their areas, causing chaos amongst the rest. 8 of Zheng Tu's subordinates had also lost their lives.

Currently, only Zheng Tu and his 7 other good brothers were alive, and he was filled with hatred and fury towards the 2 Great Triads.

One of his subordinates, whose entire body was covered in blood and had suffered a number of broken bones, looked at Zheng Tu as he gasped out in misery: "Chief, you should escape!! Don't care about us! We won't make it! If this goes on, you will die here as well!!"

Zheng Tu bellowed back coarsely: "Enough with the nonsense!! Is this daddy the type of person who abandons his brothers?"

Zheng Tu had been a butcher prior to the apocalypse. When it happened, he had awakened as an Evolver and set up his Great God Triad with a number of brothers. Although the triad was small, the camaraderie between all the brothers were especially great. Zheng Tu wasn't someone particularly ambitious as well, and he had established the Great God Triad in a bid to protect himself, as well as his brothers, and he treated them all very well.

Hearing those words of Zheng Tu, 2 of the men sighed, as they took up their Replica Tang Swords, and began to slaughter the Mutant Beasts that had surrounded them, helping to alleviate some of the pressure on Zheng Tu.

Right at this moment, a number of Mutant Cows had formed a herd, and were rampaging over. Seeing those Mutant Cows in the middle of their charge, the 7 of them were filled with a sense of despair: "We're finished!!"

Although Zheng Tu was obscenely strong, to defend against the

charge of those Mutant Cows, it was definitely not feasible. Yet if he decide to dodge, then the 4 injured brothers behind him would definitely perish.

Right at this time, a vigorous body flitted past the herd of Mutant Cows, as a blade flashed about, and the heads of the Mutant Cows were instantly sliced apart. Their lifeless bodies slumped to the ground.

Zheng Tu saw the dead Mutant Cows and his heart went cold: "Expert!!"

The blade continued to dance about, and in just a few breaths, the numerous Mutant Cows were killed off entirely, and the shadow revealed himself in front of Zheng Tu. It was Bai Xiao Sheng.

Zheng Tu gazed at Bai Xiao Sheng, and offered his solemn thanks: "This brother!! Many thanks! I, Zheng Tu, will never forget your grace!!"

Bai Xiao Sheng gazed at the small group and replied mildly: "No thanks needed! I'm Bai Xiao Sheng from the Green Stone Triad! I was assigned by my boss to come gather the experts in the town. You're called Zheng Tu right! Bring your brothers to the Green Stone Triad's post! There's still hope for your brothers there. Otherwise, they'll definitely die! I'm going to get other people, smell ya later!"

After which, Bai Xiao Sheng went off, heading further into town. If there were no women for him to spend his energy on, everything else that Bai Xiao Sheng did was swift and curt. He was truly suitable to be a powerful expert.

One of the soldiers hesitated as he asked Zheng Tu: "What shall we do, Chief? Are we going to go join Yue Zhong?"

Zheng Tu did not hesitate, as he swung down his mace, saying with determination: "Go!! Of course we're going! Even if Yue

Zhong wants our Great God Triad, it isn't an issue, as long as everyone of us stay alive, that's more than enough!"

Zheng Tu had swiftly made his decision and immediately brought his brothers towards the direction of Yue Zhong's Green Stone Triad.

When Bai Xiao Sheng entered the town, he continually saved various Enhancers, and advised them to gather at Green Stone Triad's location.

When those Enhancers who were running around like headless chickens heard that Yue Zhong and the Green Stone Triad were still holding the fort, they began killing their way towards them.

There were a total of 3,000 Enhancers who had decent combat strength and were experts in their own right, but without a facilitator, a lone person's strength could not possibly match up against the Mutant Beast horde. If Yue Zhong was to fight the Mutant Beasts himself, he would also not be able to hold on for long.

When those experts began to pour into Yue Zhong's site, he organized them, setting the injured and those who had expended their Stamina to rest temporarily, while those who still had fight left in them were deployed to the frontlines to face the Mutant Beasts.

With the participation of those experts, under Yue Zhong's command, the battle became more controlled. Some of the experts with the [Ground Manipulation] skill caused a few earthen walls to be erected, blocking the paths of the numerous smaller Mutant Beasts. Those with control of ice blanketed parts of the surrounding area with ice, which affected the agile-type Mutant Beasts, leaving them vulnerable and open to slaughter.

While commanding them, Yue Zhong focused on changing and maintaining the terrain. The other experts had done it differently, trying to make use of the skills to kill the monsters. Any large

Mutant Beasts that could threaten the terrain around the site were disposed of by Hu Yi and a small team of Evolvers. The smaller Mutant Beasts were not strong enough to affect the grounds. The once seemingly endless horde were finally beginning to be held off under Yue Zhong's command of the experts, as well as the strengthening of the defences.

Just when Yue Zhong was about to take a breather, Ying Kaishan came to Yue Zhong with a strange look on his face: "Boss!!! The Scarlet Phoenix Triad had just arrived!!"

When Yue Zhong heard that, he frowned, "They're here?"

Of the 4 Great Triads in Guilin City, the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad had chosen to abandon their posts and retreated into town.

Now that the Scarlet Phoenix Triad had joined his side, Yue Zhong wasn't sure if it was going to be a good or bad thing. After all, the Scarlet Phoenix Triad was still one of the big 4s, and had the qualifications to vie for leadership.

Yue Zhong mulled for a while, before heading to the direction: "Let's go! Bring me to see Ding Lei!"

Yue Zhong came to the place they were at, and saw a hundred of the Scarlet Phoenix members, currently all of them were covered in fresh blood, many of them with heavy wounds. They were gasping for breath, and looked extremely miserable.

The Scarlet Phoenix had brought 200-over members of their core group on this hunt, but even before the Type 3 Mutant Beast had made its appearance, they had lost over a hundred of their sisters, their losses unbearable.

Their preparations weren't as comprehensive as Yue Zhong, and they didn't have the aid of a Type 2 Mutant Beast like Yue Zhong had with Lightning and its little brothers. When the Heavenly Dragon Triad and the Green Bamboo gang had abandoned their

post, the Scarlet Phoenix Triad were swamped from all directions, and after a long battle, they were only left with a hundred of their members. The rest had died in battle.

Ding Lei walked up to Yue Zhong and immediately said: "Yue Zhong! The Scarlet Phoenix Triad is willing to listen to your command! However, please let my sisters rest a while!! I hope the injured can get treatment!"

Yue Zhong saw the Ding Lei was straightforward, and he immediately nodded and gave an order: "Good! Chief Ding, please bring some of your troops to support the frontlines, to let them rest!"

"Sisters! Come with me!" Ding Lei glanced at Yue Zhong once, before calling out to 30 of her female experts.

Very quickly, Ding Lei brought her subordinates to the frontlines, as they tagged out the exhausted soldiers.

In a part of the town, as most of the Enhancers had congregated at Yue Zhong's site, a large number of Mutant Beasts were currently circling the Heavenly Dragon Triad, slaughtering them by the numbers.

"Ah!!" A soldier of the Heavenly Dragon Triad bellowed, as he slashed a Mutant Monkey with a blade. In the next moment, a Mutant Violent Ape leapt out and viciously pummeled that same soldier, causing his head to explode.

A Mutant Civet had pounced on the body of another Heavenly Dragon Triad member, crushing his windpipe in between its jaws and sharp teeth. As its teeth sank in and fresh blood splattered onto the Mutant Civet, it began to obtain an even more horrifying look.

"What do we do? Song Xin!!" Di Ya saw his subordinates dying one by one as he questioned in exasperation.

Song Xin surveyed the surroundings, as he lowered his voice and

told Di Ya: "Boss! With the situation now, retreat is the only option! As long as you're still alive, we can still make a comeback!! We should quickly leave now!"

Di Ya's face turned grim: "What? You want me to leave the brothers behind and leave on my own?"

Song Xin made his point passionately: "Boss! If you don't leave now! There won't be a chance later on! You are the chief of our Heavenly Dragon Triad! Without you, the Heavenly Dragon Triad is nothing!! The rest can die but you can't die!! For the sake of the Heavenly Dragon Triad, you must live on!!"

Chapter 418: The Warriors come to Submit!

Di Ya's eyes flashed with agony, as he patted Song Xin's shoulder: "Fine!! For the Heavenly Dragon Triad!! I can only retreat with shame!! Even in troubled times, the loyal subject still stands by his king. Song Xin, I will never forget your loyalty. Upon returning to Guilin City, I will confer upon you the title of an Elder!!"

Song Xin's expression was one of delight: "Thanks Boss!!"

Di Ya glanced at the members of his Heavenly Dragon Triad who were fighting with their lives on the line, and he abandoned them as he charged towards a corner of the Mutant Beast horde.

For the escape this time, Di Ya finally exhibited his true prowess befitting of his status as chief of the Heavenly Dragon Triad. There were six pure steel circular sawtooths floating about him, and as long as any Mutant Beast got close to him, they would immediately be sliced and diced by those serrated blades.

The few trusted aides by Di Ya's side also unleashed all their strongest techniques and abilities to assault the Mutant Beast horde.

All of a sudden, a huge shadow appeared behind the number of experts, and a huge coarse tongue swept by, dragging one of the trusted aides into its mouth.

Di Ya glanced at the huge beast, and his face fell. He turned around and pushed his speed to the limit, quickly disappearing into a patch of forest.

That huge beast did not stop jumping about, its tongue continuously sweeping those unfortunate Heavenly Dragon experts into its mouth as it gobbled them up.

Other than a few experts who managed to escape, the rest were swallowed entirely by that extremely huge beast.

After the beast had swallowed them, it seemed to have no

interest towards Di Ya and the rest who escaped, as it made its way towards the town.

"The Chief has escaped!!"

"Damn it! Di Ya that bastard, he actually abandoned us!!"

"I knew he was unreliable! Fucker!!"

"....."

Quite rapidly, the news that Di Ya had brought a number of his trusted aides to escape was made known to the rest of the Heavenly Dragon Triad members, and they were immediately filled with fury and anger as they cursed out loud.

The remaining 4 Evolvers had swiftly gathered to discuss their options. When they had retreated into the town earlier, one of them had died surrounded by Mutant Beasts, and they were the only 4 Evolvers left of the Heavenly Dragon Triad.

One of the man, who was skinny and had fairly dark skin, with hands full of calluses looked at another who had decent features, and looked extremely outstanding, as he asked: "What do we do? Xia Ming Da!"

Xia Ming Da's eyes flashed with a chill light: "That Di Ya was callous, so he can't blame us for being heartless! Wretch! I want to bring the brothers to go join Yue Zhong! What about you guys?"

One of the Evolvers, Huang Heng, a 20-something young man with blond hair and multiple piercings, complete with the look of a hooligan, asked worriedly: "Yue Zhong!! What if he treats us like cannon fodder?"

The Heavenly Dragon Triad had constantly used the smaller triads as cannon fodder before, that was why Huang Heng was fearful.

One of them, Sun Ming, a middle-aged man who was bald and burly, his face bearing a white tiger tattoo replied solemnly: "I'm in

favour of joining Yue Zhong! We don't have too much time to consider! If we drag on, our brothers will die!"

The Heavenly Dragon had also brought over 300 people on the hunting mission this time, but after a cruel battle, they were only left with about 100 of them.

Sun Ming's words caused everyone to quieten down.

Sun Ming Da surveyed the surroundings and directly smacked the floor, saying: "Alright! Things are going to get worse! Let's go join Yue Zhong now!!"

The other 3 Evolvers had no further opinions, and they immediately brought the rest of their men as they slaughtered their way towards Yue Zhong's direction. After paying the price of another 20 lives of their subordinates, the remaining warriors finally arrived at Yue Zhong's area.

Xia Ming Da and the rest neared the site, and they immediately sought Yue Zhong out.

"Amazing! Di Ya truly cannot compare to Yue Zhong!" Along the way, Xia Ming Da saw the various fortifications Yue Zhong had set up, and seeing the closely packed defences that were efficient against the smaller Mutant Beasts, the whole lot of them marveled at Yue Zhong's tactics.

Upon catching sight of Yue Zhong, Xia Ming Da immediately stepped forwards: "Boss Yue! I'm Xia Ming Da from the Heavenly Dragon Triad! These here are Zhang Wei, Huang Heng and Sun Ming! We're all Evolvers, and have decided to join Boss Yue in these dire times, we hope that you can accept us!"

Yue Zhong chuckled and replied: "Good!! Since you have brought your troops here to join me, I won't neglect you guys as well. Since you were Elders back at the Heavenly Dragon Triad, you can become Hall Leaders, and your subordinate are still yours to lead!"

If it was Yue Zhong who brought his men to conquer the

opposing party, he would definitely bring reforms to the entire faction. However, since Xia Ming Da and the rest had taken the initiative to join him, he had to leave them with some benefits. Otherwise, who would be willing to throw their lot in with him. Furthermore, it was a situation that required careful treading, and if Yue Zhong insisted on reorganizing them, it would just cause more problems, and the men would be unwilling to fight with everything they've got. Hence, Yue Zhong decided to leave their troops alone.

"Many thanks Boss Yue!!" Hearing Yue Zhong's words, the 4 of them became reassured.

Yue Zhong then directly gave the order: "Xia Ming Da! Zhang Wei! You go and assist Larman to go swap out Ding Lei and the rest! Huang Heng, Sun Ming, go bring your men and rest first!"

"Yes! Boss Yue!!" Hearing that they were fighting alongside Yue Zhong's direct subordinate Larman, they were at ease, after all Yue Zhong could not possibly be sending his own men to be cannon fodder.

Yue Zhong's current group was like a gemstone that attracted the remaining Enhancers in town to join. Soon, the group had swelled to about a thousand in size.

With a decent-sized fighting force, and under his commands, the defence post was becoming steadier gradually, and there were signs of expansion.

With the flash of a blade, an agile Type 2 Mutant Civet's head was chopped off as it landed on the floor. With a 2m-long green greatsword Qing Yun Sword in her hands, she appeared beside the corpse and picked up the equipment and survivor coins.

"Go die!!! Haha!!" Hu Yi's eyes were bloodshot as he laughed out maniacally, using all his strength as he swung his sword about, causing the head of a Type 2 Red-Faced Monkey to be sent flying.

As expected, the moment the Type 2 Mutant Red-Faced Monkey died, the rest of the Red-Faced Monkeys fled.

A sharp bone spike shot out explosively, as it drilled at a rapid speed into the head of a Type 2 Vietnamese Golden Monkey, piercing its skull and nailing it to the ground, killing it instantly. White Bones then stepped forward and picked up the Skill Book and survivor coins dropped.

Amongst the Type 2 Mutant Beasts, there were stronger and weaker types. The Type 2 Mutant Vietnamese Golden Monkey and Type 2 Mutant Red-Faced monkey belonged to the weaker evolved species. As for actually dealing with these weaker Type 2 Mutant Beasts, there were currently enough strong Evolvers taking care of them.

Yue Zhong deployed his experts, and they began systematically taking out those weaker Type 2 Mutant Beasts. As they died one by one, their lesser variants would lose all order and start to flee. Some of them even began to attack the other Mutant Beasts the moment they lost their leaders.

Everyone present knew that it was a matter of life and death, and no one held back, utilizing all their skills to support the entire site from being overrun by the Mutant Beasts.

Under the joint efforts of all the experts, the different hordes of Mutant Beasts started to collapse, and bit by bit, they dispersed.

If the Mutant Beast horde that had assaulted the town was of only one race, then even if Yue Zhong and the rest gave their all to fight, they would not have a chance, as there would be too many Mutant Beasts.

However, because there were different types and races, with the deaths of their individual leaders, there were cracks appearing as some of the Mutant Beasts began to engage one another due to their innate nature. The number of beasts also gradually lessened.

Just as there were about 12 more Mutant Beasts groups to be dealt with, a sudden earth-shaking roar resounded from the distance, causing everyone to be shocked with fear.

"It's here!! The Type 3 Mutant Beast!!"

Hearing that tremendous roar that could stop the heart of an ordinary person, everyone felt their hearts sink, and they knew the main character of tonight had finally appeared.

Currently, after going through such a horrendous battle, the number of experts that Yue Zhong could still utilize only numbered about 900-plus. While he gave his all to ensure the lives and safety of them, there were still a hundred plus who perished at the jaws of the Mutant Beasts. The remaining experts had suffered large and heavy wounds, and their Spirit and Stamina were close to their limits.

As they watched, a gargantuan python-like beast appeared, its body over 90m-long, and 2m-wide. It had a long blue horn, and its sinuous body was completely covered with vibrant green scales. The beast had menacing vertical slits for eyes that gave the watching people a terrified feeling, like suddenly they had all become prey before its most natural predator. As it exited the forest, it was emitting a terrifying aura that coincidentally made it seem much more difficult to breathe.

"Level 80 Strange Beast, Type 3 Mutant: Green Jiao-Python."

From afar, Yue Zhong stared at the huge python, and it also stared back at him through its vertical eyes. From that exchange, it gave Yue Zhong an overwhelming sense of terror.

Yue Zhong's heart turned cold, as he had an extreme bad feeling: "What a terrifying Mutant Beast!!" *1

Beside the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, there were 4 other Mutant Beasts following closely. One of them was a black toad that was roughly 4 metres tall, its body covered with a layer of mucus,

and its skin dark-grey. Under the mucus, one could see the skin covered with various boils. Another beast was a huge ape, with a height of 5 metres, its body covered with flashing red hair, and its eyes radiating a bright red light. The third beast was another huge python that was slightly smaller than the Mutant Green Jiao-Python, and the last was a pangolin that was 3m-tall, 10m-long and its body was covered with a thick layer of scales.

*1 Ulamog: there used to be a particular free to play text adventure I played(It still exists and is great fun! www.sryth.com)

Where enemies are ranked by color as you battle. I remember a particular black ranked boss that is almost not ment to be killed : "must roll +18 to damage" D20. "This opponent could kill you by glancing at you rather hard" xD

Chapter 419: Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python!

"Level 65 Strange Beast: Type 2 Mutant Poisonous Toad!"

"Level 67 Strange Beast: Type 2 Mutant Violent Ape!"

"Level 63 Strange Beast: Type 2 Mutant Green Jiao-Python!"

"Level 66 Strange Beast: Type 2 Mutant Pangolin!"

Yue Zhong swept a look across all 4 Type 2 Mutant Beasts, and was immediately notified of their information in his mind.

Just as Yue Zhong was calculating how to deal with those Mutant Beasts, all of a sudden, the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python opened its huge jaws, and spat out a huge green mist, which shot towards Yue Zhong's location from 2km away.

"Damn it!!" Yue Zhong's expression changed immediately, as he waved his hands, causing a ferocious tornado of fire to shoot towards the poisonous cloud.

The green cloud of poisonous gas was enveloped entirely by the fire tornado from Yue Zhong, before they turned to vapour and disintegrated into the air.

"Pu!" In the vicinity of that vapour, 4 Enhancers of above Level 30 suddenly turned black in their faces, as they spat out a mouthful of fresh blood and twitched as they fell to the ground, before dying.

Just that little contact with the vapour had caused the instantaneous death of 4 Enhancers of above Level 30, it could be seen how terrifying that poison mist of the Type 3 Mutant Jiao-Python was. What was more terrifying was that, the mist had been sent from 2km away. This single ranged attack from that gargantuan Type 3 Mutant Beast was just too fearsome.

With that spit of poison mist as a signal, the remaining thousands of Mutant Beasts immediately launched into a frenzy assault on the

defence site.

"Fuck!!! Bai Xiao Sheng!! Hu Yi!! Ying Kai Shan!! Xia Ming Da!! Xin Jia Rou!! Follow me!!" Yue Zhong saw the numerous Mutant Beasts charging over, and his face fell before calling for the experts near him.

These 5 were the closest as well as strongest experts, and in fact, there was Ding Lei near him as well, but Yue Zhong had no way of issuing a command to her, after all, there was no master-servant contract between the 2 of them.

Following Yue Zhong's orders, the 5 who he called immediately fell in behind him as they rushed towards the front.

Xin Jia Rou's growth during the night had been the most rapid, after killing a large number of high-levelled Mutant Beasts, her enhancement level had reached 28. As an Agility-based Evolver, coupled with the fact that she was equipped with an entire set of system equipment, she had the strength of a Level 40 Enhancer.

In front of Yue Zhong, White Bones had shot forwards like an arrow, flitting about with its bone blades, slaughtering any Mutant Beasts that got in the way, clearing a path for Yue Zhong towards the Type 3 Mutant Jiao-Python.

On the other side, Yue Zhong had also commanded Lightning to bring its remaining 500+ little brothers to engage the rest of the Mutant Beasts. This was also a bid to keep the path clear for Yue Zhong.

While Yue Zhong's Spirit was truly high, if he were to have a battle of attrition against the Type 3 Mutant Beast, he would definitely lose and die, hence he needed to ensure that he had a straight shot for the kill before his Spirit is depleted entirely. Otherwise, the moment the Type 3 Mutant Jiao-Python shot that poison mist again, everyone would die without a chance.

Right at this time, the Type 3 Mutant Jiao-Python opened its jaws

again and shot out 2 consecutive globs of poison, one aimed at the town, the other aimed at the pack of Mutant Leopard Cats led by Lightning.

Yue Zhong's face fell, and he waved his hands, shooting a terrifying ball of fire at one of the poison globs, instantly incinerating it and turning the glob into vapour.

The other poisonous glob landed amongst the pack of Mutant Leopard Cats, and the poison mist spread out instantly, enveloping an area half the size of a football field.

Within the poisonous mist, 30 Mutant Leopard Cats and other Mutant Beasts that were tangled with them instantly melted into puddles. Wherever the mist spread, as long as one was touched by it, the Mutant Beast would immediately turn black before slumping to the ground as its body corroded away.

"Fucking dangerous poison!!" Yue Zhong's heart was truly unsettled, if that poison glob was to land on the town, it would immediately cause everyone to collapse. It was even more terrifying than any biological weapon known to man!

Peng!

Just as the Type 3 Mutant Jiao-Python was preparing to shoot another ball of poison, a shot rang out from the distance, as a sniper bullet landed explosively on the eye of the Type 3 Mutant Jiao-Python.

The sniper bullet that could punch a hole in an armored truck simply bounced off the layer of crystal eyelid over the Type 3 Mutant Jiao-Python's eyes.

While it did not actually injure the Type 3 Mutant Jiao-Python, it served to enrage it, and while the layer of crystal was not penetrated, it was dented inwards! As one could imagine, it did cause some pain. It turned to look towards a patch of the forest, and after locking on to the position of the sniper, it spat out a glob

of poison towards him.

When the poison glob landed, it immediately enveloped that patch of forest including that sniper, leaving only behind a sizzling mess and horrid stench.

In that little time, Yue Zhong and his team had already gotten within 200m of the Type 3 Mutant Jiao-Python.

The 4 Type 2 Mutant Beasts beside the Type 3 Mutant Jiao-Python immediately charged over.

Other than the 4 Type 2 Mutant Beasts, there were 2 other Type 2 Mutant Beasts also charging over, and they were a previously hidden Type 2 Tree Chameleon and a Type 2 Boa Constrictor.

The Type 2 Mutant Boa Constrictor was a 1m-long poisonous snake, with a speed that was just slightly slower than Lightning, which was way beyond most of its kind.

Just as the Type 2 Mutant Boa Constrictor got to within 50m of Yue Zhong, Xin Jia Rou activated her skill [Divine Speed]. Immediately, she burst forth with a speed that was above even Bai Xiao Sheng, brandishing a Dark Magic Blade. She disappeared to the naked eye, while with a flash and in a single slash of a blade, she had chopped the Type 2 Mutant Boa Constrictor in two.

However, after that single slash, Xin Jia Rou reappeared, her complexion pale and breathing ragged. Her Stamina was still lacking, and since the Divine Skill was maintained by the amount of Stamina she had, if she had no means of killing the enemy for sure, she would not be able to channel the skill for long. After killing that Type 2 Mutant Boa Constrictor, Xin Jia Rou had leapt to Level 31, entering the stages of most experts.

The Mutant Tree Chameleon had just gotten close to White Bones, when it was met with a sharp bone spike that exploded out from White Bones' body, piercing its brain before it started rotating rapidly, turning the brain into mush.

The Type 2 Mutant Poisonous Toad could feel that Yue Zhong's party was not going to be easy to handle, and had opened its mouth at the first instant, shooting a huge ball of mucus to envelope them.

It was the innate ability of the Type 2 Mutant Poisonous Toad, and it possessed properties that could paralyze humans. The moment a person was caught in it, they would faint at the first instant. It was a Type 2 Mutant Beast that few could stand up against.

"Boss! I'll deal with this fellow!!" Ying Kai Shan's eyes flashed with a cold light, as he took a step forwards, swinging his arms forwards, and a huge block of ice was immediately condensed in front of him, blocking the ball of mucus.

Bai Xiao Sheng roared with laughter, and in a flash, appeared beside the Type 2 Mutant Poisonous Toad with his Black Tooth Blade slashing down viciously at its body, saying: "You alone won't be enough! I'll help you out!!"

When his blade landed, he felt a slippery feeling from the ends of the blade, as the Black Tooth Blade followed the contours of the body and slid away.

At almost the same time, one of the boils on the skin of the Type 2 Mutant Poisonous Toad burst open, releasing a poisonous mist that started to spread.

Bai Xiao Sheng could not defend against that sudden turn of events, and immediately fainted when he whiffed in the poison gas, slumping to the ground. He was after all, an Agility-based Evolver, and had no way of defending against a poison attack.

At this time, the Type 2 Mutant Poisonous Toad shot its tongue out to grab Bai Xiao Sheng.

"Beast!! Go to hell!!" Hu Yi bellowed as he became one with his blade, and a huge blade beam that seemed to reach the moon and

chase the stars came slashing down brightly onto the Type 2 Mutant Poisonous Toad, directly decapitating it.

Not only did Hu Yi become a Strength-based Evolver, but his blade technique had even evolved to the 2nd Order Blade Technique Specialization, and he could utilize his own strength to produce an unparalleled blade qi. The strength of his blade qi was directly related to his Strength, as well as the expended Stamina and Spirit.

Right at this moment, the smaller-sized Type 2 Mutant Green Jiao-Python came slithering over.

White Bones immediately shot a bone spike towards the head of it.

The Type 2 Mutant Green Jiao-Python opened up its mouth to shoot a ball of poison gas back at the incoming bone spike.

The moment the bone spike entered the range of the poisonous mist, it began to emit some fizzing sounds as boils started to appear on the surface of the bone, before it corroded into a pile of brittle bones.

The demonic fiery eyes of White Bones flashed, and it retreated a few steps, turning around to deal with the other two Type 2 Mutant Beasts.

The corrosive poison of the Type 2 Mutant Green Jiao-Python was the perfect counter to White Bones, and if White Bones was to continue fighting it, it would be only be dragging its loss, hence it had immediately switched targets.

Yue Zhong eyed the Type 2 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, his eyes flashing coldly, and he condensed a Devil Flame Spear, before tossing it with all his strength, sending it towards the head of the Type 2 Mutant Green Jiao-Python.

The Type 2 Mutant Green Jiao-Python responded by opening its huge mouth and shooting poisonous spit at the incoming Devil

Flame Spear.

When the green poison landed on the Devil Flame Spear, it sizzled up before evaporating, while the Devil Flame Spear continued whistling through the air and pierced the head of the Type 2 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, incinerating the brain into uselessness.

Yue Zhong had just killed the Type 2 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, but had no time to breathe as the Type 2 Mutant Violent Ape that was built like a small mountain came at him in his moment of killing, while swinging its fist explosively towards Yue Zhong!

Chapter 420: Fighting the Green Jiao-Python!

The fist of the Type 2 Mutant Violent Ape was huge, yet its speed was not slow, and it brought along a tremendous force, capable of even turning an armored car into scrap metal.

Yue Zhong activated his [Shadow Steps], and dodged to the right, evading that fearsome punch from the Type 2 Violent Ape.

"Boss! I'll help!!" Xia Ming Da saw this and bellowed out in fury, waving his Dark Magic Blade as he slashed towards the Type 2 Violent Ape.

Xia Ming Da was a Strength-based Evolver with the Level 3 Blade Technique Specialization, and his blade swings were extremely deadly. Coupled with the usage of the Dark Magic Blade, he could easily slaughter any weaker Type 2 Mutant Beast.

The Type 2 Violent Ape roared in anger, as it unleashed another terrifying punch towards Xia Ming Da, landing heavily on the Dark Magic Blade. The blow knocked the Dark Magic Blade aside and caused Xia Ming Da to be sent flying back towards a tree violently, smashing into a sloppy meat pulp.

In the end, even a Strength-based Evolver had no way of contending against a top-tier Type 2 Mutant Beast in terms of strength, and the only merit from Xia Ming Da's efforts was that he left a blade wound on the hand of the Type 2 Violent Ape, as a thin line of fresh blood flowed from the wound.

Each and every Type 2 Mutant Beast had their own strengths and abilities, and could not be underestimated. If caught off-guard, even someone as strong as Yue Zhong would be easily annihilated.

After killing Xia Ming Da explosively, the glint in the Type 2 Violent Ape's eyes turned even more violent, as it pounced towards Yue Zhong.

On the other side, the Type 2 Mutant Pangolin was also charging at Yue Zhong like a tank.

Even the head of the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python had swiveled to look towards Yue Zhong with its cold vertical eyes.

Facing the combined assault of the 2 Type 2 Mutant Beasts, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, and pushed his [Shadow Steps] ability to the limit, dashing towards the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python.

If he allowed the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python to unleash its devastating attacks, everyone that Yue Zhong had brought would die without a doubt.

The 2 Type 2 Mutant Beasts were currently going to attack Yue Zhong, when all of a sudden, a layer of slippery ice condensed on the ground.

The Type 2 Violent Ape was caught unprepared as it stepped on the slippery ice, causing it to heavily fall, smashing a huge rock by the side of the road into smithereens.

The Type 2 Mutant Pangolin on the other hand had reacted immediately, extending its sharp claws as it grabbed the ground, maintaining its stability. However, as a result, its speed slowed down considerably.

Hu Yi walked towards Ying Kai Shan with a huge stride as he laughed: "Beautifully done Deadface!!"

Ying Kai Shan was constantly unemotive, and thus when Hu Yi had met him, he had immediately assigned a nickname to him.

Ying Kai Shan frowned as he muttered: "Hu Yi! I'm called Ying Kai Shan, not Deadface!!"

Hu Yi roared with laughter: "Haha!! I can still kill one more, after which I'll be spent! The remaining one will be left to you!"

Ying Kai Shan replied solemnly: "Then go get rid of that Type 2 Mutant Pangolin!"

"Fine!!" Hu Yi's eyes danced, as he shot forward, and again became one with the blade. An unparalleled blade beam came slashing down on the Type 2 Mutant Pangolin.

That tremendous blade beam instantly sliced through the tough carapace of the Type 2 Mutant Pangolin, splitting in two, as its innards and blood splattered out, dying Hu Yi's body red.

The moment he disposed of the Type 2 Mutant Pangolin, Hu Yi's complexion turned extremely pale, and he started to breath raggedly, before pulling his blade out and retreating. He was currently extremely weak, and had expended all he had, even a normal Mutant Beast would be able to wipe him out easily.

Yue Zhong continued to rush towards the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, as he swapped to a PF98 swiftly. A grinded it out he immediately began aiming at it and firing.

With a flash, the rocket landed on the gargantuan body of the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python and exploded.

With that explosion, fresh blood splattered as scales flew apart. Unfortunately the rocket had actually only caused a fist-sized hole in the side of the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong sucked in a breath of cold air: "What a terrifying defence!!"

If it was an ordinary Type 2 Mutant Beast, that single attack from Yue Zhong could cause the body to be blasted in two, however, all it did for the Type 3 Mutant Beast was cause a small fist-sized bloody wound, it was obvious that the defence of the Type 3 Mutant Beast was much tougher than that of a Type 2 Mutant Beast.

Of course, when the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python received that rocket from Yue Zhong, it emitted a roar of pain that sounded like a tiger or leopard, at the same time, it opened its huge jaws, and activated its innate ability, spitting out a huge green ball of

poisonous mist that enveloped itself.

Yue Zhong then pulled out another PF98 and fired at the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python.

This time, when the rocket had just arrived near the body of the Green Jiao-Python, it was almost instantly disintegrated due to the strong corrosive poison mist, dissolving into a puddle.

The Type 3 Green Jiao-Python shot Yue Zhong a look, as its body started moving.

When it moved, its speed was extremely fast, even quicker than that of Lightning which was an agile-type beast, and in just a few breaths, it had reached in front of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed as he instantly activated a layer of [Devil Flame] around him, and when the poison mist around the Green Jiao-Python came in contact with Yue Zhong's [Devil Flame], it began to sizzle and turn into wisps of vapour.

If it wasn't for the protection of the [Devil Flame], Yue Zhong would have instantly been dissolved.

The degree of poison belonging to the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python seemed to totally overcome any close-combat Enhancers. Without ample protection against the highly corrosive poison, one would be guaranteed to dissolve the moment one got too close.

Yue Zhong then activated his [Body Encompassing Armor], as White Bones turned into a black orb of light and formed a black carapace that seemingly shined with a metallic luster.

The Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python opened its huge jaws, and bit down towards Yue Zhong at a lightning speed.

Yue Zhong activated his [Shadow Steps] and his speed reached 15 times that of an ordinary person, and while it was not comparable to the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, it gave him leeway to react.

Just as the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python started to bite down, 2 sharp bone spikes shot out from Yue Zhong's leg that was covered with the [Body Encompassing Armor], propelling him upwards into the skies.

The Type 3 Green Jiao-Python took a bite out of Yue Zhong's original position, instantly crushing the 2 bone spikes Yue Zhong shot out into dust. If Yue Zhong had been just a little slower, he would have been crushed into bits.

The moment the bone spikes were destroyed, Yue Zhong took the chance to leap onto the head of the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python.

However, just as he had gotten on its back, the beast shook its head wildly, and a huge force transmitted, coupled with the layer of slippery mucus on the beast's body, flinging Yue Zhong away by tens of metres.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed, as the Devil Flame in his right hand danced, and the long, all-conquering Devil Flame Spear appeared. He tossed it out strongly, and the Devil Flame Spear shot towards the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python extremely fast, breaking the sound barrier. ***

The Type 3 Green Jiao-Python's eyes widened, and it opened its huge jaws to counter the Devil Flame Spear by spitting a dense green glob of poison at it.

Poison vapour rose to the skies, before the Devil Flame Spear penetrated that huge ball of poison, reaching the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python.

Although the ball of poison had not managed to stop the Devil Flame Spear entirely, it had worn down the strength of it, and the remaining power behind the Devil Flame Spear was not enough to threaten the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python.

Once it had disrupted Yue Zhong's attack, the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python opened its jaws again, and started firing balls of poison at a

rate of 1 per second, continuously shooting them at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's body flitted about in a bid to dodge those rapid-fire balls of poison. As those poisonous balls landed on the ground, they started to corrode the ground, leaving multiple holes.

The might of those poisonous balls was enough to engulf an area that neared half of a football field, and under the continuous firing of poison spit, the entire area was now covered with a dense green poisonous fog, and all living things within the area had already been dissolved into puddles.

If those poison balls had been fired on the site where Yue Zhong and his men were defending, it was definitely more than enough to completely wipe out the hundreds of experts.

Yue Zhong flitted about, dodging continuously like a spectre, and the Devil Flame covering his body burnt away any poison fog that neared him. Wisps of poisonous vapour sizzled towards the skies.

"Damn it!! What an annoying beast!" As Yue Zhong evaded, his heart was crying bitterly. This Type 3 Green Jiao-Python truly possessed formidable combat strength, and was forcing all his trump cards. Even then, he lacked the confidence for victory.

"I'll have to bet it all, otherwise we're going to die here." Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a resolute glint, and he held his breath, then started to rush towards the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python. In order to defend against the assault of the poisonous fog, he had to expend a huge amount of Spirit to maintain the Devil Flame around himself. If this went on, he could defend against the poisonous fog for a limited time only, as after his Spirit was expended fully, he would lose his defence as well.

In just 3 seconds, Yue Zhong had managed to rush to the front of the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python, the Devil Flame dancing in his hands. He expended another 60 Spirit and 20 Stamina to condense a 2m-long Devil Flame Sword. This was, by now, the most that he could afford already.

Yue Zhong had just reached the body of the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python, when its eyes flashed fiercely, and bit out towards Yue Zhong in a vicious manner.

Yue Zhong caused a few bone spikes to shoot out from his right side, pushing him away by 6m, and the jaws of the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python landed on empty ground, cause a few cracks to appear in the surroundings.

Yue Zhong then quickly propelled himself towards the head of the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python, before he used the Devil Flame Sword to viciously strike at and puncture the eyes of the enormous beast.

The blazing hot Devil Flame Sword penetrated the eye, causing the mucus near the eyes to be burnt into nothing, and the might of the Devil Flame exploded out, instantly burning the insides of the eye.

The beast let out an earth-shaking roar of pain, and thrashed about with its strength, instantly knocking against Yue Zhong's body.

Yue Zhong felt like he was struck by a train as he was instantly knocked back dozens of metres, and even with his layers of protection and defence, he could feel almost 20 of his bones snapping, his internal organs shaken, as he spat out a huge amount of fresh blood.

When he landed, his body felt like breaking apart, his head dizzy, and the degree of pain almost unbearable to the point where one would wish for death. He coughed out once, and another huge mouthful of blood came rushing out. His condition was truly terrible.

This was under the fact that Yue Zhong was partly an Endurance Evolver! Naturally he had large amounts of Endurance, if it was an ordinary person, even if he were to don everything Yue Zhong had on, that single blow from the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python was

enough to shatter the insides of the person. Thankfully, Yue Zhong's body was sturdy enough, hence he managed to survive the blow. Barely.

Yue Zhong gritted his teeth as he tolerated the pain, taking a look at the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python.

Only to discover that the Devil Flame was currently burning the right eye of the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python, as it writhed about in pain, however, with the enveloping mist of poison, the Devil Flame was diminishing slowly. If this continued on, the beast would definitely be able to recover.

"No! I can't go down like this!! I need to get rid of that piece of shit!!"

Yue Zhong sucked in a deep breath, swallowing a Life-Saving Grass, and directly threw a Type 2 Mutant Beast blood essence into his mouth. With a thought, 2 spikes shot out from behind him, propelling his body towards the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python.

While the blood essence of a Type 2 Mutant Beast had no more enhancing effect on Yue Zhong's Vitality, it provided a huge boost in terms of his recovery.

The moment the Type 2 Mutant Beast blood essence entered his body, it diffused and started nourishing his body. At the same time, his Level 4 [Regeneration] skill kicked in, helping in the rapid repairing of his body. This enabled him to regain his mobility even after suffering several broken bones.

When Yue Zhong reached the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, he pulled out his Stinger, and aimed at the right eye of the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, firing 6 consecutive shots.

The fearsome Stinger bullets penetrated the wounded right eye of the beast, forcefully entering its body before exploding, causing a number of the nerves to be destroyed as a result.

By this time, the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python had become

thoroughly enraged, and started twisting its massive body, spitting out poisonous balls rapidly in all directions as part of its rampage.

Facing the enraged Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, Yue Zhong could only use guerilla tactics such as dodge and hide.

As the spittles of venom shot out in all manner of directions, the moment it landed on any living thing, be it human or Mutant Beast, the unlucky victim would immediately be corroded and dissolved.

After spitting out more than 100 balls of poison, the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python became sluggish, after all, using its innate ability with such disregard would be tiring to even a Type 3 Mutant Beast.

Upon seeing that the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python was becoming sluggish, he propelled himself by extending a bone spike, before leaping onto the head of the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python. He used his right hand to shoot 4 extremely sharp spikes which formed a drill like shape as they pierced the wound, and began to spin rapidly.

Chapter 421: Promotion! Level 60!

The large drill started to spin rapidly, as it made its way towards the brains of the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python. Soon after, the brain was pierced and the drill continued to spin rapidly, blending the internal brain matter into mush.

No matter how strong the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python was, with its brain destroyed it was done for. In its death throes, it tried to fling Yue Zhong, sending him flying, before it shuddered a while, and then finally slumped to the ground.

When Yue Zhong was sent flying by the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, his body also trembled non-stop, his internal organs suffering from pain. He gritted his teeth forcefully, sending 2 spikes out from his back, supporting him and preventing him from landing harshly.

"Congratulations on achieving Level 58! You have gained 2 points of attributes to be allocated!"

"Congratulations on achieving Level 59! You have gained 2 points of attributes to be allocated!"

"Congratulations on achieving Level 60! You have gained 2 points of attributes to be allocated!"

"Congratulations on achieving Level 60! You have gained 1 skill point to be allocated!"

With the death of the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, Yue Zhong had immediately leapt 3 levels, becoming a Level 60 Enhancer. The notifications sounded one after another in his mind.

Yue Zhong thought for a while, before allocating all the points to his Agility, at the same time, strengthening his Devil Flame to +4.

"Level 3 Skill Devil Flame (+4) :....., its power is now stronger than the prior enhancement by 5 times!"

After Yue Zhong's Devil Flame was enhanced, its power was truly raised by a huge margin, however it had not yet reached the level of a Second Order skill.

A Second Order skill was the next threshold, and its might would definitely surpass that of a normal First Order skill. Ever since White Bones had evolved to its Dark Skeleton stage, it could single-handedly deal with any elite soldier, and killing even the weaker Type 2 Mutant Beasts like nothing. That was how powerful a Second Order skill was.

Yue Zhong was intending to raise his Devil Flame to its Second Order stage as quickly as possible, that way he would have something that could deal with the defence of a Type 3 Mutant Beast.

Yue Zhong looked towards the corpse of the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, and discovered a green treasure box as well as 300 survivor coins: "I wonder what precious treasures would be dropped?"

Yue Zhong bent down to pick up the green treasure box and opened it, as a green radiant line shone out, and a green cloak appeared in his hands.

Level 5 Treasure: Green Jiao-Cape. By wrapping it around one's body, they can completely protect against even the incoming attack of a 37mm cannon. Upon equipping, Agility +12. Accompanying skill: Summon Green Jiao-Spirit. Skill description: When using the skill, a Green Jiao-Spirit with the combat ability rivalling that of a Type 2 Green Jiao-Python will appear to battle alongside user. Ability duration 1 hour. Cooldown 24 hours.

Yue Zhong donned the cape, and his Agility got raised by another 12 points. By this time, his Agility had reached 135 points. Many of the lower-levelled Agility-based Evolvers could not match his speed at all.

Yue Zhong glanced at the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python's

corpse, and deactivated the Bone Encompassing Armor.

He then issued an order to White Bones: "Go retrieve its blood essence and nuclei for me!!"

To any ordinary Enhancer, the thing that was most beneficial to them would be the blood essence of the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python. The blood essence could raise their body constitution, and while it did not help the combat stats, it was still extremely important. After all, of the 6 major attributes, there was not one that was useless.

When it received the order, White Bones immediately burrowed into the corpse of the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, retrieving the necessary items and handing them to Yue Zhong.

The moment he killed that Green Jiao-Python, the rest of the horde started to lose all signs of their order, many of the bigger ones immediately gobbling up the weaker ones. Even more started to escape in all directions.

Even the Type 2 Violent Ape that was clashing against Ying Kai Shan suddenly left him alone and started to run towards the Mountain Range. These Type 2 Mutant Beasts had developed some sort of sixth sense, and would retreat the moment things seemed bad.

"We won!!"

"We're alive!!!"

"Thank God!! We're alive!!"

"....."

When all the experts who were beyond exhausted saw this, their hearts began to relax, and at the next moment, people began to whoop in delight and excitement.

This time, when the Mutant Beast horde had swarmed them, their numbers were nearing in the 800,000s. It was a force that

was almost 20 times larger than the humans, and if it wasn't for the chaos in between the different races or their leaders being killed before the horde collapsed, the town of humans would definitely have been killed. Many of them were already prepared to die, and when the ending came and they were still alive, they could not help but cheer in relief.

Some of them had literally fainted on the ground the moment they saw the Mutant Beasts dispersing. They had been at battle for so long, and had pushed themselves beyond the limits of their Stamina and Spirit.

"Long live Boss Yue!!"

"Boss Yue you're awesome!!"

"....."

Not long after, Yue Zhong, Hu Yi and the rest slowly appeared at the town entrance. All the surviving experts immediately erupted in a earth-shaking cheer when they saw them. Passionate and thankful gazes fell on them.

Against the beast horde, if it wasn't for Yue Zhong's superb command of the situation, as well as his courage and bravery, even taking care of the Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python, no one in the town would have been left alive. This was truly a heartfelt appreciation from every expert present.

Amidst the cheers, the upper echelons of the Scarlet Phoenix Triad had a complicated look as they gazed at the party.

One of the Scarlet Phoenix Elders, Liu Ling Ling whispered to Ding Lie: "Boss!! Now is the time where he's at his weakest! Shall we take him out!"

Anyone could see that Yue Zhong's party had been through a gruelling battle, and were at their limits. It was truly their weakest condition. The Scarlet Phoenix Triad had managed to establish themselves in Guilin City precisely because they were not some

merciful or kind people. Taking advantage when their opponents were weak had been a normal occurrence in their manner of handling things.

Ding Lei gazed at the party for a long while, before shaking and saying: "No! If we act now, we might not be able to kill him! If we can't get a sure kill, we will suffer from his retaliation."

As the cheers went on, Yue Zhong went back to his own site and began to rest, after fighting in so many life-and-death battles consecutively, he was also feeling extremely exhausted, instantly falling asleep when he laid down.

The rest of the experts also left for their own places within the town to rest.

As for the 200+ ordinary soldiers that Yue Zhong had brought specifically to help construct defences, under Larman's command, they began to sweep up all the corpses of the Type 2 Mutant Beasts, the other higher-level Mutant Beasts and kept watch over them, including the Type 3 Mutant Beast corpse. These were after all valuable treasures.

On the second day, when most of the experts had just woken up, they were summoned by Yue Zhong to the main square.

In the open square of the town, the human experts gathered one by one.

Over 3,000 people had come on the hunt for the Type 3 Mutant Beast, as of now, only 900 of them remained. The rest of the 2,000 plus people had died at the jaws of the Mutant Beast horde. However, for the surviving experts, almost everyone of them gained a huge increase in their combat abilities.

Zheng Tu also brought the rest of the Great God Triad towards the square and found a spot to sit down.

"Where's the Scarlet Phoenix Triad?" Zheng Tu swept his gaze left and right, but did not discover them, and he started to feel

uneasy in his heart.

Right at this time, a chief of the Divine Dragon Triad, Zhang Zhi Hao, whose looks were insignificant, came up to Zheng Tu and said: "Old Zheng!! Seems like something's off!! Looking at the crowd, don't tell me Boss Yue wants to absorb all of us?"

While this Divine Dragon Triad sounded extremely valiant, and could be confused with the Heavenly Dragon Triad, in truth, they were comprised of 7 core members, who were good brothers, as well as a few other outer members. The Chief, Zhang Zhi Hao, had a so-so strength, and his enhancement level was 33. However, his character was smooth, and he had a lot of connections, and he had some form of bonds with Zheng Tu.

Zheng Tu eyed Zhang Zhi Hao and spoke solemnly: "Yesterday, it was all due to Boss Yue, that we're all alive now. If Boss Yue wants to take all of us in, then there's nothing wrong with it, just treat it that we're giving our lives to him."

Zhang Zhi Hao's expression turned frigid as he replied: "Bro Zheng. Yes, it's true that he saved us. But our businesses had been based on our own efforts. If he wants to take them all, isn't that inappropriate?"

When Zheng Tu heard those words, he also could not help but turn silent. Modern society was like this, even though Zheng Tu was grateful to Yue Zhong for saving their lives, but the thought of handing over his business, even Zheng Tu felt a little reluctant.

In the square, the majority of the people began to engage in discussion, guessing Yue Zhong's motives for gathering them here.

At this time, Yue Zhong strode onto the stage in the middle.

Behind Yue Zhong, there was Xin Jia Rou and Ning Yu Xin. On his sides, there were 2 neat rows of soldiers who had an extremely intimidating aura.

Yue Zhong sat down, sweeping his glance across the entire

square, before opening his mouth: "Today, I've gathered everyone here, to discuss something important!"

Yue Zhong glanced around a little after pausing, then continued: "The Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad went back on their words, abandoning their posts at a crucial time. This is a heinous crime. I've decided that when I head back to Guilin City, I will exterminate them according to the agreement! However! While the Green Stone Triad has that wish, we may not have the strength! So I hope that all of you here will help me, Yue Zhong, out!"

"That's natural!! The Heavenly Dragon Triad! Green Bamboo Triad! Those bastards!! Kill them!! Boss Yue!! I, Zhang Zhi Hao, will definitely support you!!"

"Destroy them!!"

"Kill those bastards!!"

"....."

After those words of Yue Zhong, everyone present exploded out in fury. Everyone had a deep hatred for those 2 triads. If it wasn't for their betrayal, many of their brothers and friends wouldn't have died needlessly. Revenge was something they agreed on.

Chapter 422: Di Ya's Resolve

Yue Zhong looked at everyone before slowly saying: "The Heavenly Dragon and Green Bamboo factions are large, their operations well organized. To eradicate them, we will need to work together. Without a single commander, it would be impossible, therefore I have decided to establish the Heaven Union, combining all our strength to wipe out the 2 triads!"

Yue Zhong wanted the experts present to work together. However, he knew that many of these experts had their own triads, and they would not be willing to just bring their men to join Yue Zhong, hence he came up with the idea of an union.

Zhang Zhi Hao immediately clapped his hands and nodded: "Good!! This idea's good!! That's great! I vouch for Boss Yue to be the Union Chief of this Heaven Union!!"

"That's right! If it wasn't for you Boss Yue, we would all have died!! Boss Yue, if you were to be the Union Leader, we would have no objections!"

"Those who're not willing to join the Heaven Union must be dogs of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad! Let's eradicate them!!"

"....."

Amongst those rallying cries, there were definitely some who were planted by Yue Zhong, but a number of them were shouting out heartfelt words as well.

After the tough battle against the Mutant Beast horde the previous night, Yue Zhong had absorbed a number of experts into his ranks, and these people would be able to bolster his fighting force, and naturally increase his might.

Under those passionate cries, if there were anyone who still hesitated, they could only keep silent and go with the flow.

Yue Zhong grinned, and amiably called out: "Fine! Since everyone has so kindly nominated me! I will gladly accept the position as Union Chief then!"

This Heaven Union was a way that Yue Zhong could utilize all the different triads. With this, it was more effective than forcefully absorbing the smaller triads.

Also, with the name of the Heaven Union, Yue Zhong could justify sending those smaller powers who were not willing to join him, to become cannon fodder to test the strength of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad, wearing down their forces.

Zhang Zhi Hao was the first to applaud loudly: "Long live Union Chief Yue!!"

"Congratulations Union Chief Yue!!"

"....."

A wave of congratulations began to resound from the people present. Some of the more intelligent ones could tell that something was off, but seeing the numerous experts beside Yue Zhong, they kept their silence.

After establishing the Union to control the number of experts, Yue Zhong began to delegate duties for them to clear the numerous Mutant Beasts corpses. They were all valuable resources, be it their hide, their bones, their claws, they were all materials that could be turned into useful equipment. Therefore, everyone began to collect with a look of excitement on their faces.

Di Ya had managed to escape back to Guilin City in a pathetic manner. When he returned, he immediately summoned the remaining 2 Elders who stayed behind as he gave an order: "Immediately bring men to go get Yue Zhong's father Yue Ming here!"

The 2 Elders were called Yan Liang and Lu Tao, and they were both Evolvers, possessing immense strength.

Yan Liang frowned as he asked: "Chief! If we kidnap Yue Ming, we will really be creating an enmity with the Green Stone Triad. Are you sure this is a good idea?"

Di Ya's pupils narrowed as he coldly asked: "Elder Yan, are you trying to go against my orders?"

Yan Liang replied with haste: "Your subordinate does not dare! It's just that Chief, may I ask, what happened to the other Elders that went hunting with you?"

"Good! Good!! Good!!! Yan Liang you dare to question me?!" Di Ya laughed coldly, before suddenly brandishing the blade at his waist, slicing Yan Liang's head off with the flash of his weapon. Yan Liang's decapitated head flew through the air, landing on the floor with a thud, his eyes one of shock.

Yan Liang had never thought that Di Ya would actually act against him. Normally, even though the 2 of them had their conflicts, as Yan Liang was an Evolver, and his position inside the Triad wasn't low, Di Ya had to give him some face as well. Due to this, Yan Liang did not foresee that Di Ya would suddenly explode and kill him in a single move.

Witnessing this, Lu Tao's face immediately fell, and he could not help but retreated a few steps.

Di Ya stared at Lu Tao coldly, spitting: "Yan Liang committed insubordination, and was dealt with by me!! Elder Lu, are you going to obey my orders! Or do you want to disobey as well?!"

By now, within the Heavenly Dragon Triad, there were only Di Ya and Lu Tao left who were Evolvers. Yan Liang had been good friends with all 6 Elders that Di Ya brought out, and Di Ya was afraid that there would survivors from the town, and hence, to thoroughly seize control of his Heavenly Dragon Triad, he had taken care of Yan Liang at the first moment!

Lu Tao felt a chill in his heart as he replied: "Lu Tao is willing to

strive for Chief!! I will bring my men to capture Yue Ming right this instant!"

With that, Lu Tao quickly left.

Di Ya then mulled for a long while, before carrying out various actions.

The entire Heavenly Dragon Triad was activated, as they went to attack the Green Stone Triad that Yue Zhong established.

Countless hooligans of the Heavenly Dragon Triad carried knives and wooden bats as they went into the different establishments, pillaging and damaging property, attacking anyone on sight. They strove to destroy as much of the businesses they could, while injuring many members of the Green Stone Triad.

Their attacks came without warning, and not long after, all 20 over shops under the Green Stone Triad were destroyed cleanly by the Heavenly Dragon Triad, and their casualties numbered in the 70s, some dead even. It was truly tragic.

One of the Hall Lords came crying in front of Zheng Ming He: "Elder Zheng!! Our 70 or more brothers had been pummeled by the Heavenly Dragon Triad!! You must help us seek redress!!"

"Have the Heavenly Dragon Triad gone crazy?" Zheng Ming He heard the report and frowned, he was different from the other subordinates of Yue Zhong. If it was the hot-blooded Bai Xiao Sheng, he definitely would have activated all the troops and fight it out with the Heavenly Dragon Triad without any consideration. As for him, he wanted to know the logic behind the actions.

One of the elites that Yue Zhong had brought over from Tianxin District came running in front of Zheng Ming He and reported: "Elder Zheng!! The main force of the Heavenly Dragon Triad is currently marching towards us now! What do we do?"

"Don't tell me that the Heavenly Dragon Triad are truly targeting us?" Zheng Ming He was shocked, before solemnly commanding:

"Command all members of the Green Stone Triad to gather at the main headquarters! Prepare for battle!!"

The elite soldier replied with a "Yes!" before immediately dismissing himself.

Under Zheng Ming He's orders, a large number of the Green Stone Triad members gathered at the headquarters, as they prepared to engage in battle against the Heavenly Dragon Triad.

On the other side, Chen Sheng Gang was currently guarding Yue Zhong's house nearby with 6 other experts, as they observed everything that went on around. They were in charge of the safety of Yue Zhong's family.

One soldier suddenly pointed to a distance as he called out to Chen Sheng Gang: "Head! Those guys don't seem right!!"

Chen Sheng Gang looked towards the direction, only to see Lu Tao leading 30 experts from the Heavenly Dragon Triad as they ran over.

Lu Tao was very clear that Yue Ming would be under protection, as he was an important character, and decided to bring along more experts, intending to kidnap the entire family with brute force.

Chen Sheng Gang saw them and his expression changed, before ordering out: "Zhao Gua!! Immediately go take 2 men and escort Boss Yue's parents out of here!!"

Seeing those over 30 experts rushing over, a bad feeling arose in Chen Sheng Gang's heart.

"Yes! Head!" Zhao Gua then left immediately with 2 experts towards Yue Zhong's house.

Another elite asked Chen Sheng Gang directly: "What do we do now, Head?"

"Kill them directly!!" Chen Sheng Gang's eyes flashed grimly as he roared and pulled out a 12.7mm heavy machine gun, aiming at

them and spraying wildly.

In order to protect his family, Yue Zhong had granted Chen Sheng Gang to kill without restrictions.

The dense rain of bullets immediately barraged down on those 30-over members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad.

Lu Tao and the rest totally didn't expect the usage of a heavy machine gun, furthermore, Chen Sheng Gang had not so much as asked a question, and had suddenly attacked.

In that instant, 6 of the experts were immediately ripped to shreds by the rapid fire.

"Take cover!! Kill them all!!" Lu Tao's eyes went bloodshot as he roared, and the members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad began to dive for cover, before pulling out their own weapons and firing back at Chen Sheng Gang's position.

The intense gunfire broke out, causing the survivors within the vicinity to hide in their houses as they trembled in fear.

Zhao Gua had led the 2 experts and reached Yue Zhong's house quickly, shooting down the lock and bursting through the room.

Yue Ming looked at them in shock, as he suppressed the fear in his heart and questioned: "Who are you people?"

Zhao Gua shot forward like an arrow, chopping Yue Ming and his wife in the neck, knocking them out, as he muttered: "Pardon my manners!!"

The other 2 soldiers immediately carried them, as the 3 of them made their way towards the roof of the apartment building.

Zhao Gua and his party quickly arrived at the roof above the 3rd storey.

He faced the opposite building, raising his right hand, and a number of steel wires explode out from behind his back, wrapping around one of the soldier, before sending him over to the other

building.

Using this method, Zhao Gua made it across with his men, as they quickly escaped from there, rapidly landing on the other building.

Like this, they crossed a number of roofs similarly, and before long, Zhao Gua, the 2 soldiers, as well as Yue Ming and his wife disappeared amongst the buildings.

Lu Tao was also a strong Spirit-based Evolver, and as he saw the rain of bullets, he quickly activated a [Psychic Barrier], blocking those heavy machine gun bullets, at the same time bellowing: "Charge!!"

The remaining soldiers immediately leapt out from their covers, charging forwards with Lu Tao.

"Bastard!" Chen Sheng Gang's face fell, and activated his skill, as a huge wall of earth arose and blocked in front of those Heavenly Dragon Triad members. He was not aiming to kill, instead, buying for time. He had only 3 other men with him, and the 4 of them were definitely not a match against the over 20 other experts.

6 Strength-based Enhancers brought their weapons as they smashed furiously on the earth wall, causing it to break down immediately.

Chapter 423: Chaos Begins!

The earthen wall was broken, and a cloud of dust flew up. Lu Tao brought his men as they leapt across the debris, only to discover that there were no signs of people on the other side.

"Damn it!!" Lu Tao's face fell, and quickly brought his subordinates as they charged up the apartment building.

When Lu Tao and his men broke through the place where Yue Zhong's parents were staying, all they saw was an empty space.

"Search the place!!" Lu Tao's eyes flashed with fury as he bellowed out.

The 20+ experts swiftly turned the place over, to no avail.

"Boss! They must have escaped! What now?" One of the experts came to Lu Tao and quickly reported.

Lu Tao's expression was extremely grim as he gritted his teeth: "Disperse!!"

Under Lu Tao's commands, these 20-over experts quickly retreated and left the place.

After a long while, some policemen in uniform finally sauntered over to the vicinity.

In Guilin City, the triads were numerous, and fights broke out often. As there were a number of experts in each triads, as long as things didn't get too out of hand, the local police weren't keen on interfering.

"Traitorous dog!! Get the hell out here!!"

"This is our Chinese territory, you traitors and dogs can fuck off!!"

"Traitors!! Disloyal bastards! You still don't want to get the hell out?!"

"Kill all the foreigners!!"

"....."

At a part of the city, the Heavenly Dragon Triad had surrounded the headquarters of the Green Stone Triad, and a number of the Heavenly Dragon Triad members were wielding knives and wooden bats, shouting and cursing at the people within the Green Stone Triad's building.

The Green Stone Triad had after all accepted a large amount of resources as well as the remnant soldiers of the Hong Triad. Therefore, under the right goading, the ordinary members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad were riled up enough, to call for blood, to the extent that even Yue Zhong's Green Stone Triad has been labelled as traitorous and disloyal.

Such tactics to pin the stigma on other people have long been utilized throughout history, and the members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad did not hesitate to do the same to the Green Stone Triad.

Shang Lun stood at a window, looking down on the shouting mob outside of the building, his killing intent billowing as he asked: "Old Zheng, what do we do now? Shall we kill them all?"

Shang Lun had followed Yue Zhong for a long while, and did not blink even when taking the lives of ordinary people. Truthfully, it was a numbness that most warriors had after a long while in such a world.

In the Green Stone Triad's headquarters, there were 3 battalions' worth of equipment, and the moment the entire Green Stone Triad was activated, they could easily kill those senseless hooligans outside baying for blood.

All those hooligans wielding simple knives and wooden bats, how could they be a match against professional soldiers wielding modern weaponry?

Zheng Ming He shook his head and he laughed coldly: "Not necessary!! We have plenty of other means!! Old Shang, don't worry, let's watch!"

Right at this time, a police siren resounded from afar.

Zheng Ming He laughed when he heard those sirens, saying: "They're here!"

A number of policemen quickly arrived at the location, and surrounded all the members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad.

Seeing the appearance of the policemen, the ordinary hooligans of the Heavenly Dragon Triad started to stir, and their faces fell. There were even a few who were frightened and tried to run away. A number of the higher-ranking heads bellowed in rage, and managed to control the situation, before it entirely collapsed.

Flanked by a number of policemen, Dan Hong finally appeared as he stomped to the rowdy crowd of Heavenly Dragon Triad members and roared: "What the hell are you guys doing? Gathering illegally and creating a ruckus is an offence! Don't tell me all of you want to spend your time in jail?!"

When the Heavenly Dragon Triad members saw that it was the Superintendent that appeared, the atmosphere broke, and a number of them immediately turned and ran.

If the triads in China had no backing, they were vulnerable to the police. Any small-time hooligan would be fearful and run when they saw a policeman.

Dan Hong swept a gaze across the remaining members, as he called out in a cold voice: "Lock all of them up!! Any who dares to resist, shoot them on the spot!!"

In the post-apocalyptic world, the authority of the police was still far-reaching. Executing criminals on the spot was a common occurrence, and using strength to demonstrate was now a normal way of the world.

Although Guilin City was considered quite stable when compared to the other establishments that Yue Zhong had come across, it was still part of the post-apocalyptic world, and punishments were still severe.

"Wait a minute!!" Right as Dan Hong issued the order for the Heavenly Dragon Triad members to be locked up, one of the Hall Lords, Sheng Huai Guang, stepped forwards in strides and barked.

Dan Hong glanced at him and asked in a low voice: "Sheng Huai Guang, are you going to resort to violence to retaliate?"

Hearing those words, the policemen around got tense as they pulled out their weapons. Some even immediately brought out their assault rifles and aimed it at the crowd of Heavenly Dragon Triad.

In this world, resisting was a frequent thing. As there were countless Enhancers amongst the civilians, many policemen would lose their lives on patrol. However, those who had truly plotted against the government, had long since been wiped out by the experts of the government and the army.

Guilin City used to have 5 Great Triads, but due to the actions of one of them offending a government official, an operation was mounted to wipe all traces of that particular Triad, and everyone saw the true might of the government. If the Heavenly Dragon Triad were to resist with force, their days would truly be numbered.

Dan Hong was an asshole, Yue Zhong had chose not to kill him, precisely because he could make use of him and the threat of the government behind him.

Sheng Huai Guang laughed as he turned his body slightly, revealing a weak young man with an arrogant bearing and dressed entirely in branded clothing as he said: "I don't dare! How could I, Sheng Huai Guang, be so bold as to go against the government? But, look who this is?"

The young man wearing branded stuff and had an arrogant look stared at Dan Hong with a provocative look: "Dan Hong! Don't you recognize me?"

Dan Hong looked at the despotic young man, and his expression changed, as his back broke out in cold sweat: "So it's Young Master Li! Why are you here?"

This young man was called Li Hong Zhi, and was the son of the mayor of Nanning City.

Currently in Guilin City, there was the banner of Guilin City and Nanning City, both had tremendous authority and reputation. Nanning City's mayor Li Jiu Ming and his men had a huge hand in everything with Guilin City, and was considered a true giant within the walls of Guilin City. That was why when Dan Hong saw Li Hong Zhi, his face had changed and he was breaking out in cold sweat.

Li Hong Zhi had a condescending look as he stared at Dan Hong, before replying as though he was calling a slave: "Dan Hong!! Since you recognize me, what are you waiting for? Go get your men and round up the Green Stone Triad!! Or do you want my dad to tear the skin off your back?"

In this post-apocalyptic world, where order had collapsed, and there was no longer any supervision by the public, all the high ranking government officials had took it up upon themselves to be sons of heavens. They became extremely arrogant, and this Li Hong Zhi was one such character.

When Dan Hong was reprimanded by this Li Hong Zhi as though he was his house servant, his face also turned white and green. He was after all, a government official himself with a certain status, and being scolded like that was extremely unpleasant to him. However, Li Hong Zhi truly represented his father Li Jiu Ming, and was not someone he could offend.

However, when Dan Hong thought of Yue Zhong's decisive

methods, his heart felt conflicted. If Yue Zhong came back, he would definitely raze his entire family to the ground if he didn't handle this matter properly.

After struggling internally for a while, Dan Hong gritted his teeth as he commanded: "Li Hong Zhi! I'm currently on government business!! Pardon my offence!! Everyone, go round them all up!!"

Under Dan Hong's orders, those policemen immediately forced their way towards the Heavenly Dragon Triad members.

Li Hong Zhi's face turned ugly as he shouted: "You guys dare!!! I'm the son of Li Jiu Ming, the mayor of Nanning City!!"

Hearing his explosive revealing of his status, a few policemen stopped in their tracks, their faces showing hesitation. This was the son of one of the giants in Guilin City, if they were to bring him in now, his family would just pat him a little and he would be released, but the police themselves might lose their lives.

Just then, a shout of rage travelled from afar: "Who dares tough my brother Li Hong Zhi!!"

Following that angry shout, an army officer dressed entirely in military uniform, his hands wielding a gun, a head with short hair, burly build, eagle-eyes and a hook nose, came running, his entire body armed to the teeth.

Dan Hong saw the military officer and his face truly turned ashen, his heart full of regret: "Shit!! If I'd known, I wouldn't have stuck my neck out for Yue Zhong! This time, I'm fucked!"

Li Hong Zhi on the other hand was laughing loudly as he came up to greet the officer: "Brother Chang! You're here!"

The officer was called Chang Yu Feng, and he was a company officer that was on good terms with Li Hong Zhi. This time, Chang Yu Feng had actually brought along a company of soldiers to assist Li Hong Zhi.

Chang Yu Feng eyed Dan Hong coldly as he issued the command:

"So you want to touch my brother? Men, capture him! Those who stand in the way, kill without hesitation!"

Hearing Chang Yu Feng's orders, 20 elite soldiers came out from behind Chang Yu Feng, as they charged towards Dan Hong.

The policemen under Dan Hong looked on helplessly as these properly-trained military soldiers came up to them and apprehended them. These were the military, the weapons in the police hands were insufficient to go against them. Even their training was on a different level. These policemen naturally did not dare retaliate, otherwise, they would truly lose their lives.

Dan Hong immediately went up to Li Hong Zhi, as he called out loudly with a pale face: "I'm from the government!! On what basis are you guys capturing me??"

Li Hong Zhi eyed Dan Hong, as he smirked coldly: "Government? Here, I'm the sky, I'm the law!! You're just a small superintendent and you want to go against me? You're truly seeking death!! Take him away!! Execute him!!"

Dan Hong immediately turned even paler as he shouted: "Dont' kill me!! Don't kill me!!"

2 burly men immediately grabbed the arms of Dan Hong and dragged him like a dog towards a small ditch.

The policemen looked on as Dan Hong was dragged into a ditch, his eyes filled with despair like a rabbit about to become the meal of a fox.

Chapter 424: Mobilization!

Within the building, Shang Lun looked out the window and frowned: "Things aren't looking good. Looks like Dan Hong is about to be executed!"

Zheng Ming He eyed those soldiers and his brows furrowed as well: "Even the army came? Seems like this Heavenly Dragon Triad is not simple!"

Just as those 2 burly men brought Dan Hong towards a small ditch, 2 razor sharp bone spikes flashed by, and the heads of the 2 burly men were sent flying. Blood sprayed towards the skies, shocking everyone present.

"Ah!!!" When the 2 heads rolled over to a cowardly member of the Heavenly Dragon Triad, he could not help but scream.

The majority of the hooligans under the Heavenly Dragon Triad banner were ordinary members, and had not seen much blood. This time, witnessing the beheading of people right in front of their eyes, it was truly a terrifying scene.

The scream of the Heavenly Dragon Triad member attracted everyone's gaze towards the direction of the small ditch.

In front of everybody, Yue Zhong stepped forward into the pool of already congealing blood, followed by Hu Yi and a large number of experts.

Dan Hong was following by Yue Zhong's side, tears streaking down his face as he thanked profusely: "Many thanks to Boss Yue for saving my life!! Thank you Boss Yue!! From today onwards, this small life truly belongs to you Boss Yue!!"

Yue Zhong glanced at him and responded mildly: "As long as you carry your duties well for me, I will definitely not let you suffer!"

Yue Zhong naturally did not trust Dan Hong's pledge. This was modern society, and the current people treated promises like

eating rice and passing flatulence, no one had the decency to uphold promises anymore. Only through sufficient threat and rewards, as well as the power to back up one's rules, would people truly be loyal.

If Yue Zhong had not established the Green Stone Triad, which became such a huge triad, he would have been unable to attract so many experts to join together under his banner.

Li Hong Zhi eyed Yue Zhong, laughing coldly as he ordered the nearby policemen: "You must be the Chief of the Green Stone Triad, Yue Zhong? All you useless policemen, what are you spacing out for? Why aren't you apprehending him! You want me to flay the skin on your back?"

When the policemen heard Li Hong Zhi trying to order them like dogs, their expressions turned ugly, and although they were extremely unwilling in their hearts, they began moving towards Yue Zhong, albeit hesitantly.

In this world, anyone who could become a cop was already a matter worth mentioning to the ordinary folks. However, if their identity and status as a policeman was taken away from them, they would be nothing. Under such threats, although their hearts were brimming with hatred, they could not help but slowly inch their way towards Yue Zhong.

Li Hong Zhi, on the other hand, just hid amongst the Heavenly Dragon Triad, watching the party of Yue Zhong as he smirked coldly.

The policemen represented the power of the government, if Yue Zhong dared to retaliate, it was tantamount to going against the government of Guilin City. If he didn't, then when he landed in the hands of the government, it was the same as being at the mercy of that Young Master Li.

Sheng Huai Guang also laughed coldly: "Yue Zhong!! Just surrender! If you kneel now and kiss the boots of Young Master Li,

we can let you off with your life!! Otherwise, all your family and friends will die because of you!!"

"Yue Zhong!! Offer up your women for everyone's enjoyment! If this Daddy is happy, I will help you seek favour with Young Master Li, and let you off with your life being worse than a dog! Haha!"

"Yue Zhong! Crawl under Young Master Li's legs! Then let this daddy hit your bottom! I'll help you with your arsehole, lest those in the jail cells get you first! Haha!!"

"....."

Various vicious words and insults came from the members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad. There wasn't a single decent person within them, and the moment they began cursing, they seemed to have forgotten their bearings.

Yue Zhong's eyes emitted a strong cold killing intent, as he pulled out a walkie-talkie and barked coldly: "Kill them all!!"

At that instant, various M4s started pointing out from the headquarters of the Green Stone Triad, and at the next moment, a torrential spray of bullets came raining down on the Heavenly Dragon Triad, policemen as well as the soldiers of Chang Yu Feng.

"Ah!!"

"Help!!"

"Ah!!"

"It hurts!!"

"Save me!!"

"....."

Without enough time to react or defend, under the rain of bullets numerous men immediately slumped to the ground in pools of blood, and those who were not instantly killed were screaming and wailing in pain and agony.

Yue Zhong waved his hands, pulling out a .05 submachine gun and charged at the group of soldiers brought by Chang Yu Feng as he fired wildly.

The unfortunate soldiers were instantly decimated, with all of them being fired upon in a flash.

No one had expected for Yue Zhong to retaliate in such a decisive and vicious manner. He had not even spoken a single sentence to them, and immediately acted, causing his enemies to die without warning.

At the same time, from behind the group of soldiers led by Chang Yu Feng, White Bones leapt out and fired out various bone spikes in all directions, piercing the heads of the soldiers that were not yet dead.

The densely packed Heavenly Dragon Triad had immediately collapsed and scattered the moment a few of their men were fired upon, as the rest began to escape in various directions.

"Damn animal!!" Chang Yu Feng's eyes were bloodshot as he roared out while ducking for cover. His entire company of soldiers had been steadfast comrades of his for many years! However, today they were actually killed like slaughtered animals, and he was instantly filled with fury and hatred at Yue Zhong!!

It must be known that the entire company were elite soldiers, who could hold their own in long battles. Such an elite force was actually taken out in an instant at Yue Zhong's hands, and Chang Yu Feng was filled with fury and agony.

"How did it become like this?! How did it become like this!! Ah!!! I don't want to die!! Save me!! Save me!!" Li Hong Zhi looked in horror at the dying or dead members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and policemen around him. He was thoroughly frightened and had pissed himself in fear, at the same time wailing in fright.

"Young Master!! Quickly, we must escape!!" A powerful Evolver

appeared in front of Li Hong Zhi as he activated an [Air Barrier] and blocked the bullets. Another Evolver began to pull at Li Hong Zhi as they tried to run.

Those who engaged in the arts, culture or martial techniques, they would provide services for the royals and nobles. This was a long-time tradition in China. Many experts liked the high-flyer lifestyle, and since Li Jiu Ming was one of the top dogs in Guilin City, he naturally employed a number of experts.

Yue Zhong looked towards Bai Xiao Sheng beside him, who replied almost immediately: "I'll go! You want him dead, or alive?"

Yue Zhong replied mildly: "If alive, I want to see him, if dead, I want his corpse!"

"Yes! Leader!!" Bai Xiao Sheng chuckled and disappeared in a flash, towards the direction where Li Hong Zhi escaped towards.

Yue Zhong made a flashy example of an entire company of soldiers, as well as a number of policemen. This was already tantamount to declaring war against the powers of Guilin City. Since it was like this, Bai Xiao Sheng had immediately discarded the pretext of calling boss, and immediately referred to him respectfully as Leader.

Chang Yu Feng, who was hiding behind a corner, bellowed out in rage: "Yue Zhong!!! Stop! Are you trying to revolt? Guilin City has an entire regiment, to deal with a terrorist like you, is simply a matter of time. It's not too late to stop!! If you surrender now, I can seek leniency on your behalf, and definitely will not pursue this!!"

Yue Zhong's gaze was extremely icy as he chuckled: "Enough of your bullshit! I'm giving you 3 seconds! You can choose to die with the rest of your comrades, or surrender!"

Not pursuing matters, was a lie told to bluff children. In such an era where everyone sought their own benefits, everyone knew that those in power would definitely pursue matters. Yue Zhong had

already decided to take matters into his hands, and had no intention to go back.

Just as they were having their exchange, White Bones flew about with its bone blades, and numerous soldiers were dying left, right and centre. After facing a huge monster horde, White Bones had evolved to a fearsome level, and possessed incredible combat strength.

"I surrender!!"

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!!"

"....."

Facing that gruesome slaughter, a number of the soldiers and remaining members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad cried out as they disposed of their weapons and immediately submitted. The casualty and death toll was simply too terrifying, and even a number of experts that were brought along had been casually killed by the Evolvers on Yue Zhong's side. They had thoroughly collapsed.

Chang Yu Feng looked at his miserable troops and the pathetic members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and gritted his teeth, before trying to get away towards the direction of the army camp: "Damn it!! Yue Zhong's rebellion must be made known to the Regiment Commander!!"

Soon, the entire grounds in front of the Green Stone Triad was filled with corpses, and the kneeling members of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and soldiers who had lost their bravado.

Not long after, the hundreds of members of the Heaven Union who Yue Zhong brought back from the small town came and saw the carnage, and their faces fell.

One Heaven Union expert could not help but asked Yue Zhong pointedly and loudly: "Yue Zhong!! What's the meaning of this?! Are you trying to revolt?"

When that question burst out, everyone's eyes swivelled towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong glanced at that member and chuckled: "No! I want to control the entire Guilin City!! Those who're willing to work with me stand on the right! Those who aren't, go to the left!! I'm giving you 10 seconds to consider! 10, 9....."

Right as Yue Zhong started his countdown, members of the Green Stone Triad immediately raised their guns and pointed at the crowd.

Those experts who had followed Yue Zhong loyally also stood and gazed at the crowd with an intensity.

Under those circumstances, many of the experts were smart enough to stand on the right. They might not agree with Yue Zhong's actions, but faced with those circumstances, they could only bow their heads, and no matter how unwilling they were, they could not show it.

However, there were 15 Heaven Union experts who directly stood on Yue Zhong's left, obviously expressing their disagreement.

One young university student stared at Yue Zhong in a righteous manner as he declared: "Yue Zhong! If you want to destroy the Heavenly Dragon Triad? I'm willing to be the first to help! But if you want to revolt, I, Zhang He, am the first to disagree!!"

Yue Zhong looked at those experts and his eyes flashed coldly, before his gaze landed on Zhang He as he said indifferently: "Since this is the case, then you guys can die! Do it!"

The moment Yue Zhong's words landed, a sharp bone blade shot out explosively from the side, piercing the 15 experts standing on the left, spraying a huge amount of blood.

One of the Heaven Union experts who was an Agility-based Evolver had been on alert since he stood on the left side, and the moment the bone blade appeared, he had leapt upwards, intending

to dart to one side.

Yue Zhong casually raised his Stinger and fired a single explosive shot, causing the Heaven Union expert to stop and be split in two by whitebones.

Another Heaven Union member brandished a blade, and a blade beam appeared, forcefully blocking the bone spike. However, another blade came towards him from his blind side, decapitating him with similarly lightning speed.

The righteous sounding Zhang He had been pierced in the heart by another bone spike.

In a manner of seconds, the dozen of Heaven Union experts had been slaughtered cleanly by Yue Zhong, their blood dying the ground red.

Witnessing this, all the remaining Heaven Union members felt their heart turn cold, and were fearful towards Yue Zhong's decisive methods.

Yue Zhong eyed them and barked out coldly: "I know that there are some of you guys who are still not satisfied! I don't care! I have utmost confidence in conquering Guilin City. If you guys help me, I naturally would not neglect you. If there are any of you who dares to create chaos, not only will I kill you, your family and close loved ones will become slaves and trophies of the victors!!

Zhang Zhi Hao's brows lifted as he immediately called out: "I accept Union Leader Yue as the Leader! Long live Leader!"

"We accept Union Leader Yue as the Leader! Long live Leader!

"....."

Many of the remaining Heaven Union experts cursed Zhang Zhi Hao for kissing the horse's ass, but they also could not help but clamour to express their loyalty. In a situation where no one dared to stand out, they could only forcefully lend a hand to Yue Zhong.

Zheng Ming He came to Yue Zhong, as he hesitated a while before asking: "Leader! Isn't it too early to be acting now?"

Zheng Ming He had long since known of Yue Zhong's ambitions for Guilin City, but their current foothold was not strong enough. Furthermore, that Du Shan Xiong was leading a regiment of border guards that had exterminated a huge number of zombies after all.

Zheng Ming He could not think of any way they had as a motley bunch against the elite troops of Du Shan Xiong.

Yue Zhong glanced at Zheng Ming He and ordered coldly: "Bring some men and follow me!!"

Under Yue Zhong's orders, the entire Green Stone Triad was activated, and immediately equipped the 3 battalions' worth of equipment.

Yue Zhong then gathered all his manpower as they made their way towards the granary of Guilin City.

In this post-apocalypse, food was the most precious resource. That granary happened to be the only weak point of Guilin City. Without food, even a 100,000-strong army would be wiped out in a battle of attrition.

Since Yue Zhong had suddenly attacked, there was almost no resistance along the way, and there was no one who could stop him anyway. He quickly brought his troops right in front of the granary.

The importance of the granary in Guilin City was known to everyone. Inside the granary, there was a company of soldiers stationed as well as 40 Enhancers of above Level 30. No matter who tried to tackle the granary, would face the instant retaliation of an elite troop.

Chapter 425: Snatching the Granary!

As Yue Zhong and his troops were nearing the granary, a dense hail of bullets came raining down on them from the granary, and killed a number of soldiers who had just undergone training recently.

The moment those soldiers were killed, the 3 battalions of soldiers instantly lost their composure, dodging behind cover, with signs of collapsing.

Although Yue Zhong had 3 battalions' worth of equipment, those equipping were people who had not yet undergone much training, and they naturally could not act like troops yet.

Larman found Yue Zhong and said: "Leader! Let me do it!"

Larman was in control of a platoon of elite soldiers, at the same time, he had chosen a few selected foreigners under him to undergo training 24/7. By now, he had a company's worth of elite troops. These foreigners were in foreign territory, and in order to live on and gain a better life, they were extremely valiant when fighting. In the battle at the small town, many of them had achieved numerous merits. Larman's foreign troops was one of the most capable troops under Yue Zhong's command now.

Hu Yi also came over as he urged Yue Zhong: "Bro!! Let me do it!! As long as I can get close to them, those fellows wouldn't even know what hit them!"

Yue Zhong eyed the direction of the granary and solemnly declared: "No need. Defend the back properly and await my orders!"

Around the granary, there were various constructions and defence fortifications erected. Without any heavy firepower, it was difficult to shake those defences. Yue Zhong was also lacking explosives. If he were to let the others attack, it would not prove to

be of much difference.

After leaving his orders, he activated his [Shadow Steps] and immediately charged towards the granary with White Bones beside him.

The commanding officer of the granary defence troops looked at Yue Zhong and White Bones rushing over and could not help but grin coldly: "Fools! Open fire!"

There was, of course, a battalion stationed at the granary. The commander, Chai Zi Cang, was the brother-in-law of Du Shan Xiong and the battalion under his control was one of the stronger battalions amongst Du Shan Xiong's troops. They were naturally unafraid of 2 attacking experts. In his opinion, it didn't matter who came before him, facing those heavy firearms, they would be turned to ash.

In an instant, those various defence points around the granary opened fire, and all sorts of ammunition, rifle bullets, light machine gun ammo, and even grenades came flying and blanketed the entire area that Yue Zhong and White Bones were running through.

In the surrounding area of 500m, it was seemingly wiped clean. There was no cover, and it seemed impossible for Yue Zhong and White Bones to evade at all.

Just when Yue Zhong and White Bones were about to be enveloped by the barrage of flying lead and soon to be shrapnel, the Level 5 Bronze Spiritual Bell came flying out from Yue Zhong's chest pocket and floated above his head, creating a green shield, and when the bullets landed on that shield, they bounced off.

And White Bones was basically impervious to most bullets anyway, as the bullets landed on it, they just directly bounced away as well.

When Chai Zi Cang saw the bullets having no effect on the two,

his expression turned to one of horror as he immediately ordered his men. "Experts? Quick, switch to the heavy firearms!! Red Arrows!! Grenade Launchers!! Artillery!! Blast the ever living shit out of them!!"

Very quickly, rounds of heavy fire started falling on the location of Yue Zhong and White Bones.

However, the speed of both Yue Zhong and White Bones was too fast, and the moment the heavy rounds had landed on where they were, Yue Zhong and White Bones had already breached the entrance of the granary.

Yue Zhong activated his skill at the first notice, and a 70m-long Type 2 Green Jiao-Python appeared out of thin air.

When the Type 2 Green Jiao-Python appeared, it immediately spat out a huge gas of poison fog around itself as defence. Following which, it charged towards the granary like a tank, all the while swallowing the resisting soldiers along the way.

The Type 2 Green Jiao-Python was surrounded by its deadly poison, and anything that it came into contact with would immediately corrode. As it charged through the granary, it was invincible, and no one could stop it. Any soldier who saw it immediately lost their wits, as they tried to escape from it.

The might of a Type 2 Mutant Beast like the Green Jiao-Python was perfect for an all-out assault, as its size could pressure the weaker ordinary humans, at the same time, suppressing any potential resistance.

The Type 2 Green Jiao-Python spat out another round of poisonous gas, and 6, 7 soldiers hiding behind a cover immediately dissolved into a puddle. When it opened its mouth, it could easily gobble another soldier up. When it smashed into an unfortunate soldier, the impact was enough to tear the person from within, bones snapping and all. It went on a rampage amongst the soldiers, causing carnage and mayhem everywhere.

At this critical juncture, the 40 experts that had been hiding within the crowd of soldiers finally made their appearance.

"Heaven Union! Charge!!" Yue Zhong then issued a command through a walkie-talkie.

Hu Yi had been temporarily placed in control over the Heaven Union, and when he received the order, he roared out excitedly: "Everybody!! Charge!! Those who don't, I'll personally chop off your heads!!"

The bulk of the defences and fire points had been destroyed by Yue Zhong, and the Heaven Union followed closely behind Hu Yi as they charged into the granary.

When they saw the scene of carnage inside the granary, their hearts turned cold, and many of those Heaven Union members who were absorbed by Yue Zhong immediately surrounded the 40 military experts.

There were over hundreds of experts in the Heaven Union, and after the baptism of that life-and-death battle at the small town, everyone had emerged so much stronger. Hundreds of experts against 40 military experts, even those who were not willing to submit to Yue Zhong, easily subdued the military experts.

Collapse, total collapse. The moment the experts from the Heaven Union joined in the fray, with Yue Zhong and White Bones as the vanguards, in a manner of minutes, the entire granary had been cleared of any resistance.

Chai Zi Cang looked around at the mayhem and his face turned pale as he slumped to the ground: "It's over!! The granary is finished!! Guilin City is finished!!"

One of the intelligence soldiers! immediately grabbed Chai Zi Cang as he shook him and exclaimed: "Commander!! It's still not over!! Although Yue Zhong had snatched the granary! The troops in his hands are not a match for the Regiment Commander! I'm

guessing that he wants to negotiate!! Let's surrender first!!"

Chai Zi Cang immediately brightened up as he grabbed the hands of his intelligence officer: "That's right!! Negotiations!! He will definitely want to negotiate!! Bring me to him!!"

The moment Chai Zi Cang decided to surrender, all the fighting ceased within the Granary, different companies of the soldiers immediately surrendered, and became Yue Zhong's captives.

"I'm Chai Zi Cang, the Commanding Officer of the unit here, I want to see Yue Zhong!!"

Under the forceful request of Chai Zi Cang, 2 soldiers led him towards a room.

Only to discover that seated in a sofa of the room, there was an extremely young man, and beside him on the left was a cool-looking beauty, and on the right, an adorable loli. The cold-looking young beauty was currently cooling a cup of warm milk for the young man, while the loli was currently peeling wild grapes, and using her small hands to feed the young man.

Chai Zi Cang glanced at the young man sitting at the sofa enjoying the treatment as he asked woodenly: "I'm Chai Zi Cang, the commander of the military unit here! You must be Yue Zhong?"

Yue Zhong glanced at Chai Zi Cang and pointed to opposite the sofa, as he replied indifferently: "I'm Yue Zhong, Sit!"

Chai Zi Cang sat down at the indicated place, as he stared at Yue Zhong and asked: "Yue Zhong, Why did you rebel? This will cause unrest amongst the citizens, and although you have snatched the granary now, your strength is insufficient to defend it!! The moment the army of the Regiment Commander reaches, your troops will suffer. There might be some misunderstanding between us, let's talk properly."

Yue Zhong smiled lightly and replied: "Commander Chai, I've

mobilized my troops because I was forced to!! I was forced into a corner by that Li Hong Zhi and Chang Yu Feng those scum, and had no choice but to act in self-defence. Against the army of Regiment Commander Du, I know I have no way of defending against him. But what if, I decide to raze the granary to the ground! What do you think will happen?"

When Chai Zi Cang heard up to this point, his heart turned incredibly cold. In this granary, there was a few hundred thousand tonnes of rations. The entire populace of Guilin City depended on this place. If the entire place was razed, all order in Guilin City would then collapse. Without the support of rations, no matter how capable Du Shan Xiong's troops were, his subordinates will quickly collapse, and the entire regiment would be lost.

Chai Zi Cang stood up and exclaimed loudly: "How can you do that!! If you were to raze this place, it would cause the deaths of over hundreds of thousands of people!! Are you that cruel? It's the lives of hundreds of thousands of Chinese!!!"

Yue Zhong's gaze turned cold as he looked at Chai Zi Cang: "I didn't want this result! But, whoever wants my life, will have to pay the proper price! If I'm forced to a corner, then I couldn't care less about the lives of hundreds of thousands of people!"

Chai Zi Cang looked at Yue Zhong and his expression changed numerous times, in the end he sat down in silence. He didn't dare to provoke Yue Zhong further. If Yue Zhong truly set fire to the place, the entire Guilin City would be doomed.

Yue Zhong watched as Chai Zi Cang sat down helplessly, and his expression changed, as he smiled: "However, it's not like there's nothing to discuss. I personally hope to be able to have a good discussion with Regiment Commander Du! I hope that Commander Chai can help me convey a message on my behalf."

Chai Zi Cang mulled over for a while, as his heart regained a glimmer of hope: "Fine."

When Yue Zhong mobilized his troops and revolted, the entire Guilin City went into shock and a number of opportunists also emerged. Many people began to engage in their own forms of destruction, as a number of mobs took to the streets and plundered, and robbed, giving in to the inner demons. The entire city seemed to be plunged in chaos.

The government also responded fairly quickly, as countless policemen and special forces were dispatched to quell the chaos. Du Shan Xiong who was stationed out of Guilin City also rushed back with his troops.

Chapter 426: Threats

Just as Du Shan Xiong's troops had the granary surrounded, Chai Zi Cang came walking out from the troops of Yue Zhong, and returned to Du Shan Xiong.

In an emergency command post, Chai Zi Cang saw his superior Du Shan Xiong.

Du Shan Xiong was decked in a neat military uniform, and his brows radiated a strict and no-nonsense attitude. He had a few signs of white hair, and his body was radiating a strong soldier aura. He listened to Chai Zi Cang's account of the events quietly, as his brows furrowed deeper with each passing moment: "He really threatened to burn the granary down?"

The entire Guilin City relied on the granary to live, and if the hundred thousands tonnes of rations were to be burnt down, Guilin City was sure to fall.

Chai Zi Cang eyed Du Shan Xiong, and knew that this superior of his was reaching the boiling point, but he still bit the bullet to reply: "Yes!"

Du Shan Xiong erupted in rage, and slammed down strongly on the table, causing his right hand to become numb as he roared: "Dammit! He's a terrorist that doesn't consider the big picture!!"

In this apocalyptic world, not all high-ranking officials were powerful enhancers. The strong ones tend to be fighting at the frontlines, hence a lot of the commanders behind the scenes were ordinary people. If the head was not safe, the walls will definitely crumble, and one could not expect an old fart with experts protecting him to be wielding a Tang Replica Sword and hacking a zombie.

Yue Zhong had met numerous leaders of factions who were Enhancers in their own right. This was because, when the world

had gone to shit, only those with strength had the ability to convince the masses. Without any capabilities, no one would give two hoots.

One of the intelligence officer, Liu Xuan, came up to Du Shan Xiong and asked: "Regiment Commander! Shall we proceed with eliminating them?"

Du Shan Xiong's expression was extremely unsightly as he rebuked: "Eliminate them? What if they really burn the place down? What will you guys eat then?! You pig-brain!"

The intelligence officer's face fell when he was reprimanded and he immediately scooted back, his face flushed with embarrassment.

Harsh scoldings were a common occurrence in the military. Du Shan Xiong might be the Regiment Commander, but he came from a low military background as he worked his way up, and when he was enraged, his curses were not easy on the ears.

Du Shan Xiong calmed down as he stared fixedly at Chai Zi Cang and asked: "What are his terms?"

Chai Zi Cang seemed to hesitate, but he gritted his teeth and replied: "Regiment Commander! He wants you to pull your troops back by 10 li, otherwise he will burn the place in 1 hour! The moment we launch an assault, he would kill all our brothers that are held captive!"

When Du Shan Xiong heard that, he became even more enraged and stood straight up, almost bellowing: "He can forget about it!! I, Du Shan Xiong will never cower before threats!!! Chai Zi Cang, immediately go and tell that bastard, bring his men out to surrender now! Otherwise, when my army charges in, they will all die without a body to bury!!"

"Regiment Commander!! We can't do that!!"

"Regiment Commander!! Be appeased!!"

"....."

The various intelligence officers immediately crowded around as they tried to dissuade him. They did not think that their troops could not match against Yue Zhong. On the contrary, they were worried that Yue Zhong would really raze the granary to the ground, then that would truly spell the end of their troops. Without rations, no one would help to fight battles.

When they tried to dissuade him, Du Shan Xiong got even more furious, and pulled out the pistol by his waist and shouted: "Enough!! Whoever dares to say anything more, I will execute him on the spot! I want to see if Yue Zhong really dares to burn down the granary!!"

When Du Shan Xiong lost his temper, all his subordinates immediately quietened down. His temper was explosive, and when he lost it, it was impossible for anyone to stop him. If any one of them truly lost their lives to his temper, it wouldn't be worth it.

Right at this time, another commander came rushing into the command post with a pale face as he reported shrilly: "Regiment Commander!! Not good!!! Yue Zhong is starting to burn the granary!! One of the ration stores has already been set aflame!!!"

Du Shan Xiong immediately felt like a cold bucket of water had been poured on him, as he trembled: "What!?! He's burning the granary!!"

Although Du Shan Xiong was bad tempered, he wasn't an idiot, and he was well aware of the consequences once Yue Zhong burns down the granary. It would be hell and Guilin City would lose all sense of its order. The regiment that he painstakingly established would be dissolved in a matter of days.

Chai Zi Cang's eyes were bloodshot by now as he knelt on the floor in front of Du Shan Xiong and begged miserably: "Regiment Commander!! Let's retreat!! He's truly going to burn the place down!! For the sake of our brothers of the 8th Regiment and the

people of Guilin City, please retreat now!!"

"Regiment Commander!! Let's retreat!!"

"Retreat, please!!"

"....."

All the intelligence officers also started to plead.

Du Shan Xiong raised his hand weakly to wipe his forehead, as he closed his eyes and spat out in agony: "Pull back!!"

"Yes!!"

Receiving his orders, all the intelligence officers immediately issued the commands to pull back.

The huge army that was surrounding Yue Zhong swiftly retreated back towards Guilin City.

"They've finally retreated!!" Inside the granary, Yue Zhong eyed the swift retreat of Du Shan Xiong's army, and heaved a sigh of relief.

Yue Zhong was also aware of the consequences of burning the granary. Guilin City would lose its stability and order, and Du Shan Xiong's troops would also not be able to quell the chaos, before they themselves collapsed from the gravity of the situation.

But if it was like this, then even if Yue Zhong did his utmost to save as many as he could, there would be countless who would be caught up in the fight for food and the ensuing chaos. Yue Zhong was also unwilling to witness such a scene.

Bai Xiao Sheng came up to Yue Zhong and asked loudly: "Leader, why don't we just burn the place down? As long as we burn it, Guilin City would be plunged into chaos and mayhem. Du Shan Xiong won't be able to control his army, wouldn't that be the best case scenario for us?"

Bai Xiao Sheng was also smart, and he had seen Yue Zhong only using a few thousand tonnes of rations to scare the army into

retreating, and knew of the underlying reason. To them who had no foothold in such a place, having Guilin City implode from within would be the best for them.

Yue Zhong eyed Bai Xiao Sheng before replying with a solemn tone: "If we burn the granary, Guilin City would lose over ten thousand people at least. How can I do that?! This is our China after all!"

If it was overseas, Yue Zhong could care less about the granaries and number of deaths. As long as it met his objectives, he would do so. If he could use a single fire to burn the ration supplies of Wu Yan Hong, he would not hesitate to do so.

Bai Xiao Sheng asked curiously: "Then Leader, why can't we directly use the chance to force Du Shan Xiong to submit? That way, won't the entire Guilin City land in our hands?"

Yue Zhong eyed the retreating tanks and cannons as he replied slowly: "What if they decided to risk it all and fight it out? If we compare strength, we're simply not their match. Furthermore, if we go through with it, they might really lose their army, so what? If the number of us that makes it out alive can be more than 20%, that would be impressive."

If Du Shan Xiong really went crazy and unleashed everything to eliminate Yue Zhong, it wouldn't be hard. Under the intense barrage of heavy firearms, the moment Yue Zhong was unlucky to be hit by one, he would also be sent directly to heaven. Not to mention any other Enhancer.

Furthermore, Yue Zhong had established the Heaven Union and had absorbed a number of experts who were willing to work for him, there were some who were unwilling, but were forced to submit because of his strength, and many others who just followed the strongest. In a single blast, the Heaven Union would definitely collapse and disintegrate.

It wasn't an era where you could gain favour just by saving

someone's life, instead, it was one where, even if you helped to pick an old granny who had unfortunately fallen, it becomes a case of her suing you for knocking her down. Saving someone else's life would not guarantee gratitude nor repayment. Hence, whatever Yue Zhong did, it was aimed for benefits, even the saving of Mu Xiang Ling and her mother back then was not without motive.

There were many decent folk out there in the current world. However, it was going to be tough for them to become a capable leader, nor a dignified hero.

Du Shan Xiong did not dare commit such an act because it was the granary, the moment Yue Zhong razed everything, both parties would be reduced to a level where they were equal, only then could negotiations continue.

Yue Zhong mulled for a while, before ordering Bai Xiao Sheng: "Go get Dan Hong over here."

Dan Hong was called by Bai Xiao Sheng, and he came up to Yue Zhong and asked carefully: "Boss Yue, what's the matter?"

Dan Hong was a smart man, and he knew he would lose his position as a superintendent. Without his position, he was nothing, and his value as low as could be. He could only firmly grasp onto Yue Zhong's leg and lower himself. Otherwise, the moment Yue Zhong kicked him out, he would not live to see another day.

Yue Zhong eyed Dan Hong and replied solemnly: "You shall represent me to negotiate with them! My bottomline is that 20,000 tonnes of the rations here shall be mine! The rest of the rations can belong to whoever else, I won't care! I can let people transport the rations out everyday, but the place will be under my watch. At the same time, Guilin City needs to release all those who worked for me, no one is to stop them. If anyone harms my people, it would be handled according to my rules. Lastly, go inform them of the betrayal as well as the cause of today's matters, those bastards and

cowards including Di Ya from Heavenly Dragon Triad, as well as Lu Tao, Chen Luo Yan, Shen Jiang He, Gao Ming Hao.... I want the heads of those bastards! Do this well, and I will definitely reward you!!"

There were currently 500,000 tonnes of rations in the granary, and they had been amassed by Du Shan Xiong's constant effort in scouring the outside vicinity. Yue Zhong also knew he could single handedly swallow everything up, hence he did not request too much.

"Yes! Your subordinate promises to finish his task!" Hearing those words, Dan Hong was elated, but cold as well. He was excited that Yue Zhong was finally using him. If this negotiation went well, he would definitely have a place by Yue Zhong's side. What made his heart cold was, Yue Zhong had actually called for the heads of so many upper echelons of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad. He could truly hold a grudge and was vicious, but most importantly, it was a tall request.

Chapter 427: Negotiations Begin!

Inside the meeting hall of the Guilin City's government building, the 2 factions from Guilin City and Nan Ning City had come together, with the old farts from the military as they began to discuss the matter of Yue Zhong who had gained control over the granary.

Li Jiu Ming's face was grim with fury as he said: "Yue Zhong and the rest are a virus to us! They will spread. I reckon we should use our forces to wipe him out immediately!! We definitely cannot give in to his terrorist threats! The moment we give in once, there will be a second time, or even third time!! We need to maintain our firm stance, and fight it out with him!!"

Li Hong Zhi was the only son of Li Jiu Ming and he was precious to him. Li Jiu Ming was getting on in years and thus, doted on his son to the point of excessively spoiling him. When he heard that Li Hong Zhi had been killed on Yue Zhong's orders, his logic and reasoning had gone out the window, and everything in his mind was only about getting revenge by killing Yue Zhong.

Hearing Li Jiu Ming's words, everyone in the meeting room frowned. If they forcefully launched an assault on Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong could just casually set the granary ablaze, and the entire Guilin City would fall together with him.

When that time comes, other than a few influential people with their own reserves, the rest who relied on their ration tickets would definitely go crazy. These upper echelons would also be torn apart by the frenzied people in the chaos.

When people are forced to a corner, as long as a person can incite their feelings, and turn it into a formidable force, the entire city would lose its sense of order and stability.

In fact, if the government had not clamped down on the news regarding Yue Zhong snatching the granary, the entire city might

have been plunged into chaos.

For the sake of their own families, even the trusted aides of Li Jiu Ming were not willing to support him, as they kept silent.

Right at this time, Guilin City's mayor Chen Ying spoke calmly: "I disagree!! I believe that we should seek peaceful settlements with Yue Zhong! He had not yet burnt the granary, which means that it's possible to negotiate! We can talk things out! Regarding the cause of the matter, it was primarily the fault of some comrades here who had failed in the teachings of their children, allowing them to run amok with people of ill intentions, becoming the umbrella to protect them. They then caused problems and forced Yue Zhong to a corner. I suggest that we let the Disciplinary Committee and the Police Force to jointly form an investigative team, and get to the bottom of this."

Li Jiu Ming's face turned ugly, and slammed down on the table, as he pointed at Chen Ying and asked furiously: "Chen Ying! Are you suggesting that I am the backer of the evil forces? Do you have proof? If not, don't slander people maliciously!! At that time, if it wasn't for me, could you have become the mayor of this Guilin City?"

When Chen Ying heard these words, his face also turned ugly. Initially, he had the opportunity to become the mayor of Guilin City, was largely due to some help from Li Jiu Ming.

However, in this day and age, those who did not know how to curry favour would not be able to become politicians. Although Chen Ying was always doing it, and had the bad habits of those who constantly seek to elevate themselves, he could be considered to be a decent politician. He brought up his kids with decent values, and were unlike most of the other officials who stepped on the ordinary citizens. Comparing him with Li Jiu Ming, was like a gulf between Heaven and Earth.

At this time, Chen Ying's trusted aide An Chang Sheng, who

happened to be the former deputy secretary of law spoke up: "I personally feel that Mayor Li Jiu Ming is not fit to continue to help govern over the Nan Ning people. I suggest that we will form a provisional assembly to cast a vote, on removing Li Jiu Ming from his position temporarily, handing him to the Discipline Committee to conduct their investigations!"

After which, An Chang Sheng immediately raised his hands.

Under the wolf-like gaze of Li Jiu Ming, amongst the 2 parties, a number of officials also started raising their hands in favour of removing Li Jiu Ming from his post.

Suddenly, even the hand of somebody Li Jiu Ming had never expected to raise, was raised. Seeing that, Li Jiu Ming's heart trembled, as he gritted and spat out: "Good!! I never thought that even you will betray me! Wang Ru He!!"

Wang Ru He was a secretary of the Political and Law Division in Nan Ning City, and had been boosted up by Li Jiu Ming. They had become the de facto leaders of the Nan Ning City after the apocalypse, and both had close ties. Li Jiu Ming did not expect that Wang Ru He would stab him in the back when he was down just to get his share of power.

Wang Ru He looked at Li Jiu Ming with pity as he remarked: "Li Jiu Ming! You're crazy! We can't go crazy with you, just to be buried together!"

Wang Ru He was truly on good terms with Li Jiu Ming, but even he was unwilling to risk the entire Guilin City to antagonize Yue Zhong. Furthermore, by taking down Li Jiu Ming, then he would replace Li Jiu Ming as the leader of the Nan Ning City's side. Who would decline power?

Chen Ying eyed Li Jiu Ming who had his powers stripped as he mildly commented: "The votes are in! From now on, Li Jiu Ming is temporarily removed from his role!"

Li Jiu Ming's eyes were bloodshot as he snarled loudly: "I don't accept this!! I'm a provincial leader!! You want to remove me from my position?!! You'll need to go through the proper channels!! What are you guys considered? You want to dismiss me? This is not following protocol!!"

Li Jiu Ming knew that the moment he lost the identity as Nan Ning City's mayor, he would die quickly. This was not a world where people bothered about human rights.

At this time, 2 Discipline Committee members came in and announced: "Comrade Li Jiu Ming! We are from the Discipline Committee! Please come with us!"

Li Jiu Ming took a look and suddenly seemed to realise something, as he swivelled to stare at Chen Ying with a venomous look: "Very good! Chen Ying!! You have already planned this beforehand! Seems like whatever I say, it'll be useless! Then I shall go with you, but you guys will surely regret this!!"

After which, Li Jiu Ming followed the 2 members as he was handcuffed and led away.

Right as Li Jiu Ming left, Dan Hong came into the meeting hall, and he was flanked by Bai Xiao Sheng acting as his guard.

Chen Ying pointed towards Dan Hong as he introduced him to the rest: "Let me introduce to everyone! This is the negotiator Yue Zhong has sent, Dan Hong!"

After that, Chen Ying proceeded to introduce all the members in the meeting hall to Dan Hong.

Now that Yue Zhong had forcefully snatched the granary, nobody knew what the future would hold. Although both parties of the government despised Dan Hong, they used a fervent attitude to greet him.

Dan Hong saw that all these upper government officials which he had to bend over backwards for in the past, greeting him warmly,

and he could not help but feel excited.

Du Shan Xiong glanced at Dan Hong, his face sullen: "Dan Hong!! Yue Zhong asked you to come, what does he have for us?"

Dan Hong opened his mouth and controlled his excitement, saying: "Truthfully, this time, we're completely innocent! The Heavenly Dragon Triad, and Green Bamboo Triad had betrayed the entire Guilin City at the mountain range. It was our Leader that singlehandedly unified the remaining experts and defended against the 200,000-strong Mutant Beast horde, and saved the 900,000 people of Guilin City! However, how did you guys treat our leader and saviour? The Heavenly Dragon Triad assigned some people to assassinate his parents, and you guys stood by and did nothing. That can be forgotten, but after that, you guys still brought troops to surround the subordinates of my Leader, and everyone present insulted and humiliated my Leader. Let me ask, why is the saviour of our Guilin City was going to be humiliated, insulted, and put to death, while those evil forces are to go free?!! Who can sit idly by and do nothing? Who would still be willing to work hard for Guilin City? Our Leader just wants answers and compensation, and that shows his magnanimity already!!"

When Bai Xiao Sheng heard all these, he almost could not control his facial expression, as the corner of his mouth twitched slightly, almost breaking out into laughter.

Yue Zhong in fact dealt with the Mutant Beast horde because he was forced to, otherwise he would have fallen at their jaws as well. It was purely a selfish reason that motivated him to give his all. However, from Dan Hong's mouth, it seemed as though Yue Zhong had suddenly become a hero that fought for everyone in Guilin City. Furthermore, the Heavenly Dragon Triad was truly insidious, however, Yue Zhong himself wasn't particularly decent, and if there was a comparison, Yue Zhong was a maverick that could go against people as and when he so desired. Compared to the Heavenly Dragon Triad, Yue Zhong was more dangerous.

It was obvious that Dan Hong was lying through his teeth with no remorse, as he casually twisted some facts towards Yue Zhong's favour. Of course, it was to be expected from someone who was adept at navigating the line between good and evil, having weaved through various situations.

Chen Ying was an old fox himself, and knew that not all of what Dan Hong said was true, but they had no choice but to bow, and following the flow of the conversation, he laughed and replied: "Our Guilin City is a righteous place of peace and order. We will definitely not let heroes bleed nor cry. Those evildoers with backers are at most a stain on our otherwise decent society. Since those people are facing judgement as we speak, will Yue Zhong be returning us the granary?"

Dan Hong sipped his cup of tea, and calmed down, mulling over the conditions from Yue Zhong and repeated them slowly: "Firstly: The rations in the granary, 200,000 thousand tonnes shall be ours! The rest can be divided according to your own side! We will allow people to transport the rations out, but the granary will be guarded by our people. Secondly: Guilin City has to release all the people who had worked for us, no one is to block them. If anyone had harmed or injured our men, it will be handled according to our rules. Thirdly: We want the heads of all the upper echelons of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad. Only by satisfying our 3 conditions, Guilin City's rations won't go up in smoke. We won't do anything that lets Guilin City down!"

Chen Ying frowned as he tried to bargain: "The 3rd condition can be settled. However, 200,000 tonnes of rations!! It's too much!! At most, we can give you guys 50,000 tonnes. Furthermore, the granary is a key location, how can we just let you guys expend your forces to keep watch over it alone? We can send some people over. As for the 2nd condition, our Guilin City is a proper city, everyone has to be judged accordingly, we can't let your faction enjoy special treatment!!"

"No way...." Inside his heart, Dan Hong was elated. Yue Zhong had requested for 20,000 tonnes of rations, and just by opening his mouth, he had gained 30,000 tonnes more. This was proof of his efficient and effective handling. However, he maintained a straight face, and directly rejected, before offering a counter-proposal.

Chapter 428: Assassination! The Situation Spirals Out of Control!

Just as Dan Hong was engaged in negotiations with Chen Ying and the rest, the 2 Discipline Committee members were currently holding Li Jiu Ming in a small room.

All of a sudden, the door of the room was kicked open, and 4 men in special forces uniform rushed into the room, their hands wielding daggers as they attacked the 2 members of the Committee.

In a manner of seconds, the 2 employees of the committee were pierced in the hearts by the dagger-wielding assassins, and they slumped lifelessly to the ground.

Seeing the bloody scene, Li Jiu Ming's face turned pale, as his body trembled. He raised his numb hands and asked through gritted teeth: "Who are you people?"

At this time, with an aura of elegance and the natural dominance of a leader, Gao Ming Hao came strolling into the room as he flashed a charming smile at Li Jiu Ming: "Mayor Li, don't you recognize me?"

At that battle against the Mutant Beast horde, Gao Ming Hao had brought his men and escaped fairly quickly. He was decisive and quick, and with his luck, he only lost about a 100 men. Not a single Evolver of the Green Bamboo Triad was lost. His strength had also become much larger than that of the Heavenly Dragon Triad.

Li Jiu Ming's face regained colour as he stared at Gao Ming Hao and coldly replied: "So it's you Gao Ming Hao!! What're you here for? I've already been stripped of my mayor role!"

Li Jiu Ming wasn't an idiot, and he could guess the intentions of Gao Ming Hao coming here.

Gao Ming Hao laid his voice with temptation as he replied:

"Mayor Li, are you going to let those people take away your power then kill you? The debt of your son's death is still not settled, are you just going to let this go?"

The moment Li Jiu Ming was reminded of his precious son's death at the hands of Yue Zhong, his eyes were ablaze with fury again, as he barked out: "Of course I want my revenge!"

Gao Ming Hao chuckled: "Well, there's an opportunity in front of you now! Mayor Li, as long as you work with us, we can work together to gain control of Guilin City. At that time, to kill a single Yue Zhong, all you have to do is pass the command!"

Li Jiu Ming immediately agreed: "Fine! What do you need me to do?"

Gao Ming Hao's pupils narrowed as he asked: "If everyone in that meeting hall was killed, how confident are you in gaining control of the armed forces and the experts in the government?"

The police force, armed forces, as well as the experts under the government control all made up part of a huge force. It was enough to thoroughly exterminate even the likes of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad. After all, the strongest powers in Guilin City were the government and military, if the government didn't have any experts, that would truly be weird.

Li Jiu Ming thought for a while, before replying: "I have 100% confidence in controlling the experts of the Nan Ning City side. As for Guilin City, I don't have that same confidence!"

Li Jiu Ming was after all one of the heads of Guilin City, and naturally had employed a number of experts. With his status, many people were willing to work for him.

Gao Ming Hao directly responded: "Good!! Then I'll trouble you to go convince those troops!! Leave everything here to us! However, once this is over, the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad have to be declared as orthodox triads!"

Li Jiu Ming replied readily: "Sure! This I promise you!"

Wresting control was the most critical part, if he could gain total power, Li Jiu Ming was willing to betray anything right now.

With the agreement, Li Jiu Ming quickly left under the protection of 2 experts.

With the gathering of the 2 sides of the government, as well as the upper echelons of the military, such an important meeting was currently being guarded.

Near the meeting hall, there were 20 elite soldiers, 30 Enhancers of above Level 30 as well as 6 Evolvers standing guard. With such a tight defence, even if Yue Zhong were to lead a team of numerous experts, they would be hard pressed to breach the defence easily. If not dealt with properly, it could spell even the deaths of those on the attacking side.

Right at this time, 6 men dressed ordinarily came strolling with large steps towards the meeting hall.

"Who're you guys?" A soldier called out warily.

A bespectacled man, who looked extremely cultured and well-mannered handed a piece of document to the soldier, saying: "I'm Tan Teng, a secretary of the Committee. These are my verification documents. The air-conditioning of the meeting hall on the 4th storey is malfunctioning! These are repairmen, I have submitted a report prior, you can check it out!"

"Please proceed!" The soldier gave a glance through Tan Teng's documents and identification, before letting them through.

Tan Teng immediately brought the 5 other men in.

After a certain distance, Tan Teng turned around, his expression one of agony as he begged: "This should be fine right!! Please let my daughter go. She's innocent!!"

One burly man coldly retorted: "Secretary Tan! Relax!! As long as

you help us through this, we'll guarantee the safety of your daughter and wife. Move!"

Tan Teng gritted his teeth helplessly as he led the men to the meeting hall.

The 5 of them immediately kicked down the door and rushed in.

One of them was wielding a .05 rifle and he opened fire as he sprayed wildly across the entire room.

Another male immediately activated his skill, brandishing a huge blade as he charged towards Du Shan Xiong like a spectre.

2 of the men pulled out their pistol and proceeded to fire at those officials in the room.

The remaining man pulled out a green dagger, as he made use of a strange movement technique to shorten the distance between him and Chen Ying.

Everything had happened too suddenly, and there was no time for the participants of the meeting to defend themselves, and many fell in a pool of blood as they moaned in agony.

Bai Xiao Sheng had the fastest reaction, the moment things started to go out of control, he had pulled Dan Hong towards a window and broke through it, shouting at the top of his lungs as he went: "Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

Bai Xiao Sheng was extremely experienced, and could tell with a single glance that all 5 intruders were Evolvers. Although they were lower levelled than him, in a battle of life and death, there was the possibility of him losing immediately. Furthermore, there was no favourable impressions of the upper echelons of Guilin City, the moment he jumped out, he had no intention of helping the rest.

Hearing Bai Xiao Sheng's shouts, the experts immediately got into action, and gathered at the meeting hall.

In the hail of bullets, many of the government officials laid in their own blood.

At almost the same time, a 1.9m-tall burly male decked in military wear leapt out behind Du Shan Xiong.

The tall burly soldier was called Du Zi Ming, and was a Strength-based Evolver, and was Du Shan Xiong's nephew. He possessed terrifying combat strength, and could easily slaughter Type 2 Mutant Beasts like it was nothing.

Du Zi Ming blocked in front of Du Shan Xiong, while an ordinary rifle bullet landed on his body and got deflected away by the Type 2 Mutant Beast hide on him.

As long as one wasn't an idiot, after coming in contact with the Mutant Beasts, most intelligent people would have thought to use the hide as defensive and protective wear.

Du Zi Ming watched the bullets hit him and bellowed in rage, as he swung viciously towards the Evolver wielding the huge blade.

Both weapons clashed, and emitted a shrill sound, as sparks flew, and the intruder was actually knocked back by Du Zi Ming, his blade sent flying out of his hands, and blood seeping out the corners of his mouth. It was obvious that he had suffered an injury.

Du Shan Xiong was facing an assassination attempt, but he did not lose his calm, instead diving for the bottom of the table. He was an ordinary man, and even if he wore the bullet-resistant Type 2 Mutant Beast hide, the moment a bullet hit his head, he would die as well.

Just as Du Shan Xiong was bending his waist, one of the Evolvers chuckled coldly and activated his ability.

An incredibly sharp earth spike broke out from the ground, and pierced the head of Du Shan Xiong, causing his head to be turned into minced meat.

If it had been an expert with sufficient strength, he would have felt a sense of danger. However, it was too bad that while Du Shan Xiong was a regiment commander, he was just an ordinary person, and he lost his life just like that.

"Uncle!!!!" Du Zi Ming saw Du Shan Xiong being killed right before his eyes, and his mind went into turmoil, his eyes turning bloodshot, and he became like an enraged tiger that hacked and slashed wildly at the Evolvers. His strength was immense, and every single strike of his contained a few thousand jins of strength, forcing the other Evolver back with a look of fear on his face.

"Mission accomplished! Retreat!!" Seeing that Du Shan Xiong was killed, the leader of the experts loudly called out.

At the next moment, the remaining 4 Evolvers disregarded their targets and headed for the exit, not even bothering to kill Chen Ying.

When the 5 Evolvers left, the Agility-based Evolver who was defending Chen Ying let out his breath. It had been incredibly exhausting to defend Chen Ying, and if all 5 had taken him on, in 20 seconds, Chen Ying would definitely have died.

However, things did not go as smoothly for the assassins, as when they had just left, the experts defending outside immediately charged over and engaged them in battle.

In the end, after an intense bout, 3 of the assassins lost their lives, while the remaining 2 were forced to escape from the building.

Dan Hong quickly came back to the meeting hall, and when he saw Du Shan Xiong's corpse, his face fell, and immediately told Bai Xiao Sheng: "Quick! Let's go back and inform Leader!! Du Shan Xiong's dead!! Majority of the government have fallen! Guilin City is about to be chaotic!!! Chaotic!!"

What kind of person was Du Shan Xiong? He was the main pillar

of Guilin City. It was him that had led the troops to exterminate over a million zombies, and saved 900,000 people. He was the leader of the border troops patrolling around Guilin City, and was an extraordinary militant.

Now that he was dead, without a leader, the border troops would definitely break up into smaller factions. Also, a number of the officials in the meeting hall had been killed as well.

Without those officials, the governance in Guilin City would likely come to a standstill. All it would take was for one person to come up to incite, and the rest of the city would follow suit into mayhem.

Although Dan Hong was not in a high position, he had an acute sense of the current events, and he could feel the underlying change of wind in Guilin City. If they were not careful, the turbulent winds could cause him and Yue Zhong to be blown to bits.

Bai Xiao Sheng did not say anything, and exerted all his strength to rush for Yue Zhong's location.

Inside a secretive location, when Di Ya received the report from his subordinates, he laughed coldly and said: "Do it!!"

"Regiment Commander Du Shan Xiong is dead! He had been assassinated by Yue Zhong's forces!!"

"Yue Zhong has gained control of the granary!! Everyone's ration tickets are going to become worthless paper soon!!"

"Everybody! Let's find Yue Zhong to settle it!! Otherwise, our ration tickets will become scrap soon!!"

"....."

Those Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad members hiding within the human crowds started to spread the rumor, trying to rile up the masses.

"What?! Regiment Commander Du Shan Xiong had been assassinated?! He was such a good man, why did Yue Zhong send people to assassinate him? What a beast!!"

"Shit!! My ration tickets are about to become scrap?"

"....."

Under the inciting of the people, the majority of the survivors began to panic, as they made their way towards the granary frantically.

If the machinations of the government was still around, such rumors would not have easily spread. However, the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad had killed almost ? of the government's upper officials. It could be said that the government was severely set back.

At the same time, Li Jiu Ming had appeared and convinced those who belonged to the Nan Ning City faction to throw their weights in with him, and he was making preparations to take over control of the entire Guilin City government.

Both sides that used to belong to the same government were currently engaged in a civil war, naturally no one would bother about the survivors.

As for the military that Du Shan Xiong had commanded, it had almost immediately split up into a few factions, the Guilin Faction, the Border Troops Faction, the Enhancers Faction, the Nan Ning Faction, the Youth Faction, the Veteran Faction and a few others. To gain command that Du Shan Xiong had left behind, all the factions were engaged in a contest of power. Some even began to fight.

There were numerous mobs that rushed to the streets, giving in to their darker sides, robbing, pillaging and even raping. Fires began to burn at various places, and there would be cries from women, or screams from men as the thugs laughed without

restraint. Many of the survivors chose to hole themselves up in their rooms, as they watched hell unfold on the streets, and they trembled in their houses.

Chaos!! Huge chaos!! The entire Guilin City had been plunged in a fearsome madness, turning into hell on earth in a manner of hours once they lost stability.

Furthermore, under the prodding of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad, almost a hundred thousand survivors swarmed from all directions, gathering in front of the granary, calling for Yue Zhong.

"Yue Zhong, get the hell out here!!"

"Yue Zhong! You animal! Why did you assassinate Regiment Commander Du Shan Xiong?"

"Yue Zhong!! Open up the granary!!"

"Open up the granary!!"

"Open up the granary!!"

"....."

The large crowd of survivors were calling outside the granary, and blocking the nearby roads leading to it. Their enraged voices were calling out curses and insults, and if it wasn't for the various heavy machine guns mounted outside the granary, they would have swarmed in to snatch their own portion of the rations.

Chapter 429: Chai Zi Cang submits

At this time, Zheng Ming He was in charge of the defence on the exterior of the granary. When he saw the huge crowd of humans, he trembled inwardly as his back broke out in cold perspiration, and he suddenly felt a huge sense of pressure.

This was a crowd of a few hundred thousand people, and they were gathered right here. It seemed that any small thing could set them off.

The moment they erupted, it would definitely become a scene of carnage, and the granary was likely going to be destroyed.

"I am Zheng Ming He, an Elder of the Green Stone Triad." Zheng Ming He looked at the huge crowd as he gritted his teeth to declare loudly. "We did not kill Regiment Commander Du Shan Xiong! All of you had better leave now, otherwise, don't blame us for being impolite!!"

"Dogshit!! He's threatening us!!"

"Everyone, don't fear!! We have a few tens of thousands of us here!! He won't dare to touch us!!"

"Bash that bastard in!!"

"Everyone, let's charge in!! Snatch what's ours!! Whoever can snatch whatever, will belong to them! They won't dare to open fire!!"

"There're so many of us here, if each us were to spit on them, they'll drown!! Everyone, charge!!"

"....."

Amidst the crowd of survivors, there were some hoodlums from the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad mixed in, as they tried to incite the crowd.

"Everyone, let's charge together!! Those rations are ours!!"

Everyone should snatch it all back!!"

"Charge!!"

With the provocation of the joint efforts of the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad, many of the survivors began to get riled up as they inched forwards.

Zheng Ming He watched all these unfold as his head started to hurt, unsure of his next move.

Right at this time, Hu Yi's voice travelled over, his tone resolute: "Open fire!!! Everyone, fire your weapons!!"

The various soldiers stationed at the guns exchanged looks, as they looked at the incoming crowd, not knowing what to do. If it were zombies or Mutant Beasts, they would definitely not hesitate, and immediately firing their weapons. However, they were currently facing other humans, and these were their comrades at that.

Hu Yi's eyes flashed coldly, as he pulled out his blade and hollered coldly: "I'm the vice-commander appointed by our Leader Yue Zhong! Did you guys not hear my orders?! I'm ordering all of you to shoot right now! Kill the threats!! Those who disobey will be executed!!"

One of the soldiers could not help but say: "But Captain Hu!! These are people, they're our fellow countrymen!! Not zombies, and not enemies! They are but just helpless ordinary citizens!"

Hu Yi glanced at that soldier, his expression icy as he continued: "I know that!! But if we don't fire now, we're gonna be buried right here!! Fire immediately!! Otherwise, I'll carry out military punishment!!"

Hu Yi turned around to face Zheng Ming He as he asked solemnly: "Commander Zheng!! You don't have any objections right?"

Amidst Yue Zhong's established powers, it had become

compulsory to use military ranks to refer to one another. Using 'Hall Lords' and 'Elders' were too triad-like and lacked the discipline and form of an actual unit.

"Open fire!" Zheng Ming He glanced at Hu Yi before shutting his eyes, and gave the cruel order.

If they still didn't open fire, those enraged survivors would soon charge into the granary, and would destroy everything!

In an instant, all 12 heavy machine guns started spewing bullets, firing wildly at the frenzied crowd below, punching holes into an unfortunate number of them.

"Murder!!"

"Quick escape!!"

"They're firing!!"

"....."

Following the shrieks and screams of fear, the originally-enraged crowd became fearful as they saw those on the frontlines lying in pools of blood, as they tried to swarm back.

When those survivors that were coming in from further away heard the gunshots, they turned tail and ran in various directions, running for their lives.

Even before the apocalypse, there had been incidents before, where tanks were deployed to quell insurgencies, not to mention a new era where all order has been lost. When those survivors heard the gunshots, their unity crumbled totally, as individuals scrambled for their lives.

In the midst of the chaos, countless survivors were only concerned about their own survival, and the casualties mounted as a result of the stampede. Along the way, countless bodies which had been trampled could be seen.

Some time later, Yue Zhong appeared atop the granary, looking

at the corpses in front of the granary, his face grim.

"Leader!" Zheng Ming He went up to Yue Zhong who had appeared, his heart shaken, as he saluted. He noticed the ugly expression on Yue Zhong's face, and glanced at Hu Yi, before gritting his teeth and said: "Leader! I had passed the command! I'm willing to shoulder all responsibilities!"

The fact that Hu Yi was a close brother of Yue Zhong was widely known amongst those in his faction. Hu Yi was also an Evolver with a Second Order skill, and had contributed greatly at the battle of the Mutant Beast horde. He would naturally be in charge of many things, and Zheng Ming He dared not push the blame on Hu Yi.

Yue Zhong patted Zheng Ming He's shoulders and said solemnly: "How were you wrong!! Those who were in the wrong were those bastards from the Heavenly Dragon and Green Bamboo Triads causing trouble. Even those idiots who blindly followed their instigation were in the wrong!! As long as they're our enemies, we're free to open fire on them, regardless of who they are. However, you could have handled it better. At the very least, you should have fired a warning shot first, after that if they still didn't retreat, then you can fire! You shall be demoted by a rank, and your position is only vice-battalion commander. The 1st Battalion of Guilin City is still yours to lead."

Zheng Ming He had been an ordinary person before the apocalypse, and had not experienced something like this, hence, his handling of the matter had been rigid. If it were up to somebody with experience, it would definitely have been handled better.

"Yes!" Zheng Ming He's eyes turned red, and this moment caused him to feel extremely grateful. He had thought Yue Zhong was going to demote him to a foot soldier. After all, they had killed a number of survivors, and because of that, the resulting stampede had claimed the lives of 200 others.

Yue Zhong's forces were still considered young, and they had just pushed on in. There were countless good fighters, but people with the skills to lead were lacking.

Just then, Hu Yi stepped forwards and said "Leader, don't blame Commander Zheng! It was an order that I gave!"

With other people around, Hu Yi would refer to Yue Zhong as leader, only in situations without others, would he call Yue Zhong 'Big Bro'.

Yue Zhong eyed Hu Yi and replied solemnly: "Since it's like this! You're demoted 2 ranks, to a Platoon Commander! Your rank is now lieutenant."

Hu Yi's expression was strict as he replied: "Yes! Leader!!"

Hu Yi then asked: "Leader! What are our moves next? Guilin City is now in chaos, should we step in as well?"

Bai Xiao Sheng's speed had been extremely fast, and had related the assassination of the upper levels of the government to the Yue Zhong.

Hu Yi did not understand, since he knew Yue Zhong to be extremely decisive, the reason as to why Yue Zhong was still not acting, instead wasting 2 very precious hours.

Yue Zhong eyed Zheng Ming He as his killing intent billowed out: "En! Zheng Ming He, I'll leave this place to you! You must defend this place properly, no one else other than me is allowed near the granary, any offenders, execute them on the spot!"

The granary was the most important card held by Yue Zhong right now, the moment it landed in someone else's hands, it would become the time where it could be used against him.

Zheng Ming He faced Yue Zhong as he swore solemnly: "Yes! Leader! As long as I still have a breath left, this place will not be taken from me!"

"Good!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with satisfaction.

Just as Yue Zhong was preparing to issue the command to mobilize, Hu Yi looked out and called out: "Leader! Someone's coming!!"

"Oh?" Yue Zhong turned around, only to discover Chai Zi Cang who was released by him, walking towards the granary with his hands waving a white flag.

Yue Zhong looked at Chai Zi Cang and his heartbeat immediately sped up: "Let him in!"

Just a single Chai Zi Cang would not be a threat to the entire granary's forces.

Chai Zi Cang came to Yue Zhong and immediately declared: "This subject is willing to work for Leader, please accept this subject!"

Yue Zhong eyed Chai Zi Cang, and was extremely pleased: "Good! What are your requests, name them!"

Gaining Chai Zi Cang was a huge opportunity. On one hand, he could show the example of those who submitted, on the other hand, Chai Zi Cang knew the inner workings amongst Du Shan Xiong's generals. With his support, Yue Zhong would be able to make a better judgement.

Chai Zi Cang immediately said: "I alone am weak, I hope that Leader can set my brothers free!! Allow us to work for you!"

With Du Shan Xiong's death, the army had split up into multiple factions. In such situations, those with strength made the rules. Without Du Shan Xiong, Chai Zi Cang was nothing, and hence, upon consideration, he had decided to throw his weight in with Yue Zhong. After all, there were over a few hundred captive soldiers.

Yue Zhong frowned and asked: "Do you have confidence in convincing your brothers?"

Chai Zi Cang replied solemnly: "If Du Shan Xiong was still alive, there would be no guarantee! However, since he's dead, I have 70% confidence in persuading them."

Yue Zhong grinned and said: "Alright!! Chai Zi Cang, from now on, you're the 9th Platoon's Platoon Commander! Your entire platoon will be made up of your brothers. How's that?"

Chai Zi Cang was overjoyed, and immediately prostrated himself in front of Yue Zhong: "I'm willing to fight to the death for Leader!!"

The moment he joined, he was immediately placed as a platoon commander, and he had the strength of his troops to boot. This was good news to him.

In such a world where strength spoke, Chai Zi Cang had just gained his subordinates again, and soon he would be able to have a say amongst Yue Zhong's forces.

Chapter 430: Fractured Military!

Yue Zhong had always liked to reorganize the troops that he had absorbed from his enemies. However, things were different for Guilin City. It was a time where he needed to make use of the manpower, and it had to be utilizable. Allowing Chai Zi Cang to control his troops would swiftly draft them into formation. Therefore, Yue Zhong had chosen that option.

Chai Zi Cang came alone to the captive zone, and under his persuasion, 90% of the captives agreed to work with him. There was still that 10% that was unwilling, and hence remained within the captive battalion.

After making preparations, under the orders of Yue Zhong, the Heaven Union group of experts, Larman's foreign troops, Ying Kai Shan's two infantry battalions that were armed to the teeth, as well as Chai Zi Cang's military troops that strengthened the front, all gathered. The 2,000-strong army made their way towards Guilin City.

Yue Zhong also assigned for those scattered troops that weren't too stable to leave the granary, leaving the place to Zheng Ming He and his 2 battalions. Amongst the 2 battalions, there were numerous experts who had followed Yue Zhong on his conquests along the way, as well as some who had taken part in the battle of the small town, gaining huge benefits against the Mutant Beast horde.

Upon entering Guilin City, and establishing control over a territory, Yue Zhong brought Chai Zi Cang over and asked: "Chai Zi Cang!! I want to settle the side of the military! Which faction do you think I should set my sights on first?"

With regards to the relationships among the military powers, Chai Zi Cang was more familiar, and with him around, Yue Zhong can make a more informed judgement on his next move.

"Boss Yue!! The military has now fractured into 6 main factions. These 6 are separated into the following: The 1st Battalion led by Zhang Xue Wang. The 2nd Battalion led by Wang He. The 3rd Battalion led by Zhu Lei. The 4th Battalion led by Chen Yu. The 5th Battalion led by Ma Fang. The 6th Battalion led by Murong He. These are also the strongest 6 battalions trained up by Regiment Commander Du. Each of them consists of a thousand soldiers, and there are 5 other infantry battalions that are situated near the 6 powers. However, these 5 are just recently conscripted, and the recruits are still in the midst of training, without proper equipment, and lack any combat strength."

"Of the 6, Zhang Xue Wang's 1st Battalion is the strongest, and best equipped battalion. They have an entire armed division. They have tanks, cannons and even assault helicopters. Zhang Xue Wang was the first troop that had followed Du Shan Xiong since the beginning. He's absolutely loyal to Du Shan Xiong, and has a proud temperament. It's extremely hard to convince him. He had fought with Chen Yu in the past over a woman, and in the end, he lost to Chen Yu, which caused their relationship to be strained, even up till now. They have come to blows before. Because of his ego, his relationships with the other battalions are not that great either."

"Wang He's 2nd Battalion consists of the most experts. Truthfully, the 2nd Battalion is the battalion with the most number of experts amongst the whole army. Inside the 2nd Battalion, there are 20 Evolvers. Wang He is also a slippery guy, his relationships with the rest of the 5 battalions are so-so."

"Zhu Lei is rumored to be the backer of the Heavenly Dragon Triad. He's a violent man, lustful and perverse, and is alleged to have over 50-over women in the camp waiting on him."

"Chen Yu is an upright man, and is a bit rigid."

"Ma Fang is said to be the backer of the Green Bamboo Triad. He's cunning and insidious, petty as well. He's domineering in his own

ways, and there was one time where he didn't buy a ticket when he went to the bus-stop. The conductor stopped him and requested for him to get a ticket, he actually slapped the conductor, before barking loudly saying that he was a commander, and that the conductor had best scram! His character is not much, and if not for his family, he could not have gotten to his position."

Chai Zi Cang finished off: "As for Murong He, I'm not clear about his background, I just know that he's honest and straightforward, although he's a man of few words. However, whatever responsibilities Du Shan Xiong handed to him, he would carry it off extremely well!"

Yue Zhong started pondering over the information he got.

The 4 Great Triads of Guilin City all had backers, Yue Zhong knew this very well.

It was almost impossible for a triad to expand the way the 4 Great Triads did without sufficient backing. Yue Zhong had brought in his own experts to launch a sudden move and swallowed up the Hong Triad's position.

Within Guilin City, Yue Zhong was considered a wildcard, and had broken the balance of the games. That was why Li Hong Zhi and Chang Yu Feng had tried to thrash the newly established Green Stone Triad. However, they had not expected that Yue Zhong did not follow the rules, and instead, finished them off quickly and cleanly, as well as taking over the granary, and causing Du Shan Xiong to become anxious.

Yue Zhong mulled silently: "With the backing of 2 commanders, no wonder they dared to kill government officials, even killing Du Shan Xiong!"

With Zhu Lei and Ma Fang sitting behind the scenes, as well as causing mayhem within Guilin City, the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad could be said to possess some capabilities.

With the aid of 2,000 experienced soldiers, as well as the police force, armed forces and special forces under the control of Li Jiu Ming, by now, the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad had gained the upper hand in this conflict.

Right at this time, a soldier came running towards Yue Zhong: "Leader!! There's an envoy from ,the Green Bamboo Triad that requests an audience!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he said: "Let him in!"

A proud and arrogant young man in a suit came sauntering in as he grinned slightly at Yue Zhong: "Hello Boss Yue!! I'm the Green Bamboo Triad's Peng Biao. I'm very pleased to meet you. This time, I'm here on the orders of Chief Gao, to establish an alliance with you. As long as you're willing to become allies with us from the Green Bamboo Triad, after this matter is settled, the 3 conditions that you had sent someone to request for, other than the 3rd condition, we can accept the rest. Furthermore, as an expression of our goodwill, the Green Bamboo Triad is willing to offer a hundred virgins to you."

Yue Zhong eyed Peng Biao coldly and said: "Capture him!"

2 soldiers immediately stepped forward to press Peng Biao harshly to the ground, before tying him up.

The moment Peng Biao felt his face touching the ground, his expression changed as he shouted: "Yue Zhong! Armies do not kill envoys in battle!! You can't kill me!!"

Yue Zhong eyed Peng Biao coldly and replied: "Don't worry, I won't kill you! If you have the abilities to escape, you can go back and notify Gao Ming Hao! If he surrenders now, I can let him off with his dog life. Otherwise, I will definitely wipe the earth clean of you scum from the Green Bamboo Triad and HEavenly Dragon Triad. Throw him into the jail cell!! Without my orders, no one shall go close to him."

After settling the issue of Peng Biao, Yue Zhong turned to Chai Zi Cang and said: "Go find someone to lead me to Zhang Xue Wang!! I want to talk to him!!"

Chai Zi Cang's face promptly turned pale, as he tried to persuade Yue Zhong: "Leader!! That's not prudent!! While Zhang Xue Wang might be obstinate, he's not an idiot, and he might possibly throw you in captivity!"

Yue Zhong frowned and muttered: "Enough! I've made up my mind! I need to make this trip! At this juncture, while we can ensure our survival, it's hard to attain victory. Conquering any one side might give the others a chance to jump on us. I need to convince Zhang Xue Wang to work together with us, only then is there a hope for victory."

Yue Zhong led an army size of more than 2,000, and it seemed imposing. However, within them, a thousand plus were still not trained fully, and could be said to be a motley bunch. If it was a casual clash, it would still be ok, but if more than a few die, then the rest would definitely collapse. Of the remaining 1,000-some, the Heaven Union's experts make up the most of the number, however, the human heart was difficult to conquer, and there were a few who were still not satisfied with Yue Zhong. They could betray at any time. Of the entire 2,000-over, it seemed that only 400-over could truly fight.

Hence if Yue Zhong wanted to deal with the rest of the fractured military factions, he needed another way. If 2 sides engaged him at the same time, it would be worse.

Chai Zi Cang mulled for a few seconds, before his eyes flashed with resolution: "Alright!! I'll go with you!!"

This was a risk for Chai Zi Cang, and he wanted to gain Yue Zhong's trust and reliance, hence he decided to follow Yue Zhong to prove his loyalty.

No one would dislike a loyal subordinate. Although some were

capable, ambitious people would leave their superiors with no choice but to limit their dependency on them. Whereas there could be less capable but more devoted subjects, these were the preferred aides.

Yue Zhong looked at Chai Zi Cang and smiled slightly: "Good!!"

After granting control of the troops to Hu Yi, and passing the order to keep watch over their current location, Yue Zhong and Chai Zi Cang left for Zhang Xue Wang's location swiftly.

As they neared the camp of Zhang Xue Wang, they were met with a wary warning. "Who goes there?" 2 soldiers wielding .03 Type rifles raised their weapons and blocked the paths of Yue Zhong and Chai Zi Cang.

Yue Zhong looked at the 2 of them, replying indifferently: "I'm Yue Zhong, the Chief of the Green Stone Triad that occupied the granary! I have something to say to your commander Zhang Xue Wang! Take me to him!"

Hearing that Yue Zhong had taken the initiative to come to their camp, the soldiers sucked in a breath of cold air, as they retreated slightly, gripping their weapons tightly: "You're Yue Zhong!!"

Yue Zhong's infamy had spread amongst the entire military. Almost every soldier knew this person in front of them had simply taken a troop to subdue the entire granary that was guarded by a battalion within an hour. He had also mercilessly executed an entire company of soldiers under Chang Yu Feng.

One of the soldiers responded gravely: "Wait a moment! I'll need to report this!"

After which, the soldier hastily withdrew into the camp.

Not long after, 12 soldiers emitting a strong killing intent following a 1.8m-tall and burly commander came striding towards Yue Zhong.

The burly commander stared at Yue Zhong with a wary gaze and

said: "I'm Guo Huai Lian! Please come with me!"

Chai Zi Cang gave Yue Zhong a heads up by whispering: "Guo Huai Lian is the top expert in Zhang Xue Wang's ranks! He's an Agility-based Evolver! His skills are truly top-notch!"

Yue Zhong turned to Guo Huai Lian and chuckled as he agreed: "Sure!"

Chapter 431: Forced Mobilization!

Guo Huai Lian had come out to receive them, it was apparent that Zhang Xue Wang was filled with wariness towards Yue Zhong.

In this post-apocalyptic world, there were some experts who could single-handedly decimate an entire troop and cause the tides of the war to turn. While Zhang Xue Wang was proud, he wasn't an idiot, and he would not be unprepared as he accepted Yue Zhong who was equivalent to a powerful killing machine in his base.

As Yue Zhong walked, he saw numerous armored vehicles, like tanks, assault vehicles, self-propelling cannons, missile launchers, etc. Seeing these tools of war, his eyes went red.

Guo Huai Lian brought Yue Zhong to a small office, and within, there was a man of about age 32-33, wearing a crisp military uniform. He possessed a face full of pride, yet his body radiated a vigor while sitting in the office. This man was the commander, Zhang Xue Wang.

Beside Zhang Xue Wang, there were 8 men standing quietly, as they stared at Yue Zhong fixedly. They had the aura of experts as well, and they were obviously powerful enhancers under Zhang Xue Wang.

When Du Shan Xiong was assassinated, everyone got alarmed, and increased their own security. Zhang Xue Wang was no exception.

Zhang Xue Wang was also an Enhancer, however, his enhancement level wasn't high, only about 11 or so. After all, he was the commander of the armored division, and as long as they continued utilizing their modern weaponry to annihilate any zombies or mutant beasts, he had little opportunities to strengthen himself.

Zhang Xue Wang eyed Yue Zhong coldly: "Yue Zhong, what you

here for?"

Yue Zhong eyed Zhang Xue Wang as he replied slowly: "You are Commander Zhang Xue Wang right? Du Shan Xiong was assassinated! The people behind it are the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad! I hope that you can work with me to eradicate them."

Zhang Xue Wang stared back and his expression was one of ridicule: "You're saying that Regiment Commander Du was assassinated by the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad?! Where's your evidence? Who's to say that you weren't the assassin yourself? You just come tell me this and now you want to come and tell me to catch someone else!! Do you take me for a fool?"

Zhang Xue Wang eyed Yue Zhong coldly as he continued: "The death of Regiment Commander Du, I will naturally get to the bottom of this! At that time, I will personally lead my troops to punish those responsible as revenge for Regiment Commander Du! If you're here to waste your breath, then I suggest that you scam right back to where you came from!"

One of the experts standing beside Zhang Xue Wang suddenly came forward and urged: "Wait, commander!! Since he's here, let's kill him! Once he's dead, the Green Stone Triad would collapse, and we can reclaim the granary!!"

When Zhang Xue Wang heard that, his heart rate quickened. True, it was an opportunity that was hard to come by, and it was his territory here, and there were 6 Evolvers as well as 20 other experts that were above Level 30 inside the room. If they all worked together, it was more than enough to take care of Yue Zhong. Once he was dead, the Green Stone Triad would definitely collapse. He could then swallow up Yue Zhong's power. When he thought up to that point, he immediately came to a decision and ordered: "Capture him!!"

When Zhang Xue Wang's words had just resounded, the Agility-based Evolver Guo Huai Lian immediately exploded forwards with an insane speed, appearing beside Yue Zhong and locking his arm.

Yue Zhong was however prepared, and as his eyes flashed, he activated his [Art of Fear] at the first moment, and sent it radiating outwards with him at the centre.

With the pressure of that strong Spirit attack, Guo Huai Lian immediately slowed down, his heart trembling at the force of that attack.

A tear appeared in space, as a sharp bone spike shot out from the tear and pierced Guo Huai Lian in between his brows, nailing him directly against the ground.

As the [Art of Fear] continued to emit outwards, of the 11 other experts standing behind Yue Zhong, 7 were immediately affected by it.

7 more sharp bone spikes shot outwards like spears and impaled the 7 experts through their heads, nailing them to the walls.

"Assassins!!! Assassins!!" In just merely a few breaths, 8 experts had died at the hands of Yue Zhong, and the proud expression of Zhang Xue Wang was replaced by one of fear, as he screamed and shouted while pummelling the glass window, breaking it and trying to escape.

At that instant, Zhang Xue Wang's heart was filled with regret. He had never expected Yue Zhong to be this insanely strong, and had made short work of 8 of his experts. Even the strongest Guo Huai Lian under him was killed immediately.

Yue Zhong shot Zhang Xue Wang a look, and his pupils narrowed, as he focused the [Art of Fear] on him, engulfing his body.

Radiant green light emitted from Zhang Xue Wang's body, negating the effects of the [Art of Fear]. It was obvious that there

were still some powerful defences on his body. Otherwise, that single-target Art of Fear attack would have easily killed such a low-levelled Enhancer.

A Spirit-based Evolver waved his hands, as a bunch of poker cards flew like projectiles towards Yue Zhong, and in mid-air, they split into numerous more cards.

The main ability of the Spirit-based Evolver was controlling poker cards, and under his power, those weak cards could become sharp enough to slice armored vehicles, and even an L2 evolved zombie which was impervious to bullets and knives would be sliced into pieces by the poker cards.

The poker cards that were filled with power filled the entire room, and sealed off Yue Zhong's movements. Like a rain cloud that blots out the skies, no one would be able to evade the raindrops. This was the threat of those poker cards. Many experts had watched helplessly before being sliced apart.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with coldness as he slapped his hands once, and a fearsome fireball blossomed out of thin air, shooting towards the Spirit-based Evolver.

With that fearsome blazing tornado, the cards that could slice apart armored vehicles started to burn and turn to ashes, while the flaming tornado continued in its attempt to engulf the Spirit-based Evolver entirely.

Facing the fiery carnage about to envelope it, the card-controlling Spirit-based Evolver looked on in horror.

An earthen wall immediately congealed in front of him, blocking the path of the fiery tornado. It was the work of an Evolver with the [Ground Manipulation] ability standing near the Spirit-based Evolver.

The fiery tornado assaulted the wall, and an immense explosion resulted, causing a hole in the wall, before it continued to rage on

towards the card-controlling Spirit-based Evolver.

A Level 43 Enhancer quickly came up and started to activate a [Psychic Barrier] in front of the card controller, his face resolute.

The fiery tornado landed against the psychic barrier powerfully, burning for a while before finally collapsing.

This was the pros of having comrades. One by one, they managed to defend against an attack that each of them would not be able to handle singly.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

The [Psychic Barrier] user had just heaved a sigh of relief, when 6 Stinger bullets came from behind the fiery tornado and exploded on his weakened barrier, immediately disintegrating it! 1 of the bullets penetrated his head, and instantly caused his cranium to be blasted apart.

A sharp bone blade came slashing out of nowhere, and the [Ground Manipulation] user was likewise decapitated, as a huge gush of blood splattered everywhere, his lifeless body slumping to the floor.

Another sharp bone spike then shot out explosively, piercing the head of the card controller, nailing him to the wall.

With the slashing of the bone blades, another 3 close-combat experts were immediately sliced apart, splattering the room with blood.

In a few moments of breath, 14 experts with decent strength had died at the hands of Yue Zhong and White Bones, and the scene in the room was like hell.

"So strong!! He's too strong!!" Chai Zi Cang who had just exited the illusion of [Art of Fear] stood behind Yue Zhong, his body trembling slightly as he looked at Yue Zhong with eyes of respect and awe. It was the first time he witnessed someone actually making short work of 14 experts, amongst which were some

Evolvers even. Yue Zhong's strength had totally surpassed his imagination.

Yue Zhong stared coldly at the remaining experts, his gaze icy, while his aura intimidating the remaining 6 experts.

Yue Zhong had not yet activated his [Art of Fear], but being stared at like that caused an equally knee-shaking fear within the 6 experts.

One of them, an Evolver wielding a large blade could not withstand the terror of facing death and immediately knelt as he pleaded: "I surrender!! Don't kill me!!"

Yue Zhong pointed to the other experts as he barked: "Surrender! Or die! You only have one second to consider!"

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!!"

Under Yue Zhong's stern warning, another 3 experts could not withstand the fear of death, and immediately threw their weapons down and knelt down.

"Yue Zhong...." One of the experts seemed to hesitate before lifting his heads to say something.

White Bones, whose entire body was covered in the blood of the enemies it killed, charged forwards wildly with its 2 bone blades, its demonic fiery eyes flashing. The remaining 2 experts had not yet the time to bargain nor finish their words before they were sliced in 2, splattering blood all over the place.

Yue Zhong did not cast another glance at the 4 experts who had submitted as he activated his [Shadow Steps] and rushed towards the window, but not before saying: "Protect Commander Chai out of here! Otherwise, all your families will die!"

Yue Zhong then immediately leapt out the 2nd storey window, and chased after Zhang Xue Wang like an arrow.

"Assassin!! Assassin!!" Zhang Xue Wang shouted as he ran, and

his heart was now filled with regret. If he hadn't acted against Yue Zhong, then by now he would have chased Yue Zhong away.

A large number of soldiers and the remaining experts of the 1st Battalion began to gather towards them.

The 20 experts in the meeting hall only made up half of the experts within the 1st Battalion. Of course, they happened to be the elite of the elites as well.

When the soldiers saw their own commander being chased by Yue Zhong, they began to raise their weapons and fire at him.

A large number of bullets shot towards Yue Zhong, but he did not try to evade them. Instead, the Bronze Spiritual Bell flew out from his chest, enveloping him with a radiant shield of light, blocking the incoming bullets.

In that intense moment, after barely 3 seconds, Yue Zhong managed to reach Zhang Xue Wang as he raised his hands to make a grab for the latter's neck.

"Release the Commander!!"

"Release the Commander! Otherwise, I'll fire!!"

When the soldiers saw Yue Zhong grabbing their commander by the neck, all of them stopped their attacks, instead surrounding them, as they stared intensely at Yue Zhong, threatening him.

When Zhang Xue Wang was caught by Yue Zhong, his fear arose, and he quickly shouted: "Yue Zhong! Let me go! I can co-operate with you!! Let's eradicate the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad together!"

"Good!" Yue Zhong then placed Zhang Xue Wang on the ground, not doing anything, instead ordering: "Immediately order your men to assault Zhu Lei!!"

"Fine!!"

Zhang Xue Wang could only helplessly give the order through

gritted teeth.

Under Zhang Xue Wang's orders, the entire 1st Battalion of Guilin City was activated, and the armored vehicles made their way towards Zhu Lei's base.

Zhu Lei troops had been on standby since the start of the civil war, furthermore, there were fortifications done to enhance their defence against any potential attacks.

Within a lavish room deep inside the camp, there were 20 extremely outstanding beauties standing in various poses like decoration, while 2 men were seated and enjoying wine as they chatted.

One of them, who was burly and had a face full of beard and a mouth of yellow teeth was currently embracing a naked girl with one hand, while his other holding his wine glass. He was laughing out loud: "Di Ya! This time, you did beautifully. Du Shan Xiong that old thing is finally dead! From now on, this place is ours!"

The bearded burly man was Zhu Lei of the 6 military factions. He was violent in temper and lustful in nature. Although it had irked Du Shan Xiong, Zhu Lei truly had the strength in his unit, and thus Du Shan Xiong had no choice but to make use of him in the past.

While Zhu Lei had an explosive temper, he was not a fool, and in exchange for being a backer for the Heavenly Dragon Triad, they helped to deliver numerous experts and beautiful women, in addition to large amount of resources, allowing him to grow his forces right under Du Shan Xiong's nose.

However, Zhu Lei had still remained fearful of Du Shan Xiong. With his death, Zhu Lei was now without fear.

Di Ya revealed a cunning smile: "Big Brother!! From today onwards, Guilin City will be under Big Brother's control! As long as this little one gets a taste of what Big Brother has to enjoy, it will be more than enough for me!"

Zhu Lei looked at Di Ya and laughed with satisfaction, at the same time, twisting the breasts of the naked girl beside him: "Haha!! Di Ya, just follow me tightly! I won't mistreat you!!"

Chapter 432: Defeat of Zhu Lei's Troops!

Zhu Lei eyed Di Ya, as he pointed to the various beauties in the room and chuckled: "These chicks, whoever catches your eye, just state it! Treat it as my gift to you!"

There were a total of 28 naked women standing around, their figures truly eye-catching, and they seemed to brighten up the room with their looks.

After society had collapsed due to the apocalypse, many allowed their inner demons and desires to fester. Zhu Lei was lustful and while Du Shan Xiong was still alive, he had been controlled, now he was truly unreserved in his indulgence.

Di Ya's face put on a humble expression as he flattered: "How can this little brother covet your women, Big Bro?"

Zhu Lei's mouth curled upwards in a smile, his eyes flashing with a perverse gaze, as he threw the voluptuous woman in his embrace onto a glass table: "You're my good brother! How is it not possible!! Come, let us have fun with this woman together!"

Di Ya's eyes lit up in a similar obscene manner and took off his pants immediately: "Then I shall help myself!"

Right at this time, a military officer suddenly charged in as he spoke in an urgent matter: "Commander!! I have something urgent to report!"

Zhu Lei had just taken off his trousers, and his rod was sticking out in excitement, and when he saw the officer bursting into the room, his expression turned to one of fury as he scolded loudly: "Get the fuck out!! Liu Xiong, do you still want your position or not?!"

The officer's face turned a shade of green then white when he was reprimanded. He felt his anger rising, and he clenched his fists tightly, eyeing the obscene scene in front of him, before he lowered

his head and replied: "Yes!"

"Come, let's continue!!" Zhu Lei then laughed and grabbed hold of the woman before penetrating her.

On the other side, Di Ya chuckled perversely and grabbed her head.

Liu Xiong stomped back towards his office as he cursed: "Zhu Lei you fucking bastard!! You're still playing with women at this time? You'll definitely be buried!!"

The vice-captain Zhou Zi Xuan came up to Liu Xiong's side and asked: "Old Liu! What did Commander say?"

Liu Xiong's face was still steely as he replied coldly: "He told me to fuck right off!!"

Zhou Zi Xuan's face turned pale: "What the fuck is wrong with him? Zhang Xue Wang is attacking right now! If we don't prepare, how can we hold the fort?"

Liu Xiong mulled silently before starting at Zhou Zi Xuan: "Old Zhou!! Zhu Lei is just a bastard! I've decided to pull the troops out! Are you coming with me?"

When Zhou Zi Xuan heard that, his eyes went wide, and stammered with disbelief: "Old Liu! That's treason! Traitorous!"

Men of military viewed orders with paramount importance. Such a doctrine was ingrained in every single one of them. Liu Xiong's troops were also of the border troops in the past. Hence, although Zhu Lei was a lecherous and despotic person who got in with family relations, he was still the commander placed in charge of them, and Liu Xiong and the rest had no choice but to obey his orders, even though they did not approve of him.

Liu Xiong's current suggestion to pull his troops away, it was proof that things had changed, and this caused Zhou Zi Xuan to be at a loss.

Liu Xiong's face was one of disgust: "If I have to continue slogging for that kind of person! I'd rather turn against him!!"

As long as one was still upright and humane, they would be unwilling to work for an obscene and rude leader. Liu Xiong had closed one eye to Zhu Lei's behaviour because the country and military were behind him in the past.

Now that the military was fractured, and the country on the brink of collapse, the unhappiness with Zhu Lei had been building up inside Liu Xiong's heart, and had burst out.

Zhou Zi Xuan seemed to ponder for a while silently, before his eyes flashed with a similar glint of resolution: "Fine!! I'll come with you!!"

"That's great!!" Liu Xiong's face expressed his joy.

Zhou Zi Xuan then continued asking: "What shall we do with Chen Zheng Wei?"

Liu Xiong's eyes glinted with a ferocity: "Since we're about to fall out with Zhu Lei, let's just do away with him!!"

That Chen Zheng Wei was a pawn sent by Zhu Lei to watch over Liu Xiong and the rest, and both sides did not get along well.

Right at this time, Chen Zheng Wei came striding into the camp, seeing Xiong Lei, his expression became extremely ugly: "Liu Xiong! Why are you still here? Aren't you supposed to hurry and take some troops to stop Zhang Xue Wang?"

Liu Xiong and Zhou Zi Xuan exchanged a look, as they stepped forwards: "Chen Zheng Wei!! I have something to say to you!!"

"What! It can wait! The priority now is to mobilize the troops to defend against Zhang Xue Wang's assault...."

Before his words were even finished, Xiong Lei grabbed Chen Zheng Wei's head and twisted viciously, with a "kacha", Chen Zheng Wei slumped to ground with disbelief on his lifeless face.

"Let's go!"

After killing Chen Zheng Wei, Liu Xiong and Zhou Zi Xuan quickly mobilized their own troops before escaping from the camp.

Liu Xiong and his troops had left the camp not long, when the situation became a whole lot worse.

Hong!! Hong!! Hong!!

In almost an instant, countless artillery rounds blanketed the camp of Zhu Lei, and under the bombardment, countless houses were instantly destroyed, and a number of armored vehicles also became scrap metal as they combusted and exploded in balls of fire.

One particular rounds ended up beside the residence of Zhu Lei, and with an explosive sound, it decimated a building, causing the soldiers within it to be buried alive.

At the blast area, a dust cloud rose up and blanketed the area, with the debris falling around. The scene looked like the aftermath of an earthquake.

Those naked women that had been treated as trophies within the room of Zhu Lei were currently screaming and could not care about Zhu Lei's threats, as they ran from the room.

"What's going on? What is the meaning of this artillery fire?"

Zhu Lei had also been frightened by the sudden blasts, without even wearing his pants, he ran out naked, his face pale as he looked around for the source of the problem.

When Di Ya heard that explosive artillery, he had kicked the woman kneeling in front of him away, as he ran to the window: "Shit!!! What's going on?"

At almost the same time when Zhu Lei and Di Ya were both shocked and trying to find out what was happening, 2 artillery rounds landed on this particular building, causing an earth-

shaking blast, and the entire building was destroyed. Everyone within it were blasted to pieces, even Di Ya who was a Level 48 Evolver had his body blasted apart, without a chance to resist.

"Attack!!"

"We're under attack!!"

Facing the sudden bombardment of heavy rounds, all the soldiers rushed out from their various buildings within the camp, of which, there were over 300 Enhancers. These 300+ Enhancers were the subordinates that Di Ya had brought over and offered to Zhu Lei's forces. Zhu Lei had relied on these soldiers to kill a number of Mutant Beasts and zombies.

Hong!! Hong!! Hong!!

5 rounds landed consecutively amidst the gathering of those Enhancers, and an entire patch of them were instantly blasted into pieces. Amongst them, there were even 2 other Evolvers that were directly bombed to death.

"Help!!! I don't wanna die!!"

"Run!!"

"Run!!"

Facing the constant bombardment of artillery rounds, those originally proud and arrogant experts totally collapsed. Under the might of the heavy firepower, they suddenly felt the weakness of their pitiful existences.

However, regardless of how quick they were to discover the true threat of those heavy rounds, the blast area of each round was too large, furthermore, there were consecutive shots being fired, which caused even the faster Agility-based Evolvers to have trouble evading.

Those Enhancers were ordinary folks before the apocalypse, and the training they received was too little. Most of the time, they

only had to face the dumb zombies, or battle against the Mutant Beasts, but never against other humans with modern weaponry.

As Zhu Lei, the highest commanding officer had been blasted to pieces, other than a few platoon commanders that gathered their forces to try and resist, the rest of the division had totally collapsed, escaping to various directions.

Hu Yi had led a number of soldiers to surround the troops of Zhu Lei, and those scattered Enhancers were all apprehended, and placed inside the Captive Battalion.

Yue Zhong went into the command centre and observed the plight of Zhu Lei's troops, before turning to Zhang Xue Wang standing beside him and ordered: "Alright! Time to go persuade them to surrender!"

Zhang Xue Wang himself was watching the state of the camp, and his heart was conflicted. Not long ago, these were fellow comrades. Now, his own artillery had caused such carnage, and it caused him to be unsettled.

However, Zhang Xue Wang's life was in Yue Zhong's control, thus, he had no choice, and did not hesitate as he ordered a subordinate officer beside him: "Go send someone to talk to them!"

One officer held up a loudhailer and blasted his voice across to the entire camp: "The people inside, listen up! Zhu Lei had been involved in a plot to assassinate our Regiment Commander Du Shan Xiong!! He's considered a traitor to the country and the people!! You had better surrender now, so that we can let you off with your lives! Otherwise, we will not show any mercy, and as long as we see any resistance, we will execute you on the spot!!"

By now, there were over 200-soldiers still standing guard inside Zhu Lei's camp. They had not collapsed like the Enhancers when they were faced with the artillery attack.

With Zhu Lei's death, the remaining troops did possess some

combat strength, but without a target or fighting will, they all came out subdued and surrendered as Yue Zhong's captives.

After thoroughly eradicating Zhu Lei's troops and absorbing the captives, Yue Zhong did not pause and immediately ordered: "Continue! Attack Ma Fang's camp now!!"

Under Yue Zhong's orders, Zhang Xue Wang's First Battalion began their advance towards Ma Fang's camp.

Within Ma Fang's base.

Ma Fang, who was decked in military wear, swung a cup onto the ground with full force, shattering it as he bellowed out in rage: "Fuck!! Why is that bastard Zhu Lei so weak!! He couldn't even hold out for an hour! Fuck!! Zhang Xue Wang is also a bastard, he actually submitted to Yue Zhong!! Damn it!!! Damn it!! Fuuuuuuuuck!!"

An intelligence soldier immediately came up: "Commander!! Be appeased!! We can go and join forces with Chen Yu, Murong He and Wang He!! With the 4 of us, Zhang Xue Wang and Yue Zhong are definitely not our match!!"

Chapter 433: Continuous Submissions

Ma Fang's eyes lit up: "Great idea!! You, go and find them now! Go speak to them about an alliance!!"

The intelligence officer immediately acknowledged and left.

The moment that intelligence officer left, a voice through a loudspeaker came resounding throughout the camp: "To the people inside, listen up! Ma Fang was involved in the plot to assassinate Regiment Commander Du Shan Xiong! He's now termed a traitor of the country and people! You guys had better surrender now, and you'll be left with your life. Otherwise, we won't show you mercy, can only treat you as accomplices to revolt and will execute you on the spot!!"

Ma Fang's face instantly fell, as he cursed out loud: "Zhang Xue Wang that bastard!! Since when did I take part in any plot to assassinate Regiment Commander Du? We'll fight to the death! Convey my orders. Everyone is to defend their post, not a single one is allowed to retreat. We will trade soldiers with them, and definitely not give in."

Hearing the loudhailer, numerous soldiers within Ma Fang's camp started to be doubtful.

The commander of the infantry unit dependent on Ma Fang immediately ran, and those soldiers who had just been training for one or two months under him also collapsed, escaping in all directions.

With Du Shan Xiong's death, the hearts of the ordinary military men faltered, that was why there was a fracture into 6 divisions. Furthermore, there was unrest within the hearts of the soldiers, and now Yue Zhong had claimed loudly that he was carrying out judgement on those actually guilty of the death of Du Shan Xiong, this immediately led to a breakdown in the troops under Ma Fang, as they sought to escape.

A leader in these times was extremely important, the moment he was dead, the troops would collapse and follow suit. If Yue Zhong died, all his establishments would immediately be torn down, and everyone would split. Regardless of his women, or Chi yang, no one would be able to hold on to his legacy. Likewise, as the commander of the entire Guilin City's military, with the death of Du Shan Xiong, countless ambitious people sprouted up, and caused the lower ranks soldiers to be uneasy.

At this time, a particular intelligence officer suddenly ran in urgently and called out: "Commander, not good!! Commander Zhu has just escaped. The entire 11th Infantry Battalion has just collapsed!!"

Ma Fang was in disbelief as his expression turned ugly: "What?! Zhu Zhi Hua ran?!"

Another intelligence officer came running in: "Commnader! Commander! OC Zhang has just brought his company and left!

Ma Fang was livid yet pale at the same time, as he stammered: "What? Zhang Ming Tao also ran??"

Zhang Ming Tao was an exemplary officer who had shone even before the apocalypse. During the purge of the zombies, his performance was valiant and courageous. The fact that such a military officer had taken his troops and ran, was a huge blow and reflection on their current situation.

Right at this time, a huge explosion resounded, as an artillery round landed on a nearby military building, causing the building Ma Fang was in to be affected by the blast radius as well.

Ma Fang was thoroughly frightened by that huge impact, as he muttered: "Damn it!! They're firing already!! They're using heavy artillery!! Shit!! Shit!! I need to leave... I need to leave right now!! As long as the mountain remains, there won't be a lack of firewood!! If I'm dead, nothing else matters!!"

Ma Fang had been integral in the commanding of the troops when fighting against the zombies, but he had remained in the safety behind his troops, and while he possessed the experience, it was with regards to command. Now that he felt the impact of the artillery first hand, it frightened him greatly.

"Cover my retreat!!" Without any hesitation, Ma Fang immediately gathered a few of his trusted aides as he tried to escape.

"Commander, You can't leave now!! If you leave, there will be no one to lead the troops here!!" One of the intelligence officers rushed up and tried to stop Ma Fang.

'Hong!' Another huge explosion rocked the earth, as an artillery round blasted another nearby building into oblivion, causing a huge dust cloud to rise, and the ground to shake.

The entire building that Ma Fang was in also started to shake, as dust began to fall and the building threatened to collapse!!

"Fuck off!!" Ma Fang became infuriated, pulled out a pistol, and pointed it at that officer before cocking the trigger.

Peng! A gunshot rang out.

A bullet hole appeared in between the brows of the intelligence officer, and his face was still in disbelief as his body slumped to the floor lifelessly.

Seeing that, no one else dared to stop Ma Fang, and they watched helplessly as Ma Fang left.

The remaining officers inside the room exchanged looks, before dropping everything and fleeing as well.

"Ma Fang escaped!!"

"Commander Ma abandoned us and ran!!"

The message was passed swiftly amongst the soldiers, and the order of the soldiers promptly collapsed, as they tried to run in

various directions, or making their way towards Yue Zhong's troops to surrender.

Yue Zhong watched the collapse of Ma Fang's troops, and heaved a huge sigh of relief. If Ma Fang had insisted on defending the post with his soldiers, it would have been a lot tougher to conquer the base. The price to pay would not have been small either.

Yue Zhong passed an order: "Next target! Wang He's 2nd Battalion!!"

Yue Zhong intended to subdue the fractured divisions of the military before they had a chance to regroup and form an alliance. If the military came together again, and allied with each other, Yue Zhong would be hard pressed to subdue them.

Wang He had numerous experts, but in exchange, the number of people under him who knew how to operate modern weaponry were lesser. In an exchange of firepower, their combat strength was weaker, and definitely was not a match for Zhang Xue Wang's armored division. Even if they had assassins or top experts, Yue Zhong could deal with them himself.

With Yue Zhong's orders, the troops adjusted their target after subduing 2 major battalions, and made for the 2nd Battalion.

"Leader!! Wang He requests an audience!!"

Just as Yue Zhong and his troops were halfway to their destination, a soldier came running up to Yue Zhong and reported.

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened up and ordered: "Bring him in!!"

Not long after, a 1.7m-tall man of about 38 with a body full of muscles and vigor, came walking towards Yue Zhong, his eyes holding a penetrating gaze.

Wang He looked Yue Zhong up and down, before saying slowly: "Hello! I'm Wang He! May I ask, if you're Yue Zhong?"

Yue Zhong pointed to a sofa opposite him, indicating for Wang

He to take a seat, as he smiled and said: "That's right! How do you do, Commander Wang?"

Wang He sat down as invited by Yue Zhong.

Mu Xiang Ling came up with 2 cups of red tea, and served them to Yue Zhong and Wang He, before taking a seat beside Yue Zhong.

Wang He sipped the cup of red tea, and immediately spoke openly: "This time, I've come alone, to represent the brothers of the 2nd Battalion to submit to Leader Yue Zhong. We hope that Leader Yue Zhong will accept us!"

Zhang Xue Wang's armored division was simply too tyrannical, with their tanks, cannons, assault helicopters, they were enough to annihilate the 2nd Battalion totally. Wang He did not wish for any of his brothers to be killed so pathetically, hence he made the decision to surrender with his troops.

Wang He was also extremely clear, surrendering voluntarily and being forced to submit were 2 different treatments. If Yue Zhong did not treat those who surrendered kindly, in the future, no one would be willing to submit to him.

Yue Zhong chuckled at Wang He: "Fine!! From now on, you're my subordinate. How about being a Lieutenant-ranked Platoon Commander? Your brothers will still be yours to command!"

Wang He immediately saluted Yue Zhong: "Many thanks Leader! I'm willing to die for Leader!"

Yue Zhong smiled slightly and waved his hands, Wang He then sat down.

Wang He took another sip of tea, mulling silently, before suddenly asking: "Yue Zhong! If I hadn't come, how would you have dealt with us?"

Yue Zhong chuckled indifferently, and did not mask his words: "I would have labelled you guys as traitors, then made use of the cannons and tanks to wipe everything out!"

Wang He laughed bitterly, even in death, they would have been termed as traitors, it showed how vicious Yue Zhong was.

Yue Zhong then commanded: "Wang He! Immediately go and get your troops to merge with mine. Our next target is Murong He's camp!!"

Wang He saluted and stood up to leave: "Yes, Leader. I will not disappoint you!"

"Ge-ge!! Why didn't you reorganize his troops?" Mu Xiang Ling, who had been sitting quietly like a doll along suddenly piped with curiosity.

Yue Zhong pinched her cheeks slightly and laughed: "He had come of his own initiative to surrender. It's not that I can't dissolve his troops and reorganize them, but now's not the time. I still need their strength. It isn't the time to be reorganizing any of the troops now!"

"Oh!!" Mu Xiang Ling nodded with understanding as she glanced at Yue Zhong.

Wang He quickly brought the soldiers of the 2nd Battalion and joined Yue Zhong, and the huge troop continued onwards towards Murong He's base.

By this time, the total number of soldiers that Yue Zhong had completely outnumbered those from Murong He and Chen Yu's side. However, Chen Yu was dedicated and had won the loyalty of his men, while the men under his control weren't as well equipped as Zhang Xue Wang's, it was still decent. Hence, Yue Zhong decided to go for Murong He first.

Just as Yue Zhong's army was about to depart, a subordinate suddenly came up to him: "Leader!! Murong He and Chen Yu's envoy are here to request an audience!!"

A joyous glint flashed in Yue Zhong's eyes, yet he maintained his composure, saying: "Let them in!!"

Under the guidance of a soldier, 2 men walked into the mobile command post that Yue Zhong was in.

Murong He was an ordinary looking man, except that his nose was slightly red. The moment he saw Yue Zhong, he said: "Murong He brings the men of the 6th Battalion to submit to Leader Yue Zhong, and hopes that Leader Yue accepts us!"

Yue Zhong asked: "Good!! What are your conditions?"

Being able to conquer an entire troop of elites without using any weapons, Yue Zhong was naturally elated.

Murong He replied craftily: "We leave it all to Leader!"

Murong He naturally had numerous conditions in his heart, but at this time, not mentioning any would be best. Yue Zhong would definitely not mistreat those who submitted to him willingly.

Chapter 434: Gaining Guillin City

Yue Zhong immediately saw through Murong He's meaning and said: "Good!! Then I shall first confer upon you the rank of a Lieutenant, is that fine? Your brothers will still be yours to command!"

Murong He's expression was one of joy: "Thank you Leader! I'm willing to die for Leader!!"

Yue Zhong then turned to the envoy sent by Chen Yu, saying: "What did Chen Yu sent you for?"

The envoy immediately replied: "My name is Luo Yang He! Leader Yue Zhong! As long as you promise us some conditions, we from the 4th Battalion are willing to submit to your command."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with an icy glint, yet his expression did not change as he replied indifferently: "Fine! Speak!"

Luo Yang He spewed out the 3 conditions at one go: "1st: You can't dissolve our team! Second: The affairs of the 4th Battalion would be handled by ourselves. Third: We want to have the right to decline any orders that go against the interest of the people of Guilin City or betray the country."

Yue Zhong's eyes shone with a strange light as he replied: "Sure! Not a problem! You have my word!!"

Chen Yu wasn't willing to hand his subordinates over, and wanted to retain his own faction, which was the same as listening but not necessarily obeying.

When Luo Yang He heard Yue Zhong's agreement, he heaved a sigh of relief, and saluted: "Thank you Leader!"

Wang He and Murong He looked at Luo Yang He with pity in their eyes. The moment Yue Zhong gained control of Guilin City, as long as he employed some methods, he could make the soldiers of the 4th Battalion suffer. If Chen Yu could not even see past this,

his governance was really too weak.

Yue Zhong observed the surroundings before solemnly declaring: "Now, our next move, will be to annihilate Li Jiu Ming for orchestrating this chaos in Guilin City! Who's willing to be the vanguard?"

"I'm willing!!" Wang He and Murong He replied loudly.

Wang He and Murong He had just thrown in their lot with Yue Zhong, and were anxious to prove themselves.

Yue Zhong looked to Wang He and Murong He as he grinned slightly: "Then I shall leave it to Commander Wang and Commander Murong!"

"Yes! Leader!"

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's order, Wang He and Murong He immediately led their respective troops as they advanced towards the centre of the city.

In just a few moments, numerous armored vehicles arrived in the middle of Guilin City, followed by a vehicle that was broadcasting a voice: "Li Jiu Ming had plotted to assassinate Regiment Commander Du Shan Xiong, and had betrayed the country and her people! He's now recognized as a dangerous traitor! All those who had heard this broadcast, immediately abandon your weapons and submit to us! Otherwise, you'll be labelled as a traitor in cahoots with Li Jiu Ming, and we will execute without mercy!!"

"That's the military!!"

"So Regiment Commander Du was really assassinated by Mayor Li?"

"Damn it!! We were tricked!!"

Seeing those military armored vehicles rolling into the middle of town, all those police forces, special forces and armed forces that had been following Li Jiu Ming blindly, and chasing Chen Ying

began to fall apart, as many of them put down their weapons, and began to submit to the army.

The moment Li Jiu Ming's faction began to collapse, only a few trusted aides remained by his side.

The fact that Li Jiu Ming had such a number of experts by his side was because he was the mayor of Nanning City previously. Without his title, he's nobody. Hence, the moment the army had declared him as a traitor, he had lost his position as the Mayor of Nanning City, and the forces under him would naturally not listen to him.

Li Jiu Ming saw his troops abandoning their posts and weapons, surrendering to the army, and his face turned ashen as he cried out pathetically: "Damn it!! Why did you guys betray me!!! Why!!! I'm the Mayor of Nanning City!! I'm the Mayor!!!"

One of the trusted aides pulled on Li Jiu Ming frantically as they tried to get him to leave: "Mayor! It's time to leave!! Otherwise, they're gonna arrest you!!"

Li Jiu Ming had been in Guilin City for so long, and naturally had a small team of loyal supporters, as they held up the nearly-insane Li Jiu Ming and made a run for it.

All of a sudden, 2 silhouettes flashed by, as 2 experts decked in military uniform blocked the path.

One of the experts stared fixedly at Li Jiu Ming as he laughed out loud: "Isn't this Mayor Li Jiu Ming? Haha, we've caught a huge fish!"

Seeing the appearance of those 2 military experts, everyone present felt a chill in their spines.

"Go to hell!!" The loyal subordinate beside Li Jiu Ming suddenly pulled out a gun, and fired 2 shots at the 2 military experts.

Li Jiu Ming's subordinate had just moved, when the 2 experts also moved at the same time.

"Die!" The military expert who had laughed unleashed a speed that was frightening, and the distance of more than 10m was instantly closed up in a second. The long blade in his hands turned into a flash of blade light that slashed in the midst of the subordinates of Li Jiu Ming, slicing them into multiple parts, and fresh blood exploded out in every which direction, dyeing the ground.

Li Jiu Ming was stunned silly by the cruel scene unfolding in front of him, as he trembled uncontrollably, screaming: "Don't kill me!! Don't kill me!! I'm willing to do anything!! Please let me go!!"

The military expert placed the long blade beside Li Jiu Ming's neck, as he turned to face the other expert and asked: "Can I kill him?"

The other expert replied indifferently: "The orders were, dead or alive! It's up to you!"

The military expert's eyes flashed with a vicious glint, as he swung with force, instantly decapitating Li Jiu Ming, while saying: "Then, let's just kill him! Such a disgusting politician, I hate these types the most!"

Li Jiu Ming's head rolled onto the floor, his eyes set forever with a look of disbelief and helplessness.

The military expert who had executed Li Jiu Ming then asked his comrade: "Say, why do you think Commander led us to submit to Yue Zhong? Based on our strength, we can totally control Guilin City."

The other cool military expert replied coldly: "No matter how strong you are, a single heavy firepower round is enough to send you to heaven. Commander's foresight is more than what we can imagine! Let's go!"

After which, he turned around and left quickly.

"Wait for me!!" The military expert who had executed Li Jiu

Ming, called out, and chased after him.

Inside the small alley, there was only the corpses of Li Jiu Ming and his trusted aides strewn about, with blood splattered everywhere. It was truly a cruel scene.

Not long after the 2 military experts had left, a figure stepped out from the shadows in the alley, and it was precisely Green Bamboo Triad's chief Gao Ming Hao.

Gao Ming Hao eyed the corpse of Li Jiu Ming, and lightly sighed: "What a pity!"

At the next moment, Gao Ming Hao's eyes seemed to be ablaze with a ferocity: "Yue Zhong, it's your win this time! Next time, I will definitely overcome you!!"

The moment the words left his mouth, Gao Ming Hao turned around, and his figure disappeared.

With the army occupying the centre of Guilin City, and Li Jiu Ming's faction collapsing, Gao Ming Hao directly brought the remnant members of the Green Bamboo Triad and fled Guilin City.

With the suppression from the military, the troublemakers within the city were subdued quickly, and the entire city regained its former peace.

However, because of the assassination of Du Shan Xiong, the resulting chaos had cost the lives of over 2,000 people.

While Guilin City did regain its peace, there was still an unsolved issue, which was the faction led by Chen Ying within the city.

This was a faction that was made up of the police, armed forces as well as special forces, together with the various experts working for the government. While their total combined power was not a match for any of the military divisions, it was still a decent force not to be underestimated.

Within the meeting hall of Guilin City, seated at a long

conference table, on one side was Yue Zhong and his numerous subordinates, on the other, was Chen Ying and the other government officials.

Yue Zhong eyed the various upper echelons of the government and used a domineering tone to speak: "I'm Yue Zhong! I'm currently the commander of the military. I hope that you guys can hand over all your weapons, and accept my reorganization! In exchange, I'll protect your personal property."

By now, the forces in Yue Zhong's control was more than enough to deter any resistance, and this was why he decided to be direct and forceful as he ordered the government.

When his words came out, all the officials were instantly agitated. No one was willing to give up their power, and they turned their gazes to Chen Ying.

Chen Ying mulled for a while, before replying slowly: "Fine! We can hand over all weapons! We'll accept your reorganization as well. However, you must promise to protect our personal property and families as well as the stability of Guilin City."

Yue Zhong nodded when he heard that: "Sure!!"

At this time, a middle-aged man stood up in the hall and berated Yue Zhong: "Wait a moment!! I refuse!! This is Guilin City! Not yours, Yue Zhong's Guilin City! What right do you have to demand us to surrender and accept your reshuffling?!"

Yue Zhong frowned, and a military expert immediately stepped forward to grab the man by his neck and twisted forcefully. With a 'kacha' sound, the man died instantly with his neck turned backwards, his eyes wide with shock.

Witnessing this, the various officials broke out in cold sweat.

Yue Zhong surveyed his surroundings and asked coolly: "Is there anyone else?"

No one else dared to voice their two cents.

After Chen Ying had handed over all the forces, Yue Zhong allowed the officials to take away their personal belongings, while staying in Guilin City to live as rich men.

From the 2nd day on, Yue Zhong began reorganizing his troops on a huge scale.

The original armored division or 1st Battalion led by Zhang Xue Wang was turned into Yue Zhong's direct battalion, with Hu Yi as the vice-Commander. He inserted a number of the experts that he brought from Tianxin District. Larman's foreign forces troops were also integrated into the 1st Battalion. Yue Zhong then assigned the captive troops from Zhu Lei and Ma Fang, the experts from the Heaven Union as well as the various members of the Green Stone Triad into the 2nd Battalion, with Zheng Ming He as the Commander. The 3rd Battalion comprised of other members of the Green Stone Triad, as well as the experts from Zhu Lei and Ma Fang's troops, with Ying Kai Shan as the Commander. Yue Zhong then set the elite experts of the Heaven Union, Zhang Xue Wang's troops as well as the various elites from the other troops into the 4th Battalion, a Special Forces troop, with Bai Xiao Sheng as the commander. The 5th Battalion was made up of Chai Zi Cang and his troops, the 6th Battalion was Wang He and his troops, the 7th Battalion was Murong He and his troops, and the 8th Battalion was made up of the armed forces, special forces as well as other experts that had surrendered during the civil war. The commander was Chen Sheng Gang. The 9th Battalion was made up of the new recruits that had been trained under Zhang Xue Wang previously, and finally the 17th Battalion, made up of Chen Yu and his troops that might listen, but not entirely dependent on Yue Zhong. Other than all those, there were 4 other battalions made up of new soldiers preparing to be trained.

After a round of reorganizing, Yue Zhong could be said to have established control over the entire force.

Other than the 17th Battalion led by Chen Yu, the rest could be

deployed by Yue Zhong as and when he wished. In fact, the 17th Battalion was likewise the same, however, he decided to abide by his agreement and did not take away the commanding rights from Chen Yu.

After the cleanup, Yue Zhong's military size had now reached 10,000 people, and they could be said to be decent soldiers that were trained in modern warfare from before the apocalypse as well as experts that had become stronger through enhancements. Their combat strength was not ordinary, and regardless of Mutant Beasts, zombies or other human enemies, they would prove to be a threat.

Guilin City's inhabitants were numerous, hence there were more Evolvers on the whole as well. After reorganizing the troops, Yue Zhong could be said to have truly established a force with numerous experts, with the ability to activate over 20 Evolvers as and when he wished.

After settling the issues of the military, Yue Zhong commanded the whole troop to undergo training, as he began to establish a government.

With regards to the government, Yue Zhong directly brought back Chen Ying whom he had stripped of all authority to act as the governor. With regards to Chen Ying, Yue Zhong actually appreciated his values and way of handling matters, especially his children, who knew not to toe the line, unlike other despotic 2nd-generation ne'er do wells. Furthermore, Chen Ying's governance was solid, and although Yue Zhong was growing in terms of governing, compared to Chen Ying who was an old-timer, he was still lacking.

With the help of Chen Ying, the cabinet of the government was quickly established. After a few days, Guilin City not only regained its stability and peace, but even showed signs of prospering.

Furthermore, Yue Zhong made use of the time to send people to

transport the countless Mutant Beasts' corpses back to Guilin City, as it was the winter season, and the weather was much colder and harsher than normal. An entire day would feel like the inside of an industrial refrigerator, and those Mutant Beast corpses had not shown signs of decay yet.

The moment the corpses were brought back to Guilin City, under Chen Ying's supervision, countless Mutant Beast processing plants popped up, and began to prepare the corpses into materials as well as food sources. Even the hair was used for various means.

Gaining such a wealth of resources, the entire Guilin City could partake in this huge benefit. Many found jobs, and gained more food as a result. Yue Zhong also gained more Mutant Beasts hide as well as other usable melee weapons made from the carcasses of the Mutant Beasts. It was truly a win-win situation.

Chapter 435: Yu Xin's First Night!

In the evening, Yue Zhong held up the blood essence of the Type 3 Mutant Beast and looked at it, as he was submerged in his thoughts. That Type 3 Mutant Beast's blood essence was an important ingredient in the manufacturing of the 'Ou Ming Ver 1'.

With a single blood essence, adding on some other ingredients, it could produce 20 vials of 'Ou Ming Ver 1'. All Yue Zhong had to do was to pick out 20 of his experts that were above Level 30 and he would have 20 experts with a Second Order skill each.

However, it was precious and valuable to Yue Zhong as well, due to its potential in strengthening himself. This fact made him hesitate.

Yue Zhong considered for quite a while, before his eyes flashed with decisiveness and swallowed the blood essence into his stomach: "Forget it!! Raising my own strength is the priority now! There are so many experts under the sun, if my strength is insufficient, the moment I die, everything will be for naught!"

The fact that Yue Zhong had reached where he was now, was largely due to his own strength. If he wasn't tyrannical enough, he wouldn't have made it to this point. After all, he had been an ordinary person prior to the apocalypse, unlike Du Shan Xiong who was a regiment commander. Without strength, it would be hard for others to acknowledge him.

When the blood essence entered Yue Zhong's abdomen, it turned into a hot source of energy that spread across his entire body, enhancing every cell continuously.

At the same time, there was a faint pink gas within that blood essence that wafted within his body, causing, his temperature to rise rapidly.

Upon swallowing that Type 3 Mutant Beast's blood essence, Yue

Zhong had immediately come to an understanding, as he pressed a button by his bed: "As expected, there's an aphrodisiac poison within."

Soon after, the bedroom door was pushed open, and Ning Yu Xin appeared, dressed in a light nightgown. She saw Yue Zhong laying down on the bed, as his body seemed to be heating up, and immediately rushed over and asked in concern: "Yue Zhong, what's wrong?"

Yue Zhong raised his head, his eyes suddenly flashing with the ferocity of a beast, as he stared fixedly at Ning Yu Xin.

He discovered that the snow-white skin, coupled with her voluptuous figure, that pair of full breasts that might not be considered explosive, but still a stunning C-cup, in addition to her exquisite looks and that slight air of haughtiness, all combined into a single beautiful sight.

Yue Zhong had felt that Ning Yu Xin was truly a beauty out of the ordinary when he saw her normally, but now that his heart was set aflame by the aphrodisiac poison, he felt that the her currently standing in front of him was like an angel that had descended from the heavens.

Yue Zhong's body flashed forwards, embracing Ning Yu Xin in his arms, and then pushing her under him, like a wild beast.

Ning Yu Xin, being pressed under Yue Zhong, seeing his ragged breath and rising body temperature and started to get frightened: "Yue Zhong, what's wrong with you? Did something happen?"

On the battlefield, regardless of the amount of damage and injuries he suffered, the bones that he shattered, or the limbs that he lost, Yue Zhong had always rebounded back like a devil with a vigor as he stood proud and unyielding. It was the first time that she saw Yue Zhong losing his control like this, and it caused her to be a little anxious.

Yue Zhong looked at Ning Yu Xin and admired the beauty that could cause most men to go crazy, and tore her clothes off, revealing her stunning, youthful figure.

"Mm!!" Ning Yu Xin was currently flushed red and felt light-headed, as her heartbeat quickened.

Yue Zhong grabbed hold of her slender hands, and suddenly penetrated her.

A sharp pain coursed through Ning Yu Xin's body, as a blood-red stain appeared on the snow-white sheets, and her sharp eyes were currently brimming with tears, at the same time, betraying an expression of loss. *

Ning Yu Xin had been a hardworking student, with an extremely good upbringing, and was considered a lady. She was not like her young sister Ning Ruo Zi that had a weird temper, and had her dreams of having a dashing Prince Charming sweeping her off her feet. Being taken suddenly by Yue Zhong, whose looks was definitely far from the ideal Prince Charming in her mind, this caused her to be at a loss. Although she knew her fate, she couldn't help feeling like that when it finally happened.

"Big Brother! I'm here!!" Right at this time, the door was pushed open, and Mu Xiang Ling entered the room carefully.

She was different from Ning Yu Xin, and was prepared since long ago. She knew that she had become Yue Zhong's, and she didn't resist her fate, instead, choosing to get on good terms with Yue Zhong, in order to become indispensable. Hence, she had entered in between the bedsheets with Yue Zhong every night stealthily.

Inside Yue Zhong's room, White Bones was standing guard, as long as it did not detect any killing intent, it would not act, keeping still as though it didn't exist. If it felt the tiniest sliver of killing intent, it would instantly shoot out a bone blade to engage the enemy,

Mu Xiang Ling entered the room, and immediately saw Yue Zhong and Ning Yu Xin embroiled in an intense physical exchange, and she wasn't shy in the slightest, instead her face was one of curiosity as she chuckled: "Wa! So intense!! Yu Xin-jiejie! You're stealing a quick bite eh!!"

"Don't look!! Ah!! Don't look!!" Ning Yu Xin caught sight of Mu Xiang Ling who had suddenly appeared, and her careful upbringing immediately kicked in, as she felt incredibly ashamed, before arching her body in an extremely seductive peak, reaching her climax, and slumped to the sheets, exhausted.

Mu Xiang Ling saw that Yue Zhong was not in a right state, and immediately grinned, before tiptoeing out: "Yu Xin-jiejie, I shan't disturb you guys tonight! Hehe!!"

Ning Yu Xin's heart was currently full of embarrassment and shame as she moaned silently: "Nooo! I was seen!! How can I face others now!!"

At this time, Yue Zhong resumed his ravaging of her, causing her to be engulfed in a chaos of emotions and pleasure, leaving her with no room to think.

"Congratulations! You have gained +5 in all attributes, and an additional increase of 10 points in Strength!"

As Yue Zhong hugged Ning Yu Xin tightly and was about to fall asleep, the notification resounded within his mind.

The blood essence of the Type 3 Mutant Beast was truly shocking, instantly giving Yue Zhong an enhancement of 40 points. However, it was the first time using it, hence the effect was much more distinct. After this, if he took any more Type 3 Mutant Beast blood essence, the effects would be diminished.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong woke up groggily, and saw the ravishing Ning Yu Xin lying next to him.

He immediately thought to the previous night and his actions,

and felt his head hurting. At that time, he had been inflamed with desire, but he didn't lose his consciousness nor memories, and he could remember every single detail of what he did very clearly.

Yue Zhong admired her delicate face and bent down to kiss her forehead. No matter what, this beauty had already become his, and he would not let go.

The moment Yue Zhong kissed, the spot he touched flushed slightly red, before her entire face turned red as well, and her body trembled slightly.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong knew at once that this alluring woman was already awake, but she was so shy that she did not dare to open her eyes.

Yue Zhong looked at the trembling Ning Yu Xin and felt mischievous, lightly licking her neck and bit her collarbone gently before chuckling: "So damn fine! Shall we have one more round?"

"Wuu!!" Ning Yu Xin immediately moaned out like a frightened kitten, and shot upwards, grabbing the blanket and wrapping that gorgeous body of hers, curling into a ball and begged Yue Zhong: "Yue-gege, not now!!"

Right at this time, Mu Xiang Ling bounded through the door, dressed neatly as she revealed a vibrant smile and said: "Ohhhh!! Good morning Big Brother!!"

Mu Xiang Ling wore that innocent smile as she bounded up on the bed, and grabbed Yue Zhong's arm as she teased: "Hehe!! Are you guys playing a game? I want to join in."

Yue Zhong ruffled Mu Xiang Ling's head and threatened: "Go eat your breakfast!! Otherwise, I'll spank your bottom!"

Mu Xiang Ling's eyes scrunched up as she shot them a meaningful smile: "I got it! Big Brother, better have some fun with Yu Xin-jiejie! Hehe!!"

Ning Yu Xin saw that smile of Mu Xiang Ling, and thought back

to last night, and her face immediately flushed red with embarrassment again.

After washing up, Yue Zhong brought Ning Yu Xin to the dining hall.

At the table, Yue Zhong, Ning Yu Xin, Xin Jia Rou and Mu Xiang Ling sat down to dine.

There were 8 beautiful maids standing in 2 rows on either side of the table, waiting on them.

These 8 maids were offered by the various factions after Yue Zhong had eradicated the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad. Yue Zhong had not stood on ceremony, as he immediately accepted them and assigned them tasks. After all, having beautiful girls working within the house was like having beautiful decor.

On the table, each of them had a piece of Type 3 Mutant Beast meat, a piece of sausage as well as a cup of milk.

Yue Zhong took up his chopsticks and picked up the Type 3 Mutant Beast meat and placed it in his mouth. As he chewed an amazing flavour burst forth within his mouth, and the energy inside flowed out, filling him up.

The meat of the Type 3 Mutant Beast brought about lots of benefits, with ordinary folks gaining at least 1 or 2 points of enhancement after consuming it. Although it was not effective for Yue Zhong, it could replenish his energy.

Mu Xiang Ling finished up her Type 3 Mutant Beast meat, when suddenly, she started to become feverish, as her eyes went out of focus, and she slumped to the table.

*1 Dedition: Another white bed ruined by red blood...

Chapter 436: Strange Movements in Europe!

Xin Jia Rou who was seated beside Mu Xiang Ling saw this, she immediately went to prop her up as she asked worriedly: "Xiang Ling!! Xiang Ling!! What's the matter?"

"This is.... Natural Evolution!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with wonder as he reached out to feel her forehead, noticing that her temperature was feverish. He had felt shocked and immediately came to that conclusion.

Such a natural evolution had occurred once in front of Yue Zhong, which was Zhuo Ya Tong's evolution. At that time, Zhuo Ya Tong had awoken in front of Yue Zhong, causing the him who was not yet an Evolver to be filled with envy.

Xin Jia Rou looked at Yue Zhong with a face of worry as she asked: "Master, is Xiang Ling alright?"

Yue Zhong consoled her: "Don't worry!! I'll get a doctor to look at her!"

By now, Yue Zhong was in control over the entire Guilin City, getting a doctor wasn't a problem.

Very quickly, a few doctors were summoned to their place, and as they took a look at the feverish and unconscious Mu Xiang Ling, they could only prescribe medicine to help control the fever.

As Yue Zhong was busy taking care of Mu Xiang Ling, on the other side of the globe, within a luxurious mansion in Berlin, Europe. A few Aryan men were seated around a table engaged in discussion.

One of them was dressed in a neat suit, and he had a hook nose as well as eagle-like gaze, his face chiselled, and his golden hair slicked back. He had a scepter in his hands, and as he sat there at the sofa, he was emitting an intense aura. Just by sitting there quietly, it felt like the entire room belonged to him. If any ordinary

person were to sit beside him, they would be pressured by that aura, to the point that they would not dare speak.

The scepter-wielding man spoke out solemnly: "The Judgement Corps at the Guangxi area of China had failed. They have instead, just recently established a new form of authority, whose leader seems to be called Yue Zhong, and he's Chinese. I would like to hear your opinions?"

A burly and muscular man, with blond hair and blue eyes and a handsome look stood up as he spoke in a ringing voice: "Those damn retarded Chinese that grew whips behind their heads dare to go against us Aryans? They truly deserve death. We should just set fire to their entire place and burn them all to the ground!! Esteemed Apostle, do grant me, Andrew, the permission to head to Guangxi, and I will definitely bring my men to take care of them!! We will seek redress for our fallen comrades. Glory to the great Aryan race!"

The scepter-wielding man with blond hair was the 5th Apostle of the 12 Apostles in the Kingdom of God, Hallex. He was one who held considerable power and authority within the Kingdom of God as well.

Hallex looked at Andrew as he spoke severely: "Andrew, your intentions and resolve are good! However, those yellow-skinned monkeys are no longer those buffoons with plaited hair! Although they're a lowly and despicable race, we cannot help but acknowledge, their combat strength is truly astonishing. Even the United States in the Korean-War were forced to sign a humiliating treaty. If we are to restore the Master Race's glory throughout the world, we have to take our enemies seriously. Even if they're an ant, we must use all our force to stamp them out!"

Andrew lowered his head in shame as he replied: "Yes, Great Apostle Sir!!"

The 5th Apostle Hallex wasn't just a white supremacist. In fact,

he was a huge supporter of the 'Aryan master race' belief. He shared in the extremist views of the propagator and instigator of World War 2, Hitler, and in his mind, only the Aryan race were the rightful and elevated race, all other races were lowly in comparison.

Hence, Hallex had gathered a number of like-minded fanatics, and they all held the restoration of the Aryan's glory as their single-minded purpose.

Nationalism was a double-edged sword, it could cause people to be extremely narrow-minded and stubborn, but at the same time, it could cause like-minded people to gather together. Hallex relied on that nationalistic view to gather his subordinates, and they were all loyal to him, even willing to die for their ideals.

One guy in the west side, who has dressed simply and had a pair of glasses mulled silently, before saying: "Apostle, sir! I feel that we should try and rope Yue Zhong into our Kingdom of God. If he could join us, then we would gain a pawn over at the China region. Furthermore, if he becomes one of us, we can become stronger as well."

Andrew immediately glared at that middle-aged man in glasses and roared: "Porter! What are you talking about? How can we let those lowly yellow-skinned monkeys into our Kingdom of God? Are you crazy? Just breathing the same air as those monkeys makes me sick! And you want them to join us? Are you trying to drive me crazy?"

Porter replied solemnly: "Andrew!! Even Hitler had formed an alliance with the Japanese during the war. For the sake of restoring glory to our Aryan race, we need to make concessions and compromise when necessary."

All of the people gathered in the room were Aryan supremacists, and in their eyes, any other race was lowly. Amongst them, besides other white races, they would look down and refer to the rest with

derogatory terms.

Hallex turned to another lean man who had been silent all this while, and asked: "Ralph, what're your thoughts?"

Ralph spoke slowly: "Apostle sir!! I reckon that in the current world, manpower is strength! The number of people in Guilin City is too high! We should decrease that number. That's my first proposition. Otherwise, when Yue Zhong joins our Kingdom of God, he would not rely on us entirely."

Hallex's pupils narrowed as he asked: "What's your recommendation?"

Ralph laughed: "Wuyan Hong of Vietnam in Lang Son City especially hates the Chinese. He detests their land and people. We just have to instigate the battle between him and Yue Zhong."

Porter lifted his glasses and piped in: "Ralph! It's winter now! Furthermore, the weather has been especially harsh across the globe this year. Even Guangxi has been reported to have some crazy winds and hailstorms. With such strange weather, both Wuyan Hong and Yue Zhong would not be so stupid as to deploy their troops to fight."

After the apocalypse, the winter had become abnormally cold, and the entire world seemed to be enveloped in a blanket of ice, as all hustle and bustle slowed to a crawl.

Other than a selected few, the majority of fighting forces had all but ceased battle. The risk was too huge, as a sudden hail storm could cause an entire troop to be wiped out.

Especially the Europe region, which was snowy to begin with, now that the weather had turned horrid, and snow was everywhere. If it wasn't for the vast resources of the Kingdom of God, where they diverted some to provide warmth for their facilities, a large number of their forces would have perished from the cold.

Ralph replied mildly: "I know. But we should still send some instigators first, otherwise when the snow melts, if they don't clash, then there's no point."

Hallex eyed Ralph and said solemnly: "Fine! This will be handled by you Ralph!"

Ralph immediately bowed in respect: "Yes, Apostle Sir!"

Yue Zhong was unaware that he was already noticed by his enemies on the European side, as he sat beside Mu Xiang Ling and kept watch over her.

Early the next morning, Mu Xiang Ling groaned, as she slowly opened her eyes and saw Yue Zhong and Xin Jia Rou sitting by her side.

Yue Zhong asked Mu Xiang Ling: "How are you? Feeling better?"

"Much better!! Oh yes! Big Brother, I'm now already an Evolver! I'm a Spirit-based Evolver, with the Level 3 Skill Telekinesis." Mu Xiang Ling broke out into an excited smile, as she made a grab in mid-air, and a vase came flying towards her from afar.

Yue Zhong waved his hands, and a set of high-grade equipment appeared on the bed: "Congratulations on becoming an Evolver! This set of equipment is your reward!"

Yue Zhong had executed a number of experts, and these experts had their equipment as well, hence giving a set wasn't a hard thing. It was just that anything of Level 4 Type equipment or better was harder to obtain.

"Thanks Big Brother!!" Mu Xiang Liang grabbed the equipment and could almost feel the enhancement she would be gaining. She leapt into Yue Zhong's arms in excitement, kissing his cheeks twice.

A set of quality equipment could bring about an earth-shattering change, by now Mu Xiang Ling was Level 11, and wearing that set of equipment could allow her stats to be on par with an ordinary

Level 30 Enhancer.

Xin Jia Rou looked at Mu Xiang Ling and felt comforted as well. Now, both mother and daughter were Evolvers, and with such strength, regardless of what happens in the future, at least they will have the strength to protect themselves.

Mu Xiang Ling hugged Yue Zhong's arm as she pleaded: "It's been a boring day! Big Brother, bring me out to play!"

"Fine!!" Yue Zhong was also itching to go out with Mu Xiang Ling pestering.

Mu Xiang Ling pounced into his embrace again and kissed his face: "Yay!! Big Brother is the best!"

Yue Zhong chuckled and brought Mu Xiang Ling out.

The moment they left the villa, a harsh cold wind blew over, causing Mu Xiang Ling's face to be flushed red, as she let out a breath, causing a small fog to rise in front of her.

There was a huge snowstorm in the previous night, and there was a layer of ice on the ground.

Guangxi was generally warm, and even during winter, there would hardly be snow, Guilin City had never seen snow in the past decades. This first winter since the apocalypse had seen a number of snowstorms, and there was even an incredible hailstorm in the past few days, directly freezing over 200 survivors within Guilin City to death.

Chapter 437: Falcon Type I 14.5mm Sniper Rifle!

"Come, let us hunt and kill Mutant Beasts!" Yue Zhong was in high spirits as he pulled Mu Xiang Ling and they came to the Pearl River Bridge.

The entire Pearl River ran through Guilin City, and there were numerous aquatic Mutant Beasts residing within. It was just that, since there were many experts in Guilin City, as Yue Zhong brought Mu Xiang Ling over, there were already people gathered around.

A number of fishing experts were throwing poles into the river as they conducted their fishing.

There were also a number of Guilin City experts that stood quietly near the river bank, awaiting the aquatic Mutant Beasts to come ashore.

Compared to the mountain range, the Pearl River wasn't some decent training grounds. Because no one knew exactly when the aquatic Mutant Beasts would swim ashore or fall for the bait.

There were too many people in Guilin City, and the number of experts was high as well. Initially, when the aquatic Mutant Beasts within the river had started hunting, they had gained decent harvests, gobbling up numerous humans. However, as the city grew and developed, more experts appeared on the scene, and it became a reversal, and the river turned into hunting grounds for the humans to fish and train.

After an intense period of slaughter, the high level Mutant Beasts were all hunted to near extinction, and few dared to come near shore.

Pearl River was after all a small river, and not some huge riverbed, hence the amount of Mutant Beasts it sustained was not

high. If it were a huge riverbed, or even a small sea, then the Mutant Beasts inside would be terrifying.

"Coming!! Coming!!"

All of a sudden, there was activity near the surface of the water, and the ordinary humans immediately fled the scene.

At the next moment, a huge water spout gushed to the skies, and a huge Mutant Black Fish popped out from the water, pouncing towards the shore.

At this time, 7 experts came rushing over with military blades, as a flurry of blade strikes lashed out on the body of the Mutant Black Fish, directly slashing it into a dozen pieces.

"Mine!! This is my prey!!"

"It obviously is mine! What are you snatching for?"

"Don't quarrel! Let's split it evenly!!"

After making short work of the Mutant Black Fish, the 7 experts began arguing intensely over the rights to the Mutant Fish. At the end, they agreed to a compromise, and the expert who contributed the most gained the largest portion, and the rest split the remainder equally.

"Sell me 1 jin of fish meat. I'll buy for 8 jin ration ticket!!"

"I want 10 jin of fish meat, I'm willing to pay 80 jin ration ticket!!"

The moment those experts had finished discussing, the ordinary humans came swarming over, raising their tickets in order to purchase the fish meat.

Ordinary survivors would usually be unable to feast on the flesh of the Mutant Black Fish, however, Evolvers and Enhancers could get to enjoy such nourishing food, especially those who were merchants as well. Using the Mutant Black Fish meat as an ingredient, they could prepare some dishes that were worth more money.

Mu Xiang Ling looked at the commotion and spoke with a little concern: "So many people!! Big Brother!! There's are so many people here, the competition is bound to be strong!!"

Since hunting strange beasts would give opportunities for enhancement, there would be instances of quarrels and even fights over the Mutant Beasts. Such incidents were endless.

"Not an issue!! Watch me!!" Yue Zhong chuckled and pulled out a Type 2 nuclei and after tying it with a steel wire, he threw it into the water, and pulled out a vial of blood from a Type 2 Mutant Beast and dripped some in the water.

When the Type 2 blood just entered the water, there was suddenly a bustle of activity under the surface, as a whole school of fish swam furiously towards them, trying to swallow the blood of the Type 2 Mutant Beast.

After another 5 minutes, huge waves appeared once again, as numerous Mutant Black Fishes appeared from the water as they pounced towards the Type 2 nuclei.

The Type 2 nuclei was like a treasure that helped these Mutant Beasts evolve, hence the moment they caught scent of the blood, and sensed the existence of a nuclei, they would charge over in a frenzy.

Yue Zhong smiled lightly, as he handed the Level 4 Black Tooth Blade to Mu Xiang Ling and said: "Look! Aren't they out now? I shall hand them to you!"

Mu Xiang Ling activated her [Telekinesis] power and grabbed the Black Tooth Blade in mid-air, before controlling it to shoot towards the Mutant Black Fish, and with a flash of the blade, the Mutant Black Fish was easily sliced in two, fresh blood spraying everywhere.

The Black Tooth Blade was a Level 4 Treasure, and its sharpness was incredible. With Mu Xiang Ling controlling it with her power,

it was easy to deal with the Mutant Black Fish. If it had been any other normal weapons, it would be harder for her to use them to penetrate the armor of the Black Fish. Decent equipment would raise the combat potential.

After killing that Mutant Black Fish, Mu Xiang Ling instantly rose by 2 levels, and her confidence gained a huge boost as she charged on once more, slicing another Mutant Black Fish into two.

With the control of her Telekinesis, the huge Black Tooth Blade was slashing through the air as though it was being used by a person to execute a set of sword-arts, flowing beautifully as it slaughtered the Mutant Black Fishes. The moment any of those Mutant Beasts leapt out the water, they would be immediately dealt with, and soon, the riverbank were filled with Mutant Black Fishes' corpses.

Seeing this Mu Xiang Ling easily slaughtering a number of those Mutant Black Fishes, many of the eyes present turned bloodshot.

When those Mutant Black Fishes came up to shore, they would become dishes for the human experts. However, since those Mutant Black Fishes had been hunted aggressively, few dared to come up to feast. Today, Mu Xiang Ling had managed to slaughter a dozen at one go, and they were extremely jealous. It was a decent haul, if converted to ration tickets, it was enough for them to head to the most lavish nightclub and live freely for a certain period.

Just as Mu Xiang Ling killed about over a dozen Mutant Black Fishes, the 7 experts that were not weak came up to Yue Zhong, and their tone extremely unfriendly as they barked: "Wait a moment!! Who allowed you guys to hunt Mutant Beasts here? Don't tell me you guys don't know that it is our gang's, the Tian Nan Triad's, territory?"

Yue Zhong eyed them as he replied indifferently: "Oh! How can you say I don't know that it's your turf? Did you guys buy this piece of land?"

One of the expert glared at Yue Zhong and shouted: "Brat!! If our Boss Liu say that this is our Tian Nan Triad's turf, it is our Tian Nan Triad's turf. Are you courting death? All those Mutant Black Fishes are ours from now on! Get lost! Otherwise, this Daddy will not be courteous with you!!"

Although they had seen Mu Xiang Ling killing the Mutant Black Fishes easily, they had not been intimidated. They were also experts of above Level 20, and combining their forces, killing a Level 30 Enhancer wasn't a problem. Furthermore, while Mu Xiang Ling was just a little loli, they disregarded Yue Zhong even more.

Regardless of era or time period, there would always be hooligans out to create trouble. Although Yue Zhong had dissolved the Heavenly Dragon Triad and Green Bamboo Triad, within Guilin City, the various other smaller gangs and triads were starting to act up.

Mu Xiang Ling called out back at the 7 experts in a sturdy voice as she scolded them: "Scram!! If you don't, this lady won't treat you nicely!!"

"Little bitch, you're courting death!!" The chief of the Tian Nan Triad, Chief Liu instantly got enraged, and shot forwards, his hands reaching out to slap Mu Xiang Ling.

Mu Xiang Ling immediately darted behind Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhogn directly lashed out viciously with a kick on the chest of Chief Liu, causing this Level 31 Enhancer to instantly fly back 6, 7 metres, crashing onto the ground.

"Everyone, attack together!! Kill him!!" The remaining 6 were furious as well, as they charged at Yue Zhong together.

These 6 were all Strength and Agility-based Enhancers, with no special skills. Furthermore, their Strength and Agility weren't enhanced much.

With a single movement from Yue Zhong's fist, a flurry of shadows came assailing the 6 men, causing them to be knocked to the ground as well.

From afar, the various experts of the other triads saw this scene, and their hearts turned cold, not daring to challenge Yue Zhong's authority.

"Leader!" The moment those 6 men fell to the ground, Bai Xiao Sheng came swooping in like a spectre, with 6 other men in black uniform behind him, all emitting the auras of sharp swords, as they appeared beside Yue Zhong.

Bai Xiao Sheng and the other 6 men in black were all experts that Yue Zhong had selected specially as his trusted elite team. Each of them possessed tremendous fighting power, and had followed him through countless battles. They were also his personal guards.

Yue Zhong personally had great strength, but if all the experts present were to surround and attack together, there was a possibility of him falling at their hands. Hence, he had established a small unit whose primary objective was to ensure his safety. The team was named Zhongnan Sea Bodyguards.

Yue Zhong pointed to those 7 experts who had been defeated by him as he declared: "Arrest them! Throw them into the Scum Battalion to be trained harshly. Each of their targets will be to hunt 500 zombies."

Yue Zhong's Scum Battalion went by different standards and different instructions. Some of the scum were Enhancers, and killing zombies were extremely easy to them. Towards such people, their targets compared to ordinary humans were different.

Bai Xiao Sheng waved his hands, as the 7 Tian Nian Triad members were dragged away like dogs: "Bring them away!!"

Out of the blue, the water surface rippled again, as a Type 2 Mutant Black Fish the size of a house broke out of the water,

moving towards the shore.

When the various experts saw that, their faces turned in fright, as they retreated backwards hastily.

The Type 2 Mutant Black Fish was also an existence which only some top-tier experts could handle. And these top-tier experts were either in the employment of bigger factions, or currently undergoing training in the mountain range, hence it was not possible for them to be present.

Of those present, there were no experts who were able to deal with the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish.

"Right on time!! We've caught the big one!" Yue Zhong saw the monstrous Type 2 Mutant Black Fish and there was a hint of glee in his eyes, as he tugged hard, pulling the Type 2 nuclei back into his hands.

The Type 2 Mutant Black Fish felt the nuclei that could enhance itself landing on Yue Zhong's hands, and it immediately swam towards land in agitation.

Mu Xiang Ling saw the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish, and her eyes flashed in excitement as well, controlling the Level 4 Black Tooth Blade to slash towards the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish.

If she could kill this Type 2 Mutant Black Fish, it would be a huge boost to her enhancement level. Although Mu Xiang Ling was young, she was wildly ambitious. In this apocalyptic world, being weak was a sin. Those who were weak could not hold on to their dignity, and were trampled on. Since she had become Yue Zhong's, she was not willing to stay weak forever.

The 2m-long Black Tooth Blade slashed the head of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish viciously, but was deflected off by the layer of mucus covering the skin. The blade left only a slight mark, before flying away.

Mu Xiang Ling's Telekinesis was not of a high enough level, and

hence the control she had was not strong enough, there was no way she could penetrate the protection of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish.

If it were a Level 40 Strength-based Evolver that was using the Black Tooth Blade, then it was possible to use strength to cleave into the meat of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish.

Mu Xiang Ling saw that her attack had no effect on the defence of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish and her eyes flashed with disappointment, running to Yue Zhong's side. The Type 2 Mutant Black Fish, on the other hand, had been enraged by that blow, as it opened its huge mouth, and show a green glob of mucus towards Mu Xiang Ling.

Yue Zhong shot forwards, standing in front of Mu Xiang Ling, as he raised his hands, conjuring a Devil Flame tornado in front of him. It swallowed up the incoming green projectile, incinerating it cleanly till there was nothing left.

From within the Devil Flame tornado, a sudden sharp arrow of flame shot outwards, piercing the head of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish and exploding within, causing the brain of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish to be melted into nothing, directly killing it.

The gigantic Type 2 Mutant Black Fish then slumped lifelessly onto the ground, dropping a Green Treasure Box and 100 survivor coins.

Yue Zhong eyed the dead Type 2 Mutant Black Fish and felt a sense of lament, just a few months back, he had been a weak existence in the face of such a Type 2 Mutant Beast. However, now, he had grown to become an expert who could easily make short work of such a Type 2 Mutant Beast.

Yue Zhong opened up the green Treasure Box and after the glowing light dissipated, a 2m-long sniper rifle that was covered with shining metal lustre and sci-fi colours appeared in front of his eyes.

"Level 4: Falcon i-Type 14.5 mm Sniper Rifle, with an effective range of 3,000 metres. Everyday it will automatically generate one round."

"Good stuff!!" Yue Zhong immediately grabbed it and used the scope to test the Falcon i-Type 14.5 mm Sniper Rifle, and was pleased with the result.

Currently, of the snipers in the world, the top-tier ones had a maximum effective range of about 1km, maybe even 2km. It was not that they were not strong enough, but they had lacking decent sniper rifles. This Falcon i-Type 14.5 mm Sniper Rifle had an effective range of 3km, surpassing the top sniper rifle in the world right now. With it, Yue Zhong could easily snipe any expert at a 3km distance. The only shortfall was that, its ammunition was too little, and could not be used as a main weapon.

Chapter 438: Conflict At The Restaurant!

The Mutant Beasts corpses laying by the riverbank would naturally be handled by Yue Zhong's subordinates.

Yue Zhong held Mu Xiang Ling's hands as they came to the city centre of Guilin City.

They discovered that currently, there were all sorts of vendors and people walking about and browsing, the bustling activity a close shadow of the pre-apocalyptic glory.

Although there had been incidents of riots and instability, there were still many people in Guilin City. So while there were deaths, it was not heavy enough to impact the energy level within Guilin City.

Yue Zhong observed the flourishing scene and felt a sense of pride, this huge city of about 900,000 survivors now belonged to him. In this apocalyptic world, humans were the most precious treasure, with about 900,000 people, he possessed a decent amount of fighting resources.

All of a sudden, a rumbling sound came from beside Yue Zhong, as Mu Xiang Ling lowered head in embarrassment, saying: "I'm hungry!!"

"Let us eat then!"

Yue Zhong looked around the busy street, before pulling Mu Xiang Ling along, and entered an extremely clean and simple shop, which was filled with customers.

The moment they stepped into the shop, they caught a whiff of an exotic aroma of herbs and fresh meat.

The customers inside the shop were stuffing their faces with fragrant bowls of Mutant Beast meat.

"Esteemed customers!!" When Yue Zhong and Mu Xiang Ling

entered the shop, they were greeted by a pretty lady, whose exquisite features including a pair of big eyes and a healthy colour, was smiling brightly. Her long hair was tied in a ponytail, and she welcomed both of them to a table to be seated.

Upon sitting down, Mu Xiang Ling eyed the young, beautiful waitress warily, her eyes filled with dislike.

The young lady in ponytail asked: "May I know what would you guys like?"

Yue Zhong asked: "What would you recommend here?"

The waitress smiled and introduced a few dishes: "Our famous dish here is the Braised Mutant Pork Shoulder, as well as the Braised Mutant Black Fish. These are our signature dishes! Other than those, we also have some common dishes."

Yue Zhong nodded: "Let's have those 2 then!"

"Great!" The waitress immediately noted their order and left swiftly towards the kitchen.

Mu Xiang Ling then broke into a sweet smile: "Hehe! Big Brother! That young miss is quite the beauty, isn't she? Do you want me to help you chase her? If I act, she will definitely be yours."

Yue Zhong reached out to pinch Mu Xiang Ling's cheeks, as he chuckled: "Silly! If I want any beauty, it's just a simple matter of opening my mouth. Why should I need you to do it for me?"

Being together with Mu Xiang Ling, Yue Zhong was extremely at ease. At least this little loli didn't fear him like other people. In his path to reach where he was, to gain control and authority over Guilin City, he had killed without blinking. Even his subordinates and trusted aides viewed him with a little fear amidst their respect, hence they didn't dare crack jokes openly.

Even his close brother Hu Yi had been assigned to be trained together with the new recruits, and did not have the time to chat idly.

Hu Yi's combat strength was tyrannical, but he was lacking in his military bearing. Hence, to fit in the modern warfare tactics, Yue Zhong had him thrown into special training, using the training of the elites with twice the difficulty to polish him.

If Yue Zhong wanted to utilize his brother, he had to have the capabilities. Hence he had decided to get Hu Yi whipped into shape.

In this apocalyptic world, personal strength was important. However, the strongest force would still be an army made of individual experts. Yue Zhong could single-handedly deal with 2,000 zombies on his own. However, against a million-strong horde, even if he hacked and slashed till his arms rot, it wouldn't be enough. He would have to retreat in the face of such numbers. However, with a 10,000-strong army, he wouldn't need to fear a million-strong army.

Mu Xiang Ling slapped Yue Zhong's right hand away, as she pouted: "Wuu!! Don't pinch my face!! It's gonna become round because of you! Then I won't look pretty anymore!"

Yue Zhong chuckled as he looked at Mu Xiang Ling, seeing this bundle of joy, he naturally felt more light-hearted. Since returning to Guilin City, he had been under a lot of stress.

Mu Xiang Ling seemed to have turned into a little devil as she taunted: "Gege! A sentence from you can get a beauty to accompany you. But in the end, these people accompany you because they fear your power, not that they truly want to be with you. What's the meaning in that? If you truly want to be a casanova, you must obtain their hearts, then you can be considered a true playboy. Furthermore, by getting any beauty to fall for you, wouldn't that be proof of your charm?"

If it were any other lustful man, they would be inspired by Mu Xiang Ling's words. However, Yue Zhong merely ruffled her head as he smiled: "I don't have the patience or time to chase them

slowly. It's just a short break for me to breathe. There are still many things I have to do."

The Kingdom of God had monopolized all the resources on Europe's end. Europe had cutting-edge technology and the moment they finished their researches and wiped out the zombies, they would be able to progress and develop extremely quickly.

In comparison, China had plenty of lands, which were currently controlled by who knows how many ambitious and power-hungry warlords who had risen. Considering all these gave Yue Zhong a headache.

It was not only Yue Zhong who was busy expanding his power and influence. With the change of the world, all sorts of strange characters that had been oppressed by modern society laws and norms, had all risen. If Yue Zhong wanted to unify the entire country, it would require an unknown amount of energy and resources.

If one was backward, they would invite bullying. It was a proven course of nature, everyone in modern society knew that well. The moment Europe consolidated their power, and Asia was still in chaos, it was not improbable for the Opium War to repeat itself. Europe was never willing for a strong Asia that could rule the entire world, and they were filled with fear towards the race that had the most number of people, as well as the glory of their past ancient civilizations. If they had the power, they would definitely not allow that. And the opposite was true, if Yue Zhong had the chance, he wouldn't mind giving the Kingdom of God a stab.

Other than Europe itself, the rest of Asia was still unsettled. Wuyan Hong was filled with hatred against the Chinese, and he was currently on the top of the priority list. If he was still weak, he had no choice, but now that Yue Zhong had the power, he could not stand by allowing his fellow countrymen to be used as dogs and pigs for others.

Mu Xiang Ling was dejected as she pouted: "Cheh! I'd thought that you would say, for beautiful women, you would even cross the fires of hell!"

Yue Zhong raised his eyes: "Do I look like that sort?"

Mu Xiang Ling's eyes widened as she looked at Yue Zhong for a long while, before she suddenly grinned: "Yes! You're even the sort that would push a loli into a small ditch! Lolicon!"

Yue Zhong was caught unaware, as he flared, and reached to pinch her face: "What?! It was you who pushed me ok?"

Mu Xiang Ling giggled as she threatened: "Bully me some more! I'll cause a scene!! I'll shout out loudly that Yue Zhong is a lolicon! You won't ever have face again!!"

"Forget it! I won't stoop so low!" Yue Zhong immediately waved his hands and ruffled her hair. If he was really labelled as a lolicon in front of so many people, his reputation would take a dip. This devil definitely had the capacity to do so. Because she knew where Yue Zhong's threshold laid.

Mu Xiang Ling shot a proud look as Yue Zhong gave in to her, and she knew she could tease Yue Zhong. In any case, she was still young, at most, Yue Zhong would just give her a spanking, and would not actually punish her.

The waitress quickly came back with the signature dishes as she placed them on the table: "It's here!! These are the braised Mutant Pork Shoulder and braised Mutant Black Fish! Do enjoy!"

A delicious fragrance wafted into their noses, as Yue Zhong looked at the sumptuous dish in front of him, and made to quickly grab a piece of pork shoulder, and immediately tore the meat from the bone, feeding it into his mouth. Upon entering, the meat instantly melted in his mouth.

"Delicious!!" Yue Zhong's spirits were lifted as he began to eat voraciously.

Mu Xiang Ling also quickly used her chopsticks in a bid to grab food: "Gege, you're too crafty! Eat slower, leave some for me!"

The pretty waitress looked on at this funny scene, and her eyes twinkled in amusement.

Right at this time, at another table, a burly man slapped the table as he shouted: "Waiter!! Why is there a fly in my food!! What the hell is wrong with you guys? Do you know how to run a business?"

"Where's the boss? Get him out here!!"

"Get your boss out here! If not, we'll wreck your lousy shop!!"

A few of the men beside the burly man immediately hollered aggressively.

Seeing this, a number of the customers in the restaurant became frightened as they stopped eating, paid their money and left. There were even a few with no manners that directly left without paying.

A middle-aged man whose skin was slightly dark and yellow, his entire face filled with wrinkles came over with a careful smile, as he bowed and said: "Friends! Our dishes are carefully scrutinized to ensure quality, and there would definitely not be a single fly. Is this a misunderstanding?"

The burly man laughed coldly, as he grabbed a spoonful of soup, in it, a large fly laying dead: "Not a single fly?! What's this?"

The pretty waitress took a step forwards as she stared at the burly man and said: "I've checked every single dish that comes out of the kitchen. There was no fly!! This is your doing!!"

The burly man instantly frowned and hollered, pulling out a bat, as he flipped the table: "You dare frame me?? Brothers, fuck these people! Trash the place!! Do it!!"

The 5 men beside the burly man instantly pulled out their weapons as well as they started to unleash carnage.

The sounds of breaking and destruction rang out within the

shop.

"Stop it!! You bunch of hooligans!!" The waitress screamed as she watched her family's store being wrecked. This store was the hard work of her family, and the moment it was destroyed, her family's livelihood will be gone.

The shop owner and the rest of the workers just stood at a corner as they watched helplessly, not daring to move. The hooligans had baseball bats, knives and if they were to rush into the heat of things, they might get injured or worse.

In this apocalyptic world, there was a loss of medicinal manufacturing plants, and their quantity had lessened considerably. With each usage, the amount left was dwindling. Hence, medicine was even more expensive now. They did not dare to get hurt.

A hooligan came up to Yue Zhong and Mu Xiang Ling and his eyes flashed with ferocity as he barked: "Get lost! Can't you see that we're conducting business here? Do you want to die!"

"Quickly flee!!" The waitress looked at them and shouted out in worry. She knew that these hooligans were not any decent people, and would not hesitate to hit or even kill a little girl.

There were simply no hooligans that held to the principles of not hitting women or children left in the apocalyptic world.

Mu Xiang Ling's eyes flashed angrily, as she lashed out with a vicious kick at the groin of the man like a cheetah: "Trash! You dare spoil the mood of my meal!"

After gaining a set of equipment, she had the strength equivalent to 2 grown men, and this single kick actually caused the hooligan to be sent flying back 2 to 3 metres.

When the hooligan received that blow, his eyes looked like they were about to pop out, his hands grabbing his stomach as he doubled up in pain. Tears streamed down his eyes.

Mu Xiang Ling sent the hooligan flying with a kick, and turned around to look at Yue Zhong smugly, before her gaze travelled to Yue Zhong's groin.

"What a vicious loli!" Yue Zhong suddenly felt his back break out in cold sweat, and his legs immediately snapped shut. Even with his Endurance reaching a high 151 points, that bullets could not penetrate his skin, that part was still his weak point, for that matter, it was the weak point of all men.

The waitress witnessed this and her eyes flashed with a glint: "So strong!!"

The leader, who was the burly man, looked at Mu Xiang Ling, his eyes gleaming fiercely as he roared: "Everyone together!! Catch that bitch, and we'll have some fun, before we sell her off to some nightclub!!"

Led by that burly man, the remaining 4 thugs quickly charged towards Mu Xiang Ling.

Chapter 439: Cleaning Up the Gangs!

Yue Zhong eyed the 5 incoming hooligans, grabbed a piece of meat and placed it in his mouth with disinterest: "They're yours! Do your best!"

"Eh~~!! Yue-gege, how can you expect a loli like me to handle 5 of them? Aren't you ungentlemanly~~!" When Mu Xiang Ling heard Yue Zhong, she got excited, and started to warm up: "Oh right! Is it ok to cripple them?"

Yue Zhong replied mildly: "It'd be best not to! They still have some use. We can throw them into the Scum Battalion! If you cripple them, then we'd just have to kill them!"

Yue Zhong had no favourable impressions of such hooligans that bullied the weak commoners. He had intended to punish these hooligans by sending them to the Scum Battalion as cannon fodder. If they were crippled, he wouldn't spend any medicines to heal them. He would only do so for good people.

"Got it~~!" Mu Xiang Ling let out an excited smile, as she lifted her hand, and activated her ability, as 5 chairs suddenly flew towards the 5 hooligans viciously, controlled by an unseen force.

At that instant, the 5 chairs hit the 5 hooligans heavily, and were destroyed by the impact, at the same time, causing the 5 hooligans to be injured gravely, spitting blood from their mouths as they fell to the ground.

"A high-level Enhancer!! Damn it!! You actually dare to injure me!! I will definitely make you wish you were dead!! If you have the guts, just wait here!"

The leader of the hooligans glanced resentfully at Mu Xiang Ling and Yue Zhong, before directly taking out a bamboo flute and forcefully blowing it.

Looking at the hooligan whose face was filled with hatred, a

strange light flashed past Yue Zhong. He didn't leave, but quietly stayed sitting there, continuing to eat the shop's signature dishes.

"Oh! Interesting! So you still have backup! Good!! I really want to see what sort of person is supporting you from behind the scenes."

The resentful hooligan glanced at Yue Zhong and smiled coldly, "You'll know soon!!"

"Who dares to touch my men!! Do you not want to stay in Guilin City anymore?"

Following an indignant shout, a young man, accompanied by four police officers, strode into the shop.

The leader of the hooligans instantly rushed up to the young man and implored loudly,

"Young master Dan!! It was these two!! It was them who hit us!! Young master Dan, you have to give us brothers justice!!"

Yue Zhong glanced at the young man who had been escorted in by the four police officers and he smiled faintly, "So it's actually Dan Yu, long time no see."

As soon as he saw Yue Zhong sitting at the table, Dan Yu's heart instantly exploded. Both his knees softened, and he was so frightened that he directly fell paralyzed onto the floor. After all, he knew that the person in front of him was actually the controller of Guilin City; just one order from Yue Zhong would be enough to make him die a miserable death. Moreover, the reason that his father was able to regain his original post was because he had correctly chosen to stand on Yue Zhong's side at a key moment. Even if it were Dan Yu's father, Yue Zhong would still be able to make him die with ease.

"Young master Dan, young master Dan, what's wrong? Right, it was those people who attacked young master Dan!! Go capture those two people and bring them back to the police station!!"

One of the police officers instantly propped up Dan Yu and

directly pointed at Yue Zhong, his brain working like lightning as he attempted to curry favor with the young master.

"Attacked your mom!!" Dan Yu was so scared that his soul almost scattered. He viciously gave the police officer a slap to the face.

"Luo Ping you bastard! Are you trying to kill me?" Following that, Dan Yu ruthlessly kicked the leader of the hooligans onto the floor, his face flashing with an ominous glint.

Only after finishing all this did Dan Yu bend his waist, kneeling down before Yue Zhong with a flattering smile on his face and saying, "Apologies! Young Master Yue!! It was I who had eyes but failed to recognize Mount Tai. Sorry!! Sorry!!"

Upon seeing this scene, apart from Yue Zhong himself and Mu Xiang Ling, everyone else was stunned.

The fact that there were four police officers escorting Dan Yu was already enough to show that his background was extraordinary, yet upon seeing Yue Zhong, this extraordinary son of an official was actually so scared that he instantly fell to the ground. This made everyone feel incomparably astonished.

Yue Zhong glanced at Dan Yu, who was kneeling before him, and said indifferently, "Bai Xiao Sheng! Come out! Take all of them away and lock them up!! The people over there on the floor, you can directly throw them into the Scum Battalion."

"Yes! Head!"

Very quickly, eight experts wearing black suits, each of them exuding a terrifying aura, entered the shop.

"Personal guards of the head?" As soon as they saw the eight experts, the four police officers' faces all paled as they instantly guessed Yue Zhong's identity. They didn't resist at all, letting the guards restrain them.

Yue Zhong's personal guards very quickly took away the pale-looking Dan Yu, the four police officers and the 6 hooligans lying

on the floor, only leaving behind the wrecked little shop.

The energetic ponytail girl filled with youthfulness then came up to Yue Zhong, bending down slightly as she thanked sincerely, "Thank you!! I am called Chen Bing Xia. Many thanks for helping out."

If it wasn't for Yue Zhong, perhaps the entire shop would've already been smashed by those hooligans.

Yue Zhong smiled slightly as he handed over a ten-tonne food stamp to Chen Bing Xia, saying,

"I am called Yue Zhong! There's no need to be courteous!! Your shop's signature dishes are truly delicious. I hope to have the chance to savour them again! This is a year's payment of meals."

Chen Bing Xia received the 10 tonnes-worth of ration tickets and her eyes immediately started to tear, as she thanked Yue Zhong profusely: "Thank you!! Thank you!!"

With this huge amount, Chen Bing Xia's family would be able to continue running the shop. Without it, they would be hard-pressed to continue running due to the damages incurred earlier today.

"If anyone else dares to bully you guys, just report my name! Alright! We're leaving!" Yue Zhong laughed before standing up and led Mu Xiang Ling out.

Chen Bing Xia gripped the tickets in her hands tightly, as she watched Yue Zhong's back leaving in the distance, her beautiful eyes flashing with a strange glint, her mind brimming with confusing thoughts.

Mu Xiang Ling teased Yue Zhong: "Wa!! What a hero saving the damsel in distress! Regardless, continue working hard like this, and that pretty lady might have her heart stolen by you!"

Yue Zhong flicked her forehead and chuckled: "Enough of your mischief! This time, once we go back, we're gonna be busy for a while!"

Soon after Yue Zhong returned to the government office, Dan Yu's father Dan Hong came scrambling in front of Yue Zhong, kneeling and pleading profusely: "Leader!! My worthless son was lacking, and had offended you, I plead for your magnanimity and mercy! Please! I only have one son."

Yue Zhong sat on the sofa, with Mu Xiang Ling beside him who was helping to massage his leg. He looked at Dan Hong coldly, "Dan Hong! Initially, on account of your merits, I've given him a new lease on life. Now, he's still out there instigating hooligans and ruffians to bully the commoners, this truly is a leopard that cannot change its spots! I'm giving you 3 options! First: Lock him up for 20 years. Second option: Send him into the Scum Battalion and only after he has killed 40 zombies will he be set free. Third: You can give up your position and be a sanitation worker. Your choice!"

Dan Hong knelt there, his back in cold sweat. All 3 options were incredibly unappealing. Sending his son into jail for 20 years was tantamount to wasting his life. On the other hand, being in the Scum Battalion, Dan Yu would not last past a year. And for Dan Hong to give up his post as a superintendent, he obviously could not bear to sacrifice his current standard of living.

Dan Hong gritted his teeth and made the painful choice: "I choose 1! Let him stay in jail!! It would be better for him!!"

In comparison, his own position was more important.

Yue Zhong eyed Dan Hong indifferently and replied: "Alright! You're dismissed!"

"Yes!" Dan Hong heard that and left the office obediently.

After Dan Hong had left, Yue Zhong thought back to the events earlier and spoke softly: "Seems like the problems of the triads have to be dealt with!"

Amongst the various gangs and triads in Guilin City, there were numerous who had the backing of some government officials. Yue

Zhong had busied himself with the reorganizing of the military and government, and neglected the disease that was growing within Guilin City, namely the problem of the triads. Now that he had seen the despicable measures of some of these triads, it caused a fury to arise in his heart.

Yue Zhong was a decisive man, and quickly deployed various troops throughout the city, embarking on a cleanup.

The Golden Wolf Triad was a small triad that had 40 members at its core, and had control over a street as well as a nightclub.

On this evening, inside the nightclub, the dim red lights were lit, and the scent of liquor and wine hung heavily in the air, as numerous young men and women were intoxicated in their partying.

All of a sudden, a 30-man troop came bursting into the club, dressed in the Nano Combat suits, hoisting a single assault rifle each.

Hu Yi, who was leading, hollered at the top of his voice: "I want everyone to stay where you are! Get down on the ground! We will execute anyone who disobeys!"

With the sudden presence of this team as well as the threat from Hu Yi, all the young men and women in the nightclub immediately got down on the ground.

Hu Yi's booming voice rang out: "All the men from the Golden Wolf Triad get out here! If you don't turn yourself in, the moment you're caught, I will execute you on the spot! All your family members will be implicated as well!"

Not long after, a middle-aged man brought over 30 men as they came out slowly with bitter expressions, saying: "I'm the chief of Golden Wolf Triad, Sheng Sheng Yi, I'm here to turn myself in. I plead with this officer to have mercy on my family."

Hu Yi replied coldly: "Come with us!"

Sheng Sheng Yi sighed, as he led the rest of his members and followed Hu Yi and his team.

It was not that Sheng Sheng Yi had no intentions of resisting, but upon seeing those soldiers with strong killing intent, all thoughts of resisting was immediately vanquished. He was extremely clear that the only outcome for resisting was death, and hence they could only follow obediently.

With the government's iron fist clamping down, all the triads became paper tigers overnight. In the midst of a city-wide sweep, all triads and gangs, big or small, were instantly dissolved, and all the core members and chiefs were apprehended by him.

Chapter 440: The Zombie Horde Moves!

Of the 4 Great Triads that used to exist in Guilin City, the Scarlet Phoenix Triad led by Ding Mei had by then submitted to Yue Zhong when he started the cleaning process. They handed over their weapons and accepted the reorganization of their forces, becoming part of Yue Zhong's troops.

Yue Zhong cleaned up every single gang and triad in order to purge any evil intentions and characteristics. The feel of the city instantly became better, and seemed to flourish even more. Those who had wild ambitions to try and rile up trouble began to keep themselves in check.

There were a few companies started by Enhancers and hunters specializing in hunting zombies as well as embarking on other scavenger missions. Yue Zhong did not force them to close down nor change anything, because with their existence, he had these people voluntarily cleaning up some of the loose corners that he could not afford to spare time with, at the same time, these people were largely passionate in their jobs, and could help drive resources back towards Guilin City.

With regards to these factions, as long as they did not threaten the development plans of Yue Zhong in any way, Yue Zhong would not touch them.

Yue Zhong threw the hooligans into the Scum Battalion, and those who had not engaged in any despicable acts of bullying or oppression, he placed them within the preparatory army's training groups, and the Enhancers were to be placed with the Experts Battalion to be trained specially. With such a reorganization, Yue Zhong gained another over 200 experts that were above Level 20.

After eradicating all signs of the triads from Guilin City, Yue Zhong did not stop there, instead dispatching numerous shifts of policemen to instill order and patrol the streets, rounding up any

small-time criminals. The moment any thieves or robbers were caught, they would be thrown into the Scum Battalion and put through strict training.

From a mere few hundreds of people inside the Scum Battalion, through the methods Yue Zhong employed, it swelled to over 2,000 people, and were filled with thieves, bandits, hooligans, rapists, perverts, liars, and other ne'er-do-wells. The moment they were drafted in, although they got to eat their fill, they had to go through strict military training and instruction, over and over again. It caused them to feel that even death was more inviting than this hellish life.

Inside the Scum Battalion, if any of these scum were to show the slightest resistance, all that awaited them was further punishments. They had no basic rights to speak of. Under those harsh conditions, many of them became like robots, suffering endlessly till the point of numbness. The majority looked forward to killing enough zombies or being killed by zombies just to be rid of this hell.

After such a large-scale cleanup, the entire Guilin City seemed to have undergone a total makeover, so much so that even the streets were safe at night. Everyone knew of the plights of any wrongdoings, and the moment they thought of what went on in those camps, any potential thoughts of mischief would be immediately quashed.

While a small minority felt that Yue Zhong was too overbearing and tyrannical, many others were elated at the beneficial changes. This was because there were no more instances of protection fees, or free meals or bullying for the majority of the commoners.

Once he had brought about peace and stability, Yue Zhong dove into training his troops again. It was the winter season, and the troops could not go anywhere, hence he made them go through intense training, to increase their combat potential.

With the flow of time, a month had passed.

On this day, a surveillance drone flew over Nanning City.

As long as the weather was decent, Yue Zhong would deploy some forces to scout out the situation in Nanning City.

The 3 million-strong zombie horde in Nanning had slowly begun to move towards Guilin City.

The strange development had quickly been picked up by the drone, and the information was quickly transmitted back towards Guilin City.

Although Yue Zhong did not control any satellites, and could not observe the entire earth, with the drones, gaining intel on the surrounding hundred li of land was not an issue.

Once he learnt that the zombie horde had begun to move, Yue Zhong did not dare to dally, and summoned every important member of his government.

Yue Zhong looked around and declared solemnly: "I've gained information! The zombie horde from Nanning has begun to move towards Guilin City, towards us. Based on their speed, in just 5 days, we will be facing 3 million zombies. Does anyone have any suggestions?"

Hu Yi directly offered: "Leader! Why don't we take the fight to them at the Chang Yue ridge? The terrain is most suitable for the tanks to charge in. We can make use of the tanks to annihilate them."

Murong He frowned and said: "The Chan Yue ridge is indeed suitable for an assault from our tanks. The problem is the weather! If there were to be a sudden change in weather, the troops there would lose the support and become stranded! The moment that happens, they would be finished off by the horde. I reckon that we should defend Guilin City!"

Zhang Xue Wang replied coldly: "Holding them off here is too

dangerous!! If the fort was to be broken? The more than 800,000 survivors here would have no place to run to. Furthermore, our heavy rounds are lacking. With the number of zombies ranging in the millions, without sufficient ammo, what do we use to defend with? Meat shields?"

A modern army's criteria was having enough logistical support. Du Shan Xiong had a regiment of elites and strength, and the reason why he could only occupy Guilin, was primarily due to the shortage of ammo.

Du Shan Xiong had brought his troops to reclaim Guilin, and also led them to slaughter their way into Nanning. In addition, he had been cleaning up the surrounding areas of Guilin City, annihilating a few million zombies. However, as a result, the troops were nearly depleted of their ammo, and the ammo dump had only 2 bases' worth. It would be tough for them to deal with the 3-million strong horde with just that.

Everyone frowned, although the words of Zhang Xue Wang were hard to listen to, it was the truth, and the impending danger loomed over everyone's heads. It felt hard to breathe.

Guilin City was not an industrial city, and within it, the only thing they could do now was to refill ammunitions. In each month, they could reload up to about 10,000 rounds. The current count of reloaded ammunition in Guilin City was about 30,000 rounds. These reloaded rounds were lacking in effectiveness, and could damage the guns. The majority of it was given to the scavenger teams to use, and no one from the military liked to use it. As for the heavy artillery rounds, not only are there no ways to manufacture them, there are no known ways to reload them.

Yue Zhong eyed Chen Ying on one side and asked: "How's the construction of the wall coming along?"

When Yue Zhong obtained control, he had assigned a huge number of young males to start working on a wall. In society, there

were countless city walls breached due to the existence of heavy artillery that could easily demolish walls. However, for the apocalypse, a sturdy wall would be extremely useful against a zombie horde, as well as the attacks of Mutant Beasts. Hence, Yue Zhong had placed great importance on it. After all, constructing a wall was much simpler than manufacturing heavy artillery rounds.

Chen Ying replied directly: "There's a 5m-tall defensive wall built in the direction of Nanning, however, with the time we have, that's the limit we can do now."

As the majority of the zombies surrounding Guilin City had long been wiped out by Du Shan Xiong and his army, only the zombies in the direction of Nanning posed a threat. Even Du Shan Xiong did not dare to provoke them. Hence Yue Zhong had given priority towards that direction with respect to the construction of the wall.

"5 meters eh? Do your best!" Yue Zhong frowned when he heard that, before slowly replying.

A 5 meter-tall wall would not be enough to defend against a huge horde of zombies. However, being able to construct such a wall within the time limit of a month was impressive.

Yue Zhong pondered for a moment, before ordering: "Chen Ying, you delegate the job, immediately begin defensive fortifications all around Guilin City. Dig traps!! And organize the residents from the Gang Xi District to move towards the south. Try to clear the area, to act as a buffer."

"Yes!"

Yue Zhong continued: "Hu Yi! Go take 200 experts, head to the frontlines and snipe the horde. Do your best. As long as the situation turns for the worse, immediately retreat! Try to preserve your lives and energy!"

In such conditions where the weather was unpredictable, it was the most that Yue Zhong could do. If it wasn't for winter, Yue

Zhong would have deployed all his troops to go hunt the zombie horde.

"Yes! Leader!" Hu Yi replied excitedly.

Yue Zhong then swept everybody present a glance as he said solemnly: "Everyone else, resume your training, await further orders! For this battle, I've decided to take the fight to them outside. Our lives are on the line this time, I hope everyone will give their all to prepare for it!"

Everyone's heart shuddered as they replied: "Yes!"

Under Yue Zhong's orders, everyone began moving.

With the assignments set by Chen Ying, the residents of the Gang Xi District began to move towards the south side of Guilin City.

At the same time, over one hundred thousand young men were mobilized and began fortifications outside Gang Xi District.

As there were many people working on it, with their combined efforts, countless fortifications and simple works were completed within a night outside the city walls.

Within the city, many females were activated as well, preparing numerous bowls of food to be sent to those men toiling outside the city gates, everyone doing their best in order to protect their place.

On the other side, Hu Yi led 200 experts and they lugged over a hundred jin of equipment, put on the nano combat suits, and rode their motorcycles towards the distance.

Yue Zhong had intended to be on the front lines himself, but as he had just obtained control of Guilin City, the sentiments of the masses had not stabilized yet, and he had too little trusted aides. The moment he left, there would bound to be some ambitious joker. Hence, for the sake of the whole picture, he chose to stay here. This battle was one he could not afford to lose, the moment he lost, close to 900,000 people would fall prey to the zombies.

Hu Yi and his team rode non-stop for almost 4 hours before they came near the zombie horde.

"What a spectacular sight!!" Hu Yi and the 200 experts looked over from a high point not far from the horde, and could see the mighty undead force, seemingly with no end, threatening to envelope everything as they moved.

Chapter 441: Devourer

"Let's start!!" Hu Yi observed their surroundings once, before pulling out a sniper rifle, aimed at the horde, and fired.

With a single 'peng', a zombie's head was blasted apart.

Attracted by the sound of the gunfire, the huge horde shifted, and swarmed towards the direction of Hu Yi and the rest, who were atop the hill.

"There're simply too many of them!! We would rot before we manage to kill them all!" One Enhancer whose level reached 38 waved his hand as he spoke, and a number of blades made out of air sliced towards the zombies in front, instantly decapitating 20-over of them.

Another who had the [Gun Specialization] Skill pulled out 2 .03 rifles, and began to fire without stop, every single round fired from each gun would kill a zombie.

One of the Enhancers had [Plant Manipulation] and he planted a Mutant Seed under the tree, and soon, countless vines exploded out from the ground, wrapping around a number of the zombies, shredding them into pieces.

The rest of the warriors raised their own .03 rifles and aimed at the zombies without haste, making sure to kill them with a single shot each time.

There were about 200 experts on this side, each of them being above Level 30, and had plenty of experience in killing zombies. None of them had any fear towards the zombies. As long as their Stamina could hold out, it was hard for them to die.

With the combined efforts of those 200 experts, although the small hilltop seemed to be surrounded by the dense horde of zombies, none of the zombies could break past the defences.

Huge numbers of the zombies were being decimated constantly,

while those in front would be trampled by those behind.

Soon, the total number of zombies killed by this team of elites had reached more than 2,000.

At this time, the horde suddenly parted, and a number of 3m-tall strange zombies appeared. They had protruding bellies, their limbs were coarse and bulky, and they had long tails, with bodies covered in a layer of scales. Their eyes were completely milky-white, and their hands had long sharp nails, matching their teeth.

The moment these strange zombies appeared, they began to swallow up the corpses of the ordinary zombies, and there seemed to be no end to their appetite, as they continued to gobble up the ordinary zombies into their bodies.

Hu Yi looked at the strange zombies swallowing up the rest, and a notification appeared in his mind.

"Level 60 Strange Monster: Devourer I-Type. It can swallow ordinary zombies to constantly evolve and grow stronger. Its initial level is 50. Swallowing enough ordinary zombie corpses will allow it to reach Level 70. Swallowing higher-grade corpses may give rise to potential further growth and evolution."

Hu Yi took a look at the Devourers, and his heart went cold. He quickly aimed a rifle at the head of one of the Devourer and fired wildly.

The dense hail of bullets assaulted the Devourer, and simply bounced off, not hurting it in the slightest.

"Allow me!!" The expert who could control blades made of air stood forward, his eyes flashing with a glint, and he expended a huge amount of Stamina to conjure a huge blade that could bifurcate even an armored vehicle, as he sliced towards the Devourer.

The huge blade made of air landed on the body of the Devourer, and the skin dented inwards slightly, before causing the blade to be

dispersed. At the next instant, the Devourer immediately opened its mouth and shot out a black, murky poison arrow at the Enhancer who controlled the air-blade.

"Ah!!!!" The expert immediately wailed in agony when he was struck. His body instantly rotted, and his eyes lost the colour of health, before he suddenly pounced towards Hu Yi.

Hu Yi's face changed in horror as he kicked the expert towards the ground, before roaring: "Zhang Zhen! What are you doing?"

The expert looked up with soulless eyes, as it climbed up and pounced towards the others.

Hu Yi immediately shot forward and pulled out his Dark Magic Blade to slice off the head of Zhang Zhen, as he roared: "He's infected!! Shit!! Everyone, be careful! That Devourer can cause someone to turn almost instantly with its spit, don't let it get on you!"

Hearing those words, the expressions of everyone fell. They had worn the Mutant Beasts hides and few things could endanger them. However, at the initial point of the apocalypse, the scene of their friends and loved ones turning into zombies right in front of them had been deeply embedded in their minds. Their attacks became a lot more guarded, and did not attack the Devourers, instead choosing to deal with the ordinary zombies.

Those Devourers also seemed to ignore the humans on the hill, instead choosing to swallow the corpses of the zombies unhurriedly.

Hu Yi looked at those Devourers hanging around the foot of the hill, and his eyes flashed with a hint of urgency: "Damn it, what do we do? Are we going to stand here and watch as those freaks become stronger?"

The experts on the hill were killing the ordinary zombies without stopping, while the Devourers were swallowing up the corpses,

and both sides came to a standstill.

However, Hu Yi was clear that if they were to allow the Devourers to evolve, they would be wiped out.

As Hu Yi and the rest were engaged in a crisis, within a villa in Guilin City, Zhang Xue Wang was sitting with his vice-commander Yu Hong, as they drank liquor together.

Yu Hong drank a gulp of the soju, as he belched and cussed: "Damn it!! Yue Zhong isn't worth shit!! We helped him gained the city, and he actually shoved us to the new recruits battalion to lead these greenhorns!! Isn't this obviously not trusting us?"

Zhang Xue Wang eyed Yu Hong and frowned as he growled: "Old Yu, you drank too much. If your words were heard by Leader, we would all be in trouble."

Hearing that Yu Hong grinned in contempt: "What leader? That position was also snatched by him! If it wasn't for us, how many of the survivors would be dead be now! The moment he came, he stole all our positions, and forced us into this meagre place. He is shit. Commander, let's rebel!!"

Zhang Xue Wang was alarmed, as he shot Yu Hong a look, and replied: "Old Yu, you've had too much to drink!"

Although he was advising him otherwise, Zhang Xue Wang was undeniably affected by those words. While being a commander of an elite force was the same post as a commander of a recruits battalion, the positions of those 2 were different. The commander of the elite force would definitely have more authority than a commander of a recruits battalion.

When Zhang Xue Wang was re-allocated as the commander of the recruits battalion, he was naturally unhappy. However, he was clear that Yue Zhong had managed to gain a steady footing in Guilin City, and if he were to jump up now to voice his disapproval, there would be countless who would automatically

step up to do him in.

Yu Hong's eyes glinted strangely, as he clapped once: "Commander!! I know you're worried about Yue Zhong's forces being too strong, and we can't defeat him. Don't worry. We have the manpower!! Come out!!"

"Commander Zhang, how do you do!" A 26-27-year old male came walking into the room as he smiled and greeted Zhang Xue Wang.

Zhang Xue Wang eyed this young man, and his heart was filled with caution as he asked: "Old Yu! This is?"

The young male, who had squinty eyes, chuckled before introducing himself: "Commander Zhang! Let me introduce myself. My name is Lin Chang Hai. I'm a member of the Greater China Alliance. We of the Greater China Alliance aim to restore the glory of China, and we have countless experts with us. We are currently based in Guang Xi, and we have over 70,000 members, and a force of 10,000."

"Our Alliance Chief knows that Guilin City had been overtaken by this small fry called Yue Zhong, and was extremely infuriated. Hence, he assigned me to come and form an alliance with you, Commander Zhang. We can work together to topple Yue Zhong's tyranny. After this, we hope that Commander Zhang will join our Greater China Alliance, and help to establish our control over Guilin City."

Zhang Xue Wang's eyes flashed, before he slowly replied: "Yue Zhong has a force of 10,000. How are you going to topple his governance?"

Lin Chang Hai chuckled mysteriously: "Commander Zhang, other than you, there are already 2 other high-ranking officials who had been unhappy with Yue Zhong's rule, and have joined us already. Furthermore, Gao Ming Hao from the Green Bamboo Triad as well as other experts from the Heavenly Dragon Triad, even Chen County's Wen Fu Xin* had all agreed to join us. At that time, once

the army of the Greater China Alliance reaches, you guys work from the inside, we attack from the outside. Such a prong-attack will guarantee that Guilin City will become ours. Yue Zhong is now busy dealing with the zombie horde, and he would not think of acting against us."

Zhang Xue Wang mulled silently, before asking softly: "Currently, the 3-million-strong zombie horde is making its way towards us. After gaining Guilin City, what does the Greater China Alliance intend to do?"

Lin Chang Hai laughed indifferently: "Since the aim of the zombie horde is Guilin City, after we have done away with Yue Zhong, we will organize for everyone to evacuate the city. After which, we will slowly chip away at the zombie numbers, and one day, we will regain Guilin City and Nanning City. Ensuring the survival of everyone is of utmost importance."

Zhang Xue Wang seemed to have resolved the questions in his heart as he replied: "Alright!! I'll promise you guys!! Tell me your plan!"

Lin Chang Hai was elated, and proceeded to divulge every single detail of their plan to Zhang Xue Wang.

From the direction of Bin Qi City, a 10,000-strong force dressed in all sorts of garbs, carrying various weapons were currently marching on towards Guilin City.

[Kun] *Wen Fu Xin was the guy who tried to take down the Heaven Sect, but faced defeat at the Leader before Yue Zhong managed to cut in at the right moment and won the Heaven Sect. (Chapter 383 - 384)

Chapter 442: Collapsing the enemy With a Single shot!

Among the 10,000 armed militants, a number of them were wielding blades, wooden bats and other various melee weapons. Only about 1,500 of the elite troops were wielding guns. Also, there were 5 IFVs, 10 self-propelled artillery, 6 40-round auto-loader rocket launchers, and 8 Type 96 tanks.

Taking a look at this troop that was made up of a combination of melee weapons and modern warfare weaponry, it was obvious that these 10,000-strong troops did not have the luxury to equip each and every soldier.

Yue Zhong stood on a small hill, by his side stood White Bones, and as he laid prone on the high vantage ground, he took a look through the scope of the Falcon Sniper and assessed quietly: "So this is the Greater China Alliance? Their strength is not weak."

"Ah! I see some old acquaintances!!" Yue Zhong moved the scope and suddenly saw the chief of the Green Bamboo Triad, Gao Ming Hao seated in the co-driver seat in an armored vehicle.

Yue Zhong lifted his head and took a look, noticing that it was dusk, he gave a sigh. He did not rush to snipe Gao Ming Hao, instead choosing to observe the troop quietly.

Gao Ming Hao sat quietly inside the jeep, his mood extremely comfortable. Initially, when he was forced out of Guilin City by Yue Zhong, he managed to only bring a few of his trusted aides as they escaped pitifully. His efforts and hard work in establishing the 10,000-strong Green Bamboo Triad went down the drain just like that, and he had suffered a tremendous setback. However, when he escaped to the nearby Bin Qi City, he was scouted and recruited by the Greater China Alliance.

The Greater China Alliance allowed Gao Ming Hao to lead his

own troops, and helped him bolster his forces. Now he was a small warlord commanding over a thousand soldiers. Although these were male survivors wielding melee weapons, they were under his control. It caused him to feel great again.

Beside Gao Ming Hao, there was a young man who had pale skin, a tall stature, decent looks, but with an aura of weakness and superficiality between his brows chuckled at Gao Ming Hao: "Old Gao! Once we've taken down Guilin City, you'd better not forget your promise."

Gao Ming Hao eyed the young man beside him, and a hint of contempt flashed past his face, but he maintained the amiable smile and replied: "Of course Young Master Jin!! After we take down Guilin City, I would definitely find a pair of beautiful twins for your enjoyment."

This young man in front of him was called Jin Guang Xuan, and he was the son of Jin Sheng Cheng, who was the supervisor of the Guang Xi part of the Greater China Alliance. Although Jin Guang Xuan was handsome, he was extremely lustful in nature, and was the perfect example of a hero father and wastrel son. He would be in the company of ladies most of the time, and Gao Ming Hao despised him.

However, Gao Ming Hao knew how to carry himself, and although he viewed Jin Guang Xuan in contempt, he continued entertaining him, becoming one of his close friends.

Jin Guang Xuan chuckled loudly as he said: "Haha! The other time, you brought me a mother-daughter pair, they were not bad!! However, they're a little old for my taste!! Next time, do take note!! I like young and beautiful girls!"

In the eyes of Jin Guang Xuan, Gao Ming Hao was like a dog kept by his house, and regardless of how he ordered, it would be fine. At most, he could just give him a dog bone to chew on, figuratively.

In the past, it was the same for Yuan Shi Kai and his eldest son,

Yuan Ke Ding who was like that as well. He treated Duan Qi Rui and Feng Guo Zhang, whom his father did not dare take lightly, as slaves, and was extremely despotic.

Gao Ming Hao held his rising anger in check, while giving Jin Guang Xuan a warm smile: "sure! I got it, Young Master Jin. Next time, I'll definitely take note."

Right at this time, snowflakes started floating down from the skies.

Seeing the snow falling, one of the men in military uniform immediately turned and rushed towards the jeep, smacking the doors hard as he called out: "Young Master Jin!! Young Master Jin!! Open the door! I have something to report!"

Jin Guang Xuan eyed the soldier, his expression one of displeasure as he rolled down the window, and felt the chill creeping in, causing him to shiver uncontrollably. He hurriedly asked: "What? Duan Zi Ke!! Spit it out!! If there's nothing, don't come and bother me!!"

Duan Zi Ke did not mind Jin Guang Xuan's disrespect, instead urgently replying: "Young Master Jin!! It's snowing now!! What do we do? Shall we get the troops to find some shelter first?"

Jin Guang Xuan's eyes narrowed as he replied coldly: "No way! If we hinder my dad's plans just because of the snow, will you be able to bear the responsibility? Even killing your entire family would not be able to make amends for the losses to my Jin family then! Godspeed, godspeed, can't you understand this logic? To think that you're a military personnel."

Duan Zi Ke laughed bitterly as he explained: "But! Young Master Jin!! The weather's too cold!! We're all southerners, and aren't used to this. If it continues, the soldiers will either freeze to death or be injured heavily!"

Guang Xi was originally warm to begin with, and it seldom

snowed there, not to mention snowstorms. In the first winter of the apocalypse, the sudden chill had taken the lives of countless people, and the remaining survivors were still not any better adapted to the cold. Hence, even Yue Zhong had not dared to deploy his forces.

Jin Guang Xuan seemed to become impatient with the reasoning, and immediately replied before pulling up the window: "Then just let them run!! Enough with your blabbering! In those days, when the Red Army trekked the snow mountains and plains, they had not complained. This is just some cold. Bolster their spirits to get through this! Don't bother me anymore! Get the whole army moving! With our utmost speed. Once we obtain Guilin City, they can rest well then."

Duan Zi Ke's expression had turned extremely ugly as he cursed under his breath: "Fool!!"

True, in those days, the Red Army had crossed countless terrains, but they had lost many as well. Unless forced to, who would want to trek the mountain and plains?

Jin Guang Xuan continued to stay within the Jeep to enjoy the warm air, and naturally could not feel the pain of the common soldiers.

Duan Zi Ke could only helplessly relay the stupid command: "All troops! Full speed ahead!!"

The speed of the troops suddenly increased a lot. However, from time to time, there would be soldiers who fell lifelessly, never to get back up again.

"Retard!" Yue Zhong watched all these, and thought silently. If it were him, the moment he saw the snowflakes, he would pull the troops back, and not wantonly march on in these conditions.

These were people from Guang Xi, not those northerners from Liao Ning, nor were they like those polar bears suited for snow.

The snow got heavier and heavier, and soon, a huge gale started to blow.

Countless snowflakes flew with the wind, as the snow blanketed the soldiers of the Greater China Alliance, piercing them with a chill like a cold knife that reached the bones.

As the soldiers marched on, they shivered uncontrollably, their faces flushed red, and their legs becoming numb as they traversed through the snow, as though they didn't belong to them.

Soldiers would fall from time to time, fainting in the snow, and never getting up again.

Under those harsh winds, the soldiers of the Greater China Alliance fell like droppings as their temperatures dropped to dangerous levels.

The morale and spirit of the soldiers were at an all-time low, and everyone became numb.

"It's time!!" Yue Zhong saw that a few more soldiers of the Greater China Alliance had fallen in the snow, and he took careful aim at Gao Ming Hao inside the jeep.

Yue Zhong was only about a kilometre away from Gao Ming Hao, and he quietly adjusted his breathing, getting his attention at its maximum, and his entire focus was on Gao Ming Hao solely.

When the jeep came to a sudden halt, Yue Zhong immediately pulled the trigger.

With a single 'peng', a 14.5mm sniper round immediately pierced through the air, piercing the defensive glass of the jeep, and blasted Gao Ming Hao's head into pieces.

Even if Gao Ming Hao was a Level 49 Strength-based Evolver, he had no way of defending against that assassination shot from Yue Zhong.

Jin Guang Xuan took a look at Gao Ming Hao's headless body, and

he immediately shrieked in terror: "Ah!! Help!! Help!! Save me!!"

"Attack!! Attack!!" The sharp sound resounded across the entire Greater China Alliance's troops.

The troops were already at a low point, having to face the harsh and cold snowstorm. Suddenly, they heard that they were under attack, and confusion led to chaos.

A large number of the melee weapon-wielding soldiers escaped in all directions. Close to 80% of the original troops fled, as most of them were forcefully conscripted workers, and were meant to be cannon fodder. Their morale was low to begin with, and the moment they thought there was a trap, they quickly fled.

Within this armed forces of the Greater China Alliance, there was still a small troop that could fight. It was the 1,500-strong unit of well equipped soldiers. However, the chaotic frenzy of the cannon fodder had caused the soldiers to be bewildered as well.

"Good chance!!" Yue Zhong had not expected a single shot from him to cause such a collapse. However, he was not a man to let go of such opportunities, and he immediately let out a whistle, before charging towards the troops of the Greater China Alliance with White Bones.

In the midst of that chaos, the heavy firepower of the Greater China Alliance would not be employed, and it was the best time for Yue Zhong to display his strength.

Hearing Yue Zhong's whistle, Lightning, which had been lying in wait all this while with its over 400 brothers immediately charged towards the troops of the Greater China Alliance as well. Compared to humans, the Mutant Beasts' ability to withstand cold was much stronger. Even in the snowstorm, Lightning and its brothers could move without problems.

Chapter 443: Type 3 Lightning!

After swallowing the large amount of Type 2 Mutant Beasts' nuclei as well as the 2 Type 3 Mutant Beasts' nuclei, it finally triggered an evolution, causing Lightning to evolve into a Type 3 Mutant Beast as well.

Currently, Lightning was almost an entire size larger than its previous form, and it had 40 times the speed of a normal human. The moment it unleashed its full speed, it would cause a sonic boom from breaking the sound barrier.

In just a matter of 4 seconds, Lightning had crossed the distance of 1,000 metres, and charged into the midst of the Greater China Alliance's troops with a resounding boom. Its claws slashed about, and numerous soldiers would find their heads swiped away, causing fresh blood to fountain upwards and splatter everywhere.

"Powerful!!" Yue Zhong observed Lightning as it broke past the sound barrier and unleashed its devastating damage. This was the might of a Type 3 Agility-type Mutant Beast. It was simply astonishing!!

Although Lightning did not have the fearsome defence of the Type 3 Green Jiao-Python, nor the immense strength, as well as the threatening corrosive poison spit, it had its simplest and most effective weapon: speed. That sonic speed was enough for it to lay waste to numerous enemies.

"Damn it!!" 20 of the Greater China Alliance's Enhancers were infuriated and they charged at Lightning.

Lightning eyed those Enhancers above Level 30, and its body flashed, suddenly appearing in the midst of them.

In 2 mere seconds, the heads of those 20 Enhancers were smacked away, fresh blood splattering everywhere, and they could not even catch a glimpse of Lightning's movements.

Yue Zhong activated his [Shadow Steps] and managed to reach a maximum speed 17 times that of other humans, and could barely managed to keep up with Lightning's figure. Even with this speed, he was barely reaching the terrifying degree of combat potential that Lightning now possessed.

As for other Enhancers, whose speed were lacking, they could not catch any of the movements, not to mention putting up a resistance.

Yue Zhong charged forwards, and appeared near a tank. He activated his [Art of Fear], and a huge Spirit force assailed outwards, with Yue Zhong as the centre.

In a single instant, all the soldiers within the tank were submerged in the terrifying hallucinations and fainted.

Only those with Spirit values high enough or special skills and equipment that could block the [Art of Fear] attack from Yue Zhong survived. Those other tank operators were simply helpless.

The rest of the tanks were focused on the Mutant Leopard Cats, and were firing wildly at them.

As rounds after rounds blasted in the midst of the Leopard Cats, some of the Mutant Leopard Cats were blasted into charred pieces. Those Mutant Leopard Cats could not withstand the heavy firearms. Even Lightning, a Type 3 Mutant Leopard Cat, would be blasted to smithereens if it was caught, not to mention the ordinary Mutant Leopard Cats.

The various IFVs were also firing at the Mutant Leopard Cats with their 25mm cannons, blasting a few of the Mutant Leopard Cats apart, dyeing the ground crimson with rivulets of blood.

As for those self-propelling rockets, due to the restrictions of the range, they could not display their full might.

Yue Zhong took the opportunity when the Greater China Alliance was distracted by the Mutant Leopard Cats, and flashed about,

activating his [Art of Fear] continuously, sending waves of terror sweeping outwards in all directions. His tactics caused many of the soldiers in the tanks and IFVs to faint from the terrifying Spirit attack.

On the other side, White Bones had charged into the midst of the soldiers, its bone blades dancing about, slicing any soldier unfortunate enough to be in its way into pieces.

After losing the suppression of the IFVs and tanks, the 400 Mutant Leopard Cats wreaked havoc on the remaining unlucky soldiers, charging into their camps, and pouncing onto many of the fleeing warriors, ripping their necks off.

The moment the soldiers had to face the Mutant Leopard Cats right after being buffeted by the snowstorm, their spirits were on the brink of collapsing, and many of them threw down their weapons and tried to escape. They did not know where to run to in the middle of the snowstorm, but it was better to be frozen to death than to be eaten alive by Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong eyed those fleeing soldiers and hollered loudly: "Throw down your weapons!! Raise your hands in the air! I'll spare those who surrender!!"

Those soldiers had lost all will to fight, and were only concerned about not being eaten alive. The moment they heard Yue Zhong's words, they quickly abandoned their weapons, raising their hands, and looked at the Mutant Leopard Cats with fear.

Lightning howled once, and all the Mutant Leopard Cats eyed those humans who surrendered, their eyes flashing with unwillingness, but turned their attention away from them, and made for others who had not surrendered.

Seeing that it was effective, all the remaining soldiers immediately surrendered to Yue Zhong.

Duan Zi Ke came up with a bitter expression as he announced:

"I'm Duan Zi Ke. I'm the commander of these soldiers! I'm officially surrendering, and I hope that you can look upon my troops favourably!"

Yue Zhong pointed to the shuddering figure of Jin Guang Xuan that he dragged out, whose face was pale and asked: "Who's this?"

Jin Guang Xuan immediately stammered out loud: "I'm Jin Guang Xuan! I'm the son of Jin Sheng Cheng, the Greater China Alliance supervisor of the Guang Xi region! I've surrendered! You can't kill me!!"

Yue Zhong glanced at Duan Zi Ke before saying solemnly: "I'm Yue Zhong. Duan Zi Ke! How about being my subordinate? Working for someone like him is too demeaning for you."

Yue Zhong had initially intended to just observe the troops of the Greater China Alliance. He had not expected the Jin Guang Xuan to be such a bag of straw, and had actually ordered the troops to march on in the snow. With a single shot, he was able to dismantle the great army of this Greater China Alliance, causing them to collapse.

Currently, there were only Lightning and its 400 brothers beside Yue Zhong. No one else was present to control the captives. Regardless of what kind of person Duan Zi Ke was, or whether he had the ability or not, he was still the commander of these soldiers, and this was the optimal choice now.

Yue Zhong stared at Duan Zi Ke and said: "As long as you serve me, I'll naturally look favourably upon you and your troops."

Duan Zi Ke mulled silently for a while, before lifting his head and asked: "Yue Zhong! If I were to join you, what are your plans? Are you going to become a warlord?"

Yue Zhong looked directly at Duan Zi Ke and replied slowly: "My aim is to use military force to dispel all warlord factions within China, reuniting the entire country, and establishing a new

country."

Yue Zhong had gotten to where he was step by step, and he had transformed from a weak, ordinary humans under him into mighty persons with a large faction to rely on. His ambitions had slowly increased as well. At first, he just wanted to find a place where no one would control him, so that he could live on peacefully. Now, he wanted to abolish and hopefully absorb the many factions, and unite the whole country.

Even though he had not seen it himself, he knew that there were many factions littered across the whole country. His own force now was one of many as well. Who knew how many people possessed an unbridled ambition? The Greater China Alliance was also one of many factions.

Duan Zi Ke's eyes flashed with a hint of awe, as he saluted Yue Zhong and said: "Please let me be a part of your plans."

Yue Zhong immediately grinned and said: "Great!! From now on, you're a commander under me! Commander Duan!! Please organize your troops together with White Bones. We have to leave here as soon as possible!! We need to seek shelter from the snow."

Yue Zhong naturally would not easily believe that Duan Zi Ke could instantly become a loyal subordinate. Since he had no other men to utilize now, he needed Duan Zi Ke to obey his commands and see how it went from there.

Duan Zi Ke heard the orders and immediately saluted once more, before striding towards the others: "Yes, Chief!!"

White Bones followed closely beside Duan Zi Ke, if there were any strange movements, White Bones could easily take care of it.

Duan Zi Ke had a presence and authority within these troops. Very quickly, he managed to gather all the captives, and even woke those soldiers who had fainted from the [Art of Fear] hallucinations.

Yue Zhong led the force that had only 1,200 soldiers remaining towards a small town.

The majority of the Greater China Alliance soldiers had fled, and only these remaining 1,200 had remained behind in order to band together to resist Yue Zhong earlier.

These 1,200 soldiers weren't weak in fact. They could be on par with the elites that Yue Zhong were training in his Elite Battalion. However, due to Jin Guang Xuan's ineptness, it had caused the soldiers to feel worse. At the same time, Yue Zhong, White Bones as well as the terror that Lightning and its brothers caused were enough to dispel any notion of resistance.

If it were another place and time, if both sides were to engage in an actual battle, in order to forcefully subjugate this force of 1,200, Yue Zhong would definitely have to pay a higher price.

After travelling for about an hour in the snow, Yue Zhong and the rest entered a small town.

The zombies within the town had long since been cleared by the humans, and when those soldiers entered the town, they began searching for suitable homes and shelter as they huddled within, shivering in the cold.

Within a building, Yue Zhong immediately set fire to a wooden bed frame, and a number of the soldiers gathered around the fire to warm themselves up.

The two attributes that determined the body's resistance to the cold was Vitality and Endurance. Very few Enhancers in the Greater China Alliance had focused on these 2, hence they felt the cold all the way to their bones.

Yue Zhong eyed Duan Zi Ke and asked: "What kind of organization is the Greater China Alliance?"

Although someone had told Yue Zhong about the movements of the Greater China Alliance, the person did not know the exact

details and makeup of the Greater China Alliance.

Duan Zi Ke thought for a moment, gathering his thoughts, before he replied directly: "The Greater China Alliance....."

The Greater China Alliance was an union that was formed from a number of warlord factions coming together. They had communicated through radio. Although it was termed an alliance, in truth, there was almost no relationship between these warlords. It was a load of complete bull. Other than the broadcasting station, they lacked other means of communications. At the same time, no one of them wanted to give up their own establishments they worked so hard to get.

However, after the alliance was formed, the total number of people these warlords shared amongst themselves became over a million, with many experts amongst them. It was a decent-sized threat to anyone who hears of them. Although they did not have any close relationships, they would share intel from time to time, and it became such that an alliance was more beneficial than not.

Jin Sheng Cheng was in charge of the Guang Xi region, which happened to be the strongest force. He had over 80,000 survivors under him, and had opened 2 military camps near him, retrieving 5 infantry battalions' worth of equipment. At the same time, he established a survivor force of over 20,000, as they went around in search of more resources.

Duan Zi Ke was the leader of one of these forces, numbering at 10,000.

Of course, Jin Sheng Cheng could easily deploy a 20,000-strong army was because he forced a lot of young men to be drafted. As long as there were fit and able-bodied young men, he would conscript them into the forces. These was how he managed to put together a force of 20,000.

Truthfully, if Yue Zhong was that vicious as well, he could easily pull out a force of 200,000. However, their combat power would

definitely be lacking, and just paying the wages of the 200,000 would be enough to burn through his resources.

Jin Sheng Cheng's base of operations was in Ning Hua District, near Bin Qi City. Although he could not conquer a city, subjugating a small district wasn't a problem.

According to Duan Zi Ke's explanations, the current force that Jin Sheng Cheng had with him was even stronger than the one that Duan Zi Ke brought out, and not some pushover force.

Yue Zhong looked at Duan Zi Ke and said solemnly: "Tell me all about the callsigns you guys have within Guilin City."

"Yes!" Duan Zi Ke's heart went cold and directly gave the information.

Yue Zhong memorised those secret callsigns and told Duan Zi Ke: "I'm going out for a bit! Duan Zi Ke, White Bones, you guys lead the soldiers to rest here within the town for a day."

"Yes!" Duan Zi Ke eyed White Bones beside him before responding in a clear voice.

White Bones nodded slightly at Yue Zhong. It had already a primary level of intellect, and had gained 1 point of enhancement in it, it already knew how to handle some basic matters.

The moment Yue Zhong went out, he leapt onto Lightning's back and said solemnly: "Back to Guilin City!"

Lightning instantly unleashed its maximum speed, bounding off into the snowstorm like a hurricane itself. With its speed that broke the sound barrier, sharp winds blanketed Yue Zhong constantly. If it wasn't for his high Endurance, he would have been shredded to pieces.

With Lightning's full speed of mach-1, in just half an hour, Yue Zhong had already returned to Guilin City.

Chapter 444: Chaos Strikes!

The snowflakes were falling from the sky, on the road leading from Guilin City to Bin Qi City, Murong He had a look of worry as he looked at the sky, his emotions riled up: "Shit! Why did it start snowing!! This sort of weather is really going to be a bother."

Standing beside Murong He, Zhang Xue Wang smiled gently: "Relax, Murong!! Although the snow is a little heavy, it's not a snowstorm yet. As long as they can get past it, they would be able to reach here."

Murong He shook off the snow on his shoes, before sighing heavily. He chuckled bitterly: "I'm worried that the longer it takes, the more likely that person is going to find out. That would be dangerous."

Zhang Xue Wang was unsure what to think, and kept silent.

At this time, in the distance, in the midst of the snowstorm, a signal was fired into the sky, lighting up the skies.

Murong He saw the signal and became excited: "They're here!! They're here!!"

Murong He had been waiting bitterly for this moment, and the moment he saw the signal, he became excited.

Right at this time, an intelligence officer came to Murong He's side and saluted before saying: "Commander!! Leader Yue Zhong had sent someone to seek an audience! Do you want to grant an audience?"

A look of wariness immediately flashed past Murong He's eyes: "Who's that?"

Yue Zhong had countless experts under him, and just as things were going to happen, Murong He wasn't willing to allow an expert to stand guard beside him.

The officer replied: "That person is Dan Hong!"

Murong He mulled for a while before saying: "Bring him to me!"

Soon after, Dan Hong came in front of Murong He and said: "Commander Murong!! Leader has an assignment for you! Please head over to the army by yourself."

Murong He became sullen, as his eyes narrowed: "Now? Can't it wait?"

Dan Hong's expression fell, as he handed a document over: "Commander Murong, please don't make things difficult for me! This is a document from Leader! If you don't go, I have the authority to detain you!"

Murong He held up the document and looked at it once before laughing coldly, and tore it apart forcefully, right in Dan Hong's face: "Yue Zhong! What an arrogant attitude, just because he wants to remove me, it will happen as he wish?"

Dan Hong's expression changed for the worst, as he rebuked: "Murong He!! Are you thinking of rebelling?"

Murong He laughed coldly, and ordered: "That's just my intention!! I'm rebelling against that tyrant Yue Zhong! Apprehend him! Release the signal!"

2 soldiers came forward, and grabbed Dan Hong, while another immediately released a signal towards the skies.

The moment the signal flare rose to the clouds, within Guilin City itself, another flare was fired!

"You dare to rebel!!" Dan Hong was dumbstruck as he looked at Murong He, his expression turning ugly, his body trembling uncontrollably as well.

A strange glint flashed across Murong He's eyes, as he spoke in a ringing voice: "So what if I do!! Yue Zhong is cruel and merciless, for the sake of the country and the people, I'm cleansing this place

of him!!"

"It's time!! It's time!! Kill Yue Zhong!! Kill Yue Zhong!!"

"For the sake of the country, kill Yue Zhong!"

Those trusted aides and officers beside Murong He were hollering with passion. Under their instigation, the rest who had no prior intention to rebel could only shout along helplessly. In such circumstances, those who had a contrary view would most likely face death, and they didn't want to die yet. Furthermore, they have not followed Yue Zhong for long, and weren't particularly loyal to him.

Just when the scene was turning chaotic, Yue Zhong strolled out silently from the shadows, looking at Murong He and the other rebelling commanders, as his cold and aloof voice rang out: "Oh!! Is this a rebellion, a treachery to our country?"

The moment Murong He caught sight of Yue Zhong, he sucked in a breath of cold air, and retreated a few steps. The 8 experts beside him immediately came in front of him to stand between Yue Zhong and him.

Within Guilin City, almost everyone knew how crazily strong Yue Zhong was, and other than those mythical and legendary figures that have been training non-stop within the mountain range, not a single person dared to say they were a match for Yue Zhong.

As he hid behind those experts, Murong He regained his bravado as he stared at Yue Zhong and laughed grimly: "Yue Zhong!! Your timing was just nice! Today will be your funeral!!"

Yue Zhong chuckled coldly in response, as he waved his hands, and 2 soldiers came out with a 17, 18 year old youth as well as a 36-37 year old lady in tow.

Murong He had just finished his words and his face fell, eyes turning bloodshot as he almost lost his composure and screamed:

"Xiao Jian! Ah Yi! Yue Zhong!! You bastard! Xiao Jian!! Why is Xiao Jian in your hands?"

The 17-18 year old youth was called Murong Jian, and was Murong He's precious son. The lady was his wife.

Murong Jian's eyes were filled with tears as he screed wretchedly: "Dad!! Save me!! Daddy, please save me!!"

There was a gun placed at his temple, and the moment Yue Zhong gave the order, the gun would immediately claim Murong Jian's life, blasting a hole in his head.

Following which, numerous youths were brought out like captives, with guns pointed at their heads from behind.

"Little Bao!!"

"Xiao Man!!"

"Jin Xi!!"

When the various commanders of Murong He saw their children being brought out, they turned clammy. These were their offspring, and had been rounded up and brought here. Seeing their loved ones as captives, their hearts were filled with unprecedented fear.

Yue Zhong spoke out coldly: "Since you guys have chosen to revolt, you must have been prepared for this! I'm giving you 15 seconds to consider! Those who surrender get the hell over here! I can spare your family, and even leave you with your dog life! Otherwise, I'll first kill your family, then it will be your turn! My patience has its limits! From now, 15...."

Seeing their family members in the hands of Yue Zhong, all the rebelling personnel immediately turned pale, and their hearts started to waver.

"Don't kill my son!! I surrender!!" One of the commanders was ashen by now, and he leapt out, running towards Yue Zhong.

Murong He's eyes flashed with a fierce light, and wanted to shoot that commander dead on the spot, however, as he watched his own son being held captive, he hesitated.

Yue Zhong eyed those officers seemingly unsure of what to do and laughed coldly: "Ah right!! I forgot to mention! The signal earlier, was under my orders! The Greater China Alliance that you've been waiting for won't be coming. They have already been buried in the snowstorm by me."

The moment this news came out, it instantly caused many of the hesitating officers to suck in a cold breath, and knew that it had all been a trap. Yue Zhong had made use of the Greater China Alliance to clean up all those who were disloyal.

If Murong He and his men had been lying quietly in wait all these while, Yue Zhong would have no means to deal with them. After all, he had just gained control, and could not touch these old-timers without a valid reason, lest he face a backlash from the other commanders.

However, the moment Murong He and the rest started a revolt, then things would be different. No one would tolerate the idea of a rebel, and Yue Zhong would then be able to cleanse his army from all these viruses. Even the other commanders would have nothing to say, otherwise Yue Zhong could make use of the chance to apprehend them as well.

"I surrender!! Don't harm my wife and daughter!"

"I surrender!! Don't kill my son!!"

With no hope of victory, many of the officers looked defeated and devastated, and began to surrender, kneeling on the ground.

Each time there was an officer that came and surrender, their families would be released.

After 15 seconds, there were only 6 experts and 7 other pale-faced commanders left beside Murong He.

Murong He had a stricken look as he shrieked: "Wait!! Yue Zhong, I surrender!! Please release my son Xiao Jian and my wife!!"

"Kill!" Yue Zhong ordered coldly.

Peng! Peng!

A stream of gunshot sounds rang out, and the families of the 7 commanders were all shot dead, as 20 young men and women slumped lifelessly in pools of their own blood.

Seeing this, all those who had surrendered had expressions of shock, as they shuddered. If they were just the slightest bit slower, their families would have been gunned down like that in cold blood. This young man in front of them had a heart of steel, and was not merciful towards any obstructions to him.

"Yue Zhong!! I want your family dead!!"

"Yue Zhong!! I won't forgive you!!"

The commanders beside Murong He instantly roared in madness, their eyes filled with deep hatred and sorrow, as they made to charge at him.

"Do it!" At this time, Zhang Xue Wang, who had been standing beside Murong He ordered coldly.

The 7 personal guards of Zhang Xue Wang immediately opened fire, spraying at the officers beside Murong He. Under the blanket of bullets, those officers had not the time to defend, and were instantly punched full of holes, as they fell to the ground dead.

Sharp bone spikes came out from a soldier that was inconspicuous beside Zhang Xue Wang, directly nailing the heads of the 6 experts guarding Murong He to the ground. They had all been on guard against Yue Zhong, and had not expected a strike from their 'friend' Zhang Xue Wang.

Murong He was flabbergasted as he gritted his teeth and looked at Zhang Xue Wang accusingly: "It's you!! Old Zhang, you actually

betrayed us?!"

Zhang Xue Wang looked at Murong He and said slowly: "That's right! Murong, it was I who betrayed you guys! Yes, Yue Zhong might not be the perfect leader! However, of all the things that you guys should not have done, the worst thing you guys did was to revolt in the face of an assault by 3 million zombies! Have you ever thought that in such weather, how would the 900,000 survivors escape to anywhere?! Even if they did successfully escape to the next city or district, how many will die in the process? For the sake of the citizens, you guys have to pay!"

Zhang Xue Wang was in fact unhappy and dissatisfied with Yue Zhong's treatment of himself. However, he was a man of principles and looked at things from a larger perspective. He was extremely clear that in such weather conditions, the moment they had to evacuate the 900,000 survivors, many would not be able to live past a few days. Hence, the moment the Greater China Alliance tried to entice him into joining them, he had immediately went to report to Yue Zhong.

"Haha!! Haha!! Yue Zhong, this is all on me! Please look favourably upon my family, I will definitely give you a proper account!!" Murong He smiled sadly, and pulled out a gun from his pocket, closing his eyes shut, and pulling the trigger.

With a peng, the brains of Murong He were blasted out and splattered onto the ground, as his lifeless body slumped down.

The moment Murong He died, the rest of the officers immediately knelt to surrender, and those who were going with the flow immediately put down their weapons, their hands hugging their heads. There was a tension in the air as they awaited their judgement.

Yue Zhong eyed those kneeling officers and coldly ordered: "Take these rebels and their families and throw them in the Scum Battalion! Place them on the frontlines. Such trash, even at such a

critical juncture, they want to cause problems!!"

Although there were many officers amongst them that were experienced, Yue Zhong would not use them, and directly throw them into the Scum Battalion, treating them as cannon fodder.

While these men had talents, they harbored ill intents. If Yue Zhong did not punish them sufficiently, they would start to think that it was alright to continue to rebel.

Numerous soldiers came forward, and apprehended those officers, leading them away.

Zhang Xue Wang came in front of Yue Zhong and saluted: "Leader!"

Yue Zhong grinned at Zhang Xue Wang, before pointing to a 26-27 year old young man whose entire being radiated a sturdy aura as he said: "Well done!! Zhang Xue Wang, from now on, you're in charge of Murong He's 7th Battalion. This is Li Zhao! He will be your vice-commander, and will assist you in whipping the 7th Battalion into shape."

Zhang Xue Wang was clear that this was Yue Zhong's way of cleaning up the 7th Battalion, at the same time, not giving him all the power. However, he was extremely comfortable with that, as he replied: "Yes! Leader! I will definitely work well with Li Zhao to clean up and whip the 7th Battalion into shape!"

Yue Zhong saw how Zhang Xue Wang was so forthright and nodded. Such a person could become the top general to Du Shan Xiong was definitely capable. It was just that in the past, Yue Zhong was still hesitant to utilize him, after all he was forced to submit to Yue Zhong. After this matter, Zhang Xue Wang had readily offered him information on the Greater China Alliance, and it was still under the enticement of their side. Hence, from some perspectives, Zhang Xue Wang was still reliable.

"I guess that the other places must be coming under control as

well!" Yue Zhong had cleaned up the scene of Murong He, and he turned to look towards the city center, thinking quietly to himself.

Chapter 445: The Powerful War Phoenix Squad!

"It's time!! Everyone, kill! It's our chance to take down Yue Zhong!!"

"Eradicate Yue Zhong!"

"Kill!!"

When Yue Zhong embarked on his cleansing of the triads and gangs, many of them had collapsed, but a few experts had managed to hide within the safety of their families and friends.

There were even a few who switched to the conducting of legitimate businesses, however, they missed the days of past where they could walk around brazenly and oppress anyone as they liked. The moment someone gave the signal, many of them leapt at the chance and banded together.

When Murong He had released the signal, all sorts of characters unleashed their inner suppressed dissatisfaction and anger, wrecking anything that they laid their eyes on.

"Hahahaha!! Burn!! Burn!! I'll raze you all!" A number of young coolies of about 15-16 years old with their hair dyed blond were running through the streets with torches, setting fire to every shop they saw. Anyone who rushed to protect their own shops would be beaten up till they could not get up.

"No!! You animals!!" One shopkeeper saw his blood and sweat being set ablaze by those hooligans, and his eyes shone with a gaze full of agony and fury. He had bought the shop after painstakingly saving his ration tickets. He was prepared to live a better life, now that his shop was burnt to the ground by those coolies, and his heart was full of pain.

Right at this time, 20 armed policemen equipped with assault rifles charged over, eyeing those coolies with an icy glare, and

instantly fired wildly.

'Tatata' Gunshots rang out, a number of coolies were instantly shot full of holes as they slumped to the ground.

"Ah!! Don't kill me!! I'm still 14!! I'm only" One coolie saw his comrades falling in pools of their own blood, and he screamed out in terror. Even the rascals of today's society knew to use their age to their advantage, to escape punishment. However, in the apocalypse, as long as one was a terrorist, regardless of age, race or background, the special forces would execute without prejudice.

In fact, whenever the fabric of society was threatened, and in any chaotic situation, there would be terrorists or extremists with agendas that made their presence known and felt. Against these terrorists, the People's Republic of China had always chosen to execute them. However, as the control of the media had always been tight, there would be no chance for any such cases to make any headlines. And only such firm, iron-like treatment could scare and deter any potential troublemakers. Otherwise, they would spread their ideologies and threaten society itself. It must be known that a single jewelry shop could be worth a few hundred thousands, if there were such people around, there would be no end to the robberies and acts of self-interest.

That young coolie had barely screamed out for 3 seconds when bullets riddled his body full of holes, and he slumped to the floor dead.

Those special forces did not so much as spare more than a few glances at the dead bodies, before they continued towards other areas to suppress the threatening insurgencies.

"Hahahaha!" 6 Enhancers who were at least Level 30 and above were wielding their knives and marching brazenly on the streets. Their task was to incite more chaos and trouble within the town centre of Guilin City, attracting the attention of the army under Yue Zhong.

"Help!"

"They're murdering people!"

As the 6 of them went around and wantonly engaged in slaughter, the masses were plunged into chaos.

Peng!!

All of a sudden, the leader who had just killed a number of people, was suddenly shot, a new bullet hole appearing in his head. His entire body slumped to the floor.

"Sniper?" The faces of the remaining 5 immediately fell, as they made their way hastily towards an alley.

Right at this time, a flash of a black shadow went by, accompanied by the swishing of a blade, and one of the Enhancers was immediately chopped in two at the waist.

Before the remaining 4 had the chance to react, the black shadow flitted about and slaughtered another 2.

2 silent blades made out of air was conjured, and chopped the remaining 2 apart as well.

After making short work of those 6 Enhancers, a special forces unit came coming out of an alley and asked the black figure: "Friend! Who are you?"

The figure was wearing a black cape, his entire body dressed in black, and his looks handsome. The youth looked towards the leader of the special forces, Zhang Heng, and replied solemnly: "I do not care for these brutes that caused such wanton slaughter! Please don't mind me!"

The corner of Zhang Heng's mouth lifted, as he looked at the youthful male in black and led his men towards another direction, as he replied: "Let's go!"

In this world, there were all sorts of figures who became Enhancers. There were some students, some farmers, officials,

even army personnel and villagers could become Enhancers. And amongst these people, there were bound to be one or two eccentric characters. In this apocalyptic world, having one or two caped vigilantes wasn't necessarily a bad thing as well.

Zhang Heng had seen many things, as long as the youth was not his enemy, he didn't want to make an enemy out of him either. After all, while the youth did truly come off as pretentious, he was not weak at all.

The youth dressed in black watched Zhang Heng and the rest leaving towards another direction and hastily called out: "My name is called Li Tie! Blazing Wind Li Tie!"

Reporting his name after doing a good deed, that was Li Tie's habit. Otherwise, with all his efforts to do good, no one would know of him. Zhang Heng chuckled silently, and continued to proceed with haste.

Under the combined efforts of the 3 police forces, all those troublemakers who took the chance to wreak havoc were suppressed. There were even civilian experts who lent a hand as well, subduing any offenders. Yue Zhong had not done anything spectacular, but his cleaning up of the streets, as well as the sentencing of any bad eggs to the Scum Battalion had earned the respect and admiration of the commoners, as the whole of Guilin City had become a lot safer.

After all, without the oppression of those gangsters and hoodlums, those small time businessmen didn't have to deal with the extra layer of cost. Their lives also became alot better.

Just as the police force were engaged with handling the city, at a villa that belonged to Yue Zhong, a group of women were wielding weapons and launching an assault on the building. These women were the ex-members of the Scarlet Phoenix Triad.

"How come it's still not done?!" Ding Mei's eyes were icy cold as she glared at her trusted aide Wang Yu and questioned sternly.

Wang Yu was an ordinary looking woman with a face full of pimples. Her long hair reached her shoulders and her stature was burly and tall, reaching a height of 1.7m. She was the top expert under Ding Mei, and her enhancement level was 45, and her combat ability truly astonishing.

In this world, it was not that only beauties were experts. In fact, most current female experts had builds like Wang Yu and were ordinary looking as well. Other than Ji Qing Wu and Yao Yao on Yue Zhong's side, the rest of the beauties had been groomed by him after spending a large amount of resources.

With enough resources, a normal person could also become an expert. However, if such an expert were to clash against an expert like Yue Zhong who had battled his way upwards, the combat ability would definitely be vastly different as well.

By now, Wang Yu's body was shuddering just a little as she broke out in cold sweat under that fearsome gaze of Ding Mei, and she replied carefully: "Chief, their firepower is too fierce! If we want to force our way in, the sisters would suffer a lot more!"

Ding Mei's expression frosted over as she stood straight up: "Regardless, we have to take this place down! Yue Zhong's not a simple character, the moment he makes his way here, we will all suffer a fate worse than death. Before he reacts, we need to subdue the villa and take his women and family hostage! Only then we can hold the cards to attack and retreat whenever!! This is our only chance! If we fail, we won't have a next time!! Forget it, I'll do it myself!!"

Ding Mei had wanted to preserve her energy, to handle the fights to come later on. However, Wang Yu had no way of breaching the defences in a short time, and Ding Mei was becoming restless.

Wang Yu was shocked, and tried to coax her: "Chief!! Give me one more chance. This time I will definitely do my best to assault the villa."

Ding Mei's eyes flashed with a gaze that would cause people to flinch: "No! I need to quickly end this. Go get the War Phoenix team ready!"

"Yes!" Wang Yu replied respectfully.

The War Phoenix team was the core battle strength of the Scarlet Phoenix Triad, and was made up of the 10 strongest females in the triad. Everyone inside was above Level 40, and they had enhanced their level 3 skills three times. Furthermore, they had 2 naturally awakened Evolvers which was incredibly hard to find. This was their true trump card. Wang Yu was also a member of the team.

Initially, Ding Mei had offered up all weapons, most of her force, as well as rations to Yue Zhong. However, the core War Phoenix team had been hidden by her.

Hiding a large force was not easy, but a small team of 10 was easy to bury in a huge city of people.

10 women came marching while donning Type 2 Mutant Beast hides, their gazes sharp, hands wielding maces as well as Dark Magic Blades and they stood quietly beside Ding Mei. Just by standing there, they exuded a strong cold killing intent. They were not weak women who stood behind men, but were warriors that held their own against zombies and Mutant Beasts, baptized by a sea of blood. Every single one of them was an elite not necessarily losing out to any of Yue Zhong's subordinates.

Ding Mei was wearing a set of fiery-red tight clothes, causing her explosive figure to be accentuated. She gazed at the members of the War Phoenix and coldly declared: "The targets are Yue Zhong's women and his parents. Everyone else? Slaughter them all!"

Chapter 446: Fearsome Weapons of War!

After saying her piece, Ding Mei's eyes flashed with a cold glint, and she shot towards the villa of Yue Zhong like an arrow.

The 10 members of the War Phoenix followed closely behind.

Under the lead of the War Phoenix, 70 other members of the original Scarlet Phoenix Triad also grabbed their weapons and spread out in a skirmish line, launching assaults on the villa.

These women led tough and pitiful lives at the start of the apocalypse. After being absorbed into the ranks of the Scarlet Phoenix Triad, and undergoing the intense training, every one of them possessed a strong fighting will, and would not lose to the soldiers under Yue Zhong.

Right at this time, within the villa, gunfire broke out, as a huge rain of metal bullets buffeted the female warriors of the Scarlet Phoenix Triad. When the machine gun started spraying, those female warriors were suppressed, some even being punched full of holes as they fell to the ground. The ones still alive and only wounded, released blood curdling screams of pain.

Other than the machine guns, there were various mortar teams that went all out, launching explosives onto the members of the Scarlet Phoenix Triad.

Under the assault of such heavy fire, many members of the Scarlet Phoenix Triad were blasted into pieces.

The battlefield was a cruel and merciless place. Here, be it women, the elderly, or even the children, would not be spared from any firearms, as the guns had no eyes, nor moral codes, only serving to kill enemies.

Facing that sort of firepower, regardless of how strong-willed the women were, they would still be injured. The area was filled with moaning and shrieking women.

As for the War Phoenix, who were led by Ding Mei, they fended off the bullets and charged towards the villa in a mad rush, using their skills and abilities to resist the attacks.

One of them, an agility-based Evolver flitted about in the rain of bullets like a spectre, as long as the bullets weren't hitting her head, they were being deflected off by the Mutant Beast hide. Although she had received a number of bullets, she wasn't injured, and wasn't dead.

Another Enhancer with the [Telekinesis] ability activated a Psychic Barrier, and as the bullets hit the barrier, they bounced off harmlessly.

There was even an Enhancer who could manipulate metal, as she activated an entire thick steel carapace around her, and as the bullets landed on the metal defence, they bounced off it, not damaging it in the slightest.

A summoning type in their ranks summoned a 3m-tall polar bear, and the polar bear relied on its massive size to block the bullets.

Ding Mei's eyes flashed, and as she ran through the rain of bullets, she eyed the distance, and waved her hands. In that instant, 3 flying daggers shot out like lightning, piercing the necks of 3 soldiers, killing them immediately.

Wang Yu eyed the soldiers afar, and slapped out with a single hand in attack. A number of ice shards appeared out of thin air, and shot towards the soldiers of Yue Zhong.

Barraged by those ice shards, 2 of the soldiers were immediately killed, and another 3 heavily injured, their bodies seemingly frozen solid.

The prowess of the War Phoenix was truly tyrannical, as they relied on just their abilities to resist the firepower from Yue Zhong's subordinates.

Just as Ding Mei had killed 7 of the soldiers and was preparing to

charge into the villa, when she felt a strong chill at the back of her spine.

She discovered that in the villa, there were 4 IFVs hidden amongst the grass with their cannons aimed at the gate, waiting to fire.

Other than those 4 IFVs, there were even 8 other 14.5mm machine gun-mounted vehicles aimed at the gate as well.

The next moment, the IFVs and machine gun-mounted vehicles unleashed a wild barrage of bullets at Ding Mei as well as the members of the War Phoenix.

The Barrier-user was instantly assaulted by a torrential rain of bullets, and after withholding for 3 seconds, the Psychic Barrier disintegrated, as she spat out a mouthful of blood. A stray 14.5mm round then struck her body, tearing her body in two.

The 3m-tall polar bear was also punched full of holes the moment it faced the heavy firepower, and one of the cannons pierced directly through it and punched a massive hole in the body of the summoner right behind it.

Even the female who was surrounded by a layer of steel was not spared. The thick 3cm layer of steel that covered her was punctured at numerous places, and her body riddled with holes as a result.

The Agility-based Evolver who had a speed that could match Bai Xiao Sheng managed to dodge all the normal bullets, but unfortunately, she did not dodge one 14.5mm round. In an instant, she was sent flying back a few metres, landing crumpled on the floor, her bones mangled in many areas. She spat out a mouthful of blood, before dying.

The Type 2 Mutant Beast hide could resist a 14.5mm bullet, but those rapid machine guns carried an immense force, and unless they had an Endurance like Yue Zhong that was 15 times that of a

normal person, they would almost definitely be pierced through.

Yue Zhong had hidden a number of such weapons within the villa, and the moment they unleashed their ferocity, those exceptional female warriors of the War Phoenix instantly lost 7 of their members, while the remaining 3 and Ding Mei had to expend all their energy just to be able to escape.

Ding Mei hid behind a cover with a bewildered and stricken look: "How did it come to this? Don't tell me... Yue Zhong already knew we were going to strike?"

In truth, Yue Zhong did know that there would be a rebellion, and hence deployed a number of the weapons to a few key locations. However, he did not know exactly who the Greater China Alliance had contacted. He had only information given to him by Zhang Xue Wang, which involved Murong He.

The Greater China Alliance had revealed a part of the plan when they thought that Zhang Xue Wang was on board, but had not revealed everything, purely because they were still cautious as well.

Xin Jia Rou was decked in military uniform as she spoke through a loudhailer: "Those people outside listen up! Everyone is to put down your weapons and surrender! Otherwise, we'll kill without mercy!"

When Ding Mei heard Xin Jia Rou's words, she clenched her fists tightly, and grinded her teeth. She was extremely unwilling, thinking: "Surrender?! Never!! I will never lower my head to anyone!!"

Right at this time, from afar, the sounds of propellers rang out, and 2 assault helicopters flew overhead. The moment they were in the sky, they unleashed a line of bullets as well as napalm fire at Ding Mei and the rest of the Scarlet Phoenix Triad who were hiding behind cover.

Hong! Hong!

The continuous explosions rang out crazily, as two of the remaining War Phoenix members got caught in the blast zone and were shredded into pieces.

A huge part of the land caught fire as the blazing flames seemed to reach the skies, and a number of the other Scarlet Phoenix members were instantly incinerated where they were.

There were many experts in the Scarlet Phoenix, and if they were to engage in a forceful assault, the subordinates awaiting in the villa would definitely suffer casualties. Many of the Scarlet Phoenix members held the upper hand in close combat after all.

However, in the face of those 2 assault helicopters, there was no chance whatsoever for the experts of the Scarlet Phoenix to retaliate. This was the true might of modern weapons of war.

Of course, there would be the constant evolution of the strong, especially someone like Yue Zhong, who could use his own Tanky body to withstand the might of modern weaponry. However, that was not to say that such weapons were trash, even ordinary Evolvers would find it hard to contend against the might of the military.

The appearance of the 2 assault helicopters dashed all hopes of a comeback for Ding Mei, as she bit her lips till they broke and bled, and ordered: "Retreat!! Everyone, escape out of Guilin City!!"

This time, since Ding Mei had resolved to rebel, she had not entertained the thought of surrendering to Yue Zhong. It was clear that they would receive his wrath. No one could tolerate any rebellion, especially when they had chosen such a crucial moment, where Yue Zhong is preoccupied with dealing with the impending zombie horde.

The female warriors of the Scarlet Phoenix exhibited astonishing will to fight, even under that rain of bullets and fire, they did not

scatter. However, the appearance of the assault helicopters as well as Ding Mei's orders caused them to collapse, and they fought to scramble in all directions.

Unfortunately, the 2 assault helicopters were not going to let it go, as they engaged their weapons again, firing at those female warriors.

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!!"

"I surrender!!"

Seeing their comrades being ripped to pieces, the strongest of wills would also be battered, and many submitted to the troops of Yue Zhong.

On the other side, Ding Mei witnessed all these and gritted her teeth, grabbing the remaining Wang Yu as they made their way into the distance. She was incredibly stubborn, and even though the Scarlet Phoenix was truly finished, as long as she was alive, based on her power, she could assemble another team somewhere else again.

The moment Ding Mei ran, the remaining members of the Scarlet Phoenix were soon rounded up, and thrown into the Women Scum Battalion. Yue Zhong was never one to be merciful to his enemies, and regardless of gender, as long as they were enemies, he would not let them off. Hence, within the Scum Battalion, there was the Male division and Female division. Within the Women Division, it was filled with all the female enemies of him, as well as the female family members of any traitors or wrongdoers.

This time, the 3 main powers that the Greater China Alliance had tried to attract to their side were Murong He, Zhang Xue Wang as well as Ding Mei. With regards to the other high-ranking officials, they didn't dare try to approach. With Murong He and Ding Mei out of the picture, and Zhang Xue Wang supporting Yue Zhong, Guilin City soon regained its peace.

Chapter 447: The Zombie Horde Attacks!

Within an office in Guilin City, Yue Zhong and Hu Yi sat opposite each other.

Ning Yu Xin prepared 2 cups of clear tea and served them both before leaving the office.

Hu Yi had an ashamed expression as he spoke: "Big Brother! I'm sorry, I didn't even manage to hold on for a day, and lost 30 of our brothers!"

With 200 experts that were above Level 30 that had went on the expedition, losing 30 was no small loss.

Yue Zhong had a grave look as he questioned: "What happened? How were you guys defeated so quickly?"

Hu Yi and the 200 Enhancers were all strong, and could handle a group of more than 10,000 zombies on their own. As long as they made use of the terrain, even 3 million zombies would be impeded by them for at least a day or two. However, they had actually returned within a day, there must have been a reason.

Hu Yi's face was crestfallen as he replied: "Big Bro!! Within the horde, there's a new evolved type. It's called the Devourer, and they can consume other zombie corpses to evolve. Ordinary attacks cannot do much to them. They're agile, and can spit out poison goo. The moment the goo touches someone, the person would immediately become a zombie. We were defeated because of that! 30 of our brothers had turned into zombies because of that attack from those Devourers!"

Hu Yi felt deep regret, if he had called for a retreat the moment they discovered the Devourer, he wouldn't have lost so many of his subordinates.

Those experts that were above Level 30 had killed many Mutant Beasts and zombies to reach where they were. To retrain another

group of them would be extremely difficult.

Yue Zhong consoled him: "Don't put the blame on yourself, no one would expect a new Evolved to appear amongst the horde."

The humans were evolving, with the flow of time, the zombies were also evolving. Yue Zhong had guessed that a new fearsome existence would appear, he hadn't expected the process to be so fast, for a new terrifying form to emerge from the ranks.

According to Hu Yi's estimate, even a 14.5mm bullet would be unable to penetrate the skin of the Devourers. Only the cannons from the 122 self-propelled missiles or other projectiles might work.

However, because of the constant war led by Du Shan Xiong against the horde, most of the heavy ammunition in the armory had dwindled down. This caused a problem for Yue Zhong, who pondered silently before asking: "It's snowing now! Did the snow affect the speed of the horde?"

Hu Yi thought back carefully before replying: "A little! In this snowstorm, the advance of the zombie horde had decreased a little. However, it's not affected a whole lot. My guess is that they would arrive in another 6 days."

There was only a distance of 100 km between Guilin City and Nanning City. With that sort of distance, it would take motorcycles at most 4 hours to cross. However, the zombies were advancing without stop regardless of time. Their speed was slow though, thus they would need more days to reach Guilin City.

Yue Zhong mulled for a while more before saying: "6 days? Alright, I've got it!! Go and take a good rest!"

"En! Big Bro!" Hu Yi replied gratefully, before dismissing himself. He had led his subordinates out of the zombie horde, and braved the snowstorm to reach back Guilin City, and he was indeed exhausted.

The moment Hu Yi left, Yue Zhong shut his eyes, his brows furrowed together due to the many problems surfacing.

The numbers of the 3-million strong zombie horde were simply too much. Even slaughtering 3 million pigs would cause a group of 10,000 people to be exhausted. Not to mention that these zombies were capable of retaliation, in addition, they had evolved types amongst them.

With the current military strength of Yue Zhong, exterminating a horde of 100,000 was easy enough but anything above a million would be tiresome. With the numbers reaching 3 million, Yue Zhong's heart felt like it was being pressured by a huge stone.

The remaining ammunition in the armory was too little!! If they had enough, then the 3 million zombie horde would be a joke. The rounds from the 122 self-propelled missiles could level half a football field. Just a single round could decimate over hundreds of densely packed zombies. Because of these rounds, Du Shan Xiong had been able to use a regiment against a few million ordinary zombies. Without it, his regiment would have been swallowed up long ago.

Although Yue Zhong had come up with numerous preparations, he had no confidence of an assured victory against the 3 million-strong zombie horde.

Ning Yu Xin came into the room, sitting beside Yue Zhong with her unique scent, as she asked in worry: "Is everything ok? What's on your mind?"

After joining Yue Zhong in body, Ning Yu Xin had slowly come to accept her position and fate.

"Nothing much!! I'm just a little tired!" Yue Zhong then slumped, and laid directly in Ning Yu Xin's lap, breathing in her scent, and feeling the stress and knots in his heart slowly loosening.

Yue Zhong knew deep in his heart, should he fail, the more than

800,000 survivors would face imminent doom, and the security and stability that he had painstakingly established would collapse once more. A majority of the survivors would also lose faith in him.

By now, Yue Zhong had gathered countless factions under him, and they became willing followers, because he had been undefeated. He was hence the only suitable candidate to lead. If he failed, then his position amongst his subordinates would fall, and the troops would most certainly disintegrate. Of course, if Yue Zhong were to come out on top of this, his position in Guilin City would be further cemented, and in the short term future, no one would be able to rock his position.

"En!" Ning Yu Xin watched as Yue Zhong closed his eyes, and felt her heart skip a beat. She finally saw a vulnerable side of this cold-hearted man who seemed to weather it all and carry the world's burdens on his shoulders. She felt as though the distance between this man and her was not so far after all.

With the inner turmoil, as well as the imminent threat of the zombie horde, Yue Zhong had been under a lot of duress, but he had never spoken about it to anyone. He just quietly shouldered it all, and hence the pressure and stress had accumulated. Laying on the soft and tender legs of Ning Yu Xin, he unknowingly fell asleep.

After sleeping for goodness knows how long, Yue Zhong stirred awake, and saw Ning Yu Xin staring at him.

Yue Zhong became clear-headed and immediately got off Ning Yu Xin's leg. He looked at her, his eyes filled with an apologetic look: "Sorry! I fell asleep."

Yue Zhong knew that after laying so long on her legs, they would definitely become numb.

The corners of Ning Yu Xin's mouth curled, as she narrowed her eyes in an enchanting way as she smiled and say: "Aren't I already your woman, if you're still going to stand on ceremony, I'll be

angry."

"Haha!!" Yue Zhong chuckled and embraced this pretty lady in his arms.

5 days passed by in a blink, and countless rotting corpses came shambling towards Guilin City, with tattered clothes draping over their bodies as the horde appeared in the horizon.

The bitter cold could freeze a normal person to death, and cause the morale and fighting spirit of soldiers to plunge. If the troops had been marching in the snow, they would incur a huge loss. However, the intense cold seemed to have almost no effect on the zombies, only serving to make their movements more rigid.

"They're finally here!!" Yue Zhong stood quietly at the frontlines, looking at the sea of zombies, pressure building in his heart.

If it came down to commanding a huge army to battle, Yue Zhong could not compare to actual military generals, hence in the command post, he had Zhang Xue Wang, Zheng Ming He, Chen Yu and other proper military personnel, while he himself went to the frontlines.

When those soldiers at the frontlines saw Yue Zhong, the highest commanding person in Guilin City, standing beside them on the battlefield, their morale reached a high never seen before.

Leading was the basic principle of a commander, not being protected like a general. Yue Zhong knew that about himself, and after countless battles, he was an incredible fighter with tremendous strength, and would not be able to exhibit his qualities through commanding. Instead, it was on the battlefield.

The seemingly endless zombies came shambling towards the defensive location, and while their speed was slow, they were closing the distance.

"Open fire!!" Yue Zhong shouted as he eyed the incoming horde.

Following Yue Zhong's orders, the various weapons all unleashed

their prowess, raining destruction and carnage upon the horde of zombies, causing large patches of them to be felled.

As countless ordinary zombies were shot down, from within the horde, more than 500 L2s came charging out from all directions of the horde, making for Guilin City. At the same time, there were countless other L1s and ordinary zombies following closely behind.

At the frontlines, 2 battalions, the 3rd Battalion led by Ying Kai Shan and 5th Battalion led by Chai Zi Cang, were stationed. The soldiers were all experienced veterans that had fought against zombies, and the moment they saw the L2s, they immediately used their grenade launchers against them.

As the grenades landed on the L2s, the resulting explosion blasted their bodies into pieces. An L2 might be impervious to ordinary bullets, but it could not withstand the impact and force of those grenades.

In front of those 2 battalions, there were countless barbed wires and as the ordinary zombies shambled forwards, they were ripped and shredded by the blades, before being flattened underneath the zombies pushing from behind.

On top of that, there were countless uneven picks made of ice, which were made by using hot water in the midst of construction. It was simple, but effective, and as those zombies hit those steps, they were stopped by those picks, directly squashed from behind, and never getting up again.

These were all simple traps, but enough to cause over a thousand of the zombies to fall, before being crushed by their own.

The horde was simply too large, as countless zombies continued to pour towards the city, and with the advance of the L2, even those barbed wires were torn apart. As for those defences made of ice, they were stomped to pieces by the L2s as well.

Led by the L2s, more zombies managed to break past and got

closer to the defensive posts.

This time, the experts from the 3rd and 5th Battalions rushed forth to engage the zombies in slaughter.

The moment the battle switched to melee, slowly but surely, casualties were appearing in the 2 battalions.

Thousands of S2s caught wind of the scent of blood, and dodged the rain of bullets to charge at the defence. Many of them were gunned down, but the moment those S2s breached the defence, it was hell on earth to those soldiers.

At this point, those barbed wires and uneven grounds with ice picks were most effective, causing the speedy S2s to be helpless against the traps, as they fell and were trampled upon by their ordinary zombies from behind. After all, the S2s had none of the strength the L2s possessed.

"Fire the cannons!!"

As the dense horde got closer and closer, the mortar and artillery team that were silent throughout finally bared their fangs.

Rounds after rounds of missiles landed on the horde, blasting an entire area apart, causing numerous zombies to be obliterated, turning into ash.

A single volley of heavy artillery was enough to cause a huge patch of the horde be wiped out.

"Scum Battalion, forwards!!" Yue Zhong eyed the sea of zombies and ordered coolly.

Amidst the Scum Battalion, one of the commanding officers, Wang Jian, who had chosen to betray Yue Zhong together with Murong He, bellowed furiously as he wielded a steel blade and charged at the horde: "Everybody charge!! We have only this shot at life left!! If we don't kill them, we'll be the ones to die!!"

"Kill!"

The criminals from the Scum Battalion charged out with bloodshot eyes at the horde that had just suffered a round of heavy artillery attacks.

Behind those criminals, 2 IFVs as well as 10 machine gun-mounted vehicles and 100 soldiers followed behind, eyeing them coldly. If there were any strange movements from the Scum Battalion, they would execute them immediately.

These criminals had been trained to the point of exhaustion after being sentenced by Yue Zhong, undergoing even more gruelling sessions compared to the Special Forces. They became so numb, and now, when faced with the threat of their lives being endangered, they looked back and realized how precious life was. Seeing those zombies, they unleashed their pent-up feelings, fighting to survive.

Only by killing enough zombies, then these criminals would regain a chance at freedom, and gaining proper meals.

These cannon fodder charged through the ordinary zombies, carving out a bloody path, however, they soon came across an obstacle.

An L2 appeared, and as 4 of the criminals slashed with all their might, they only managed to create a few scars on the skin.

The L2 raised its huge fist and pummeled one of the criminals, causing his brain to be instantly pulverized.

Chapter 448: Executing the Devourer!

With an explosive fist that decapitated the criminal, the L2 continued to ravage amongst the group of soldiers of the Scum Battalion, charging at one particular guy behind a shield. The L2's attack sent him flying back for a few metres, before he threw up a mouthful of blood.

The ferocity of the attacks from the L2 did not lesson, as it shot towards another person of the Scum Battalion. It reached out with its claws as though it was catching a chicken, and took a chomp of the throat, causing fresh blood to spurt everywhere, killing the soldier immediately.

Seeing the ruthlessness of the L2 and its terrifying attacks, the soldiers, who were originally feeling pumped with bravado, immediately lost their composure and abandoned their weapons in a bid to retreat backwards.

"All those who retreat will be executed!"

Following that cold, domineering shout, a volley of gunfire rang out, and those Scum Battalion soldiers that had retreated were immediately shot dead.

Seeing this, all the criminals felt their hearts turn cold, as they were caught between 2 extremes, and they could only grit their teeth and charged onwards.

The L2 continued to stride towards the Scum Battalion in huge steps.

"Shit!!" Wang Jian saw the incoming L2, his eyes flashing with a trace of fear. He gripped his weapon tightly. If he was still a military personnel, he could make use of the explosives and grenade launchers to wipe this L2 out. However, all he had on him now was the huge steel blade, and he watched helplessly as the L2 got closer. Death awaited, regardless of which direction he went

to.

Peng!!

Just as the L2 was a few steps away, a sniper bullet penetrated its forehead, causing it to fall lifelessly to the ground. It did not get up again. While the L2 was impervious to different types of ammo, it could not withstand the penetrative power of the average sniper round.

Wang Jian looked at the corpse in front of him, his heart in a jumbled mess. He clenched his fist as he swore silently: "I must definitely regain my freedom!! I will become a proper military soldier this time!"

Only within the ranks of the military, did Wang Jian truly feel secure. After being banished to the Scum Battalion, there was not a day that went by without him thinking about the army. Even being a normal soldier would have satisfied him, and he definitely did not want to lose his life pathetically as a grunt of the Scum Battalion.

"Kill!!" Wang Jian resolved himself, bellowing in rage, and immediately charged forwards to slash at the ordinary zombies.

Under the intense killing spree of the soldiers of the Scum Battalion, as well as the efforts of the experts of the remaining 2 battalions, the scattered zombie horde was being wiped out efficiently.

"Scum Battalion, fall back!!" Yue Zhong surveyed the scene in front of him, and gave the order.

With that order, those soldiers from the Scum Battalion who had exhausted themselves, quickly retreated back in an orderly manner.

When those criminals had been sentenced to the Scum Battalion, they had received all sorts of training, following orders and they had been drilled to maintain order and discipline. As long as there

was any chaos or disobedience, there would be consequences. Hence, under those harsh conditions, discipline was slowly ingrained in them.

80,000 zombies dead at their hands was a sizeable number, but it could not compare to the 3 million zombies.

Not long after, the sea of zombies filled up the pockets of holes caused by the death of the 80,000 zombies and slowly inched closer.

The soldiers of the 2 battalions had earned an hour of rest, before they had no choice but to reenter the fray to engage the incoming zombies.

Facing that never ending sea of zombies, even in winter, the guns fired till they became hot, before cooling down and shattering. Barrels had to be changed often, while grenades, mortars and other explosives were all utilized to their maximum efficiency.

Patches of zombies would be incinerated by the combined firepower, but regardless of how much they did, there seemed to be no end to the numbers. The outcome was bleak.

From time to time, there would be unfortunate soldiers that got bitten as the zombies got too close, becoming infected and turning themselves. Some of the experts would also be killed as they were surrounded by those evolved zombies, before being done in.

White Bones had joined in the fray by now, as it activated its bone blades and charged right in, dancing with its blades, killing countless evolved zombies.

Ying Kai Shan channeled his ability constantly, changing the geography, creating tunnels and allowing his subordinates to kill the zombies with more ease.

Yue Zhong was also slashing with his Black Tooth Blade constantly, slaughtering the zombies. As the Black Tooth Blade was about 2m-long, with each swing, he could easily slice through

5 to 6 zombies, and he had killed over a few hundred in a matter of minutes. However, a few hundred compared to the multi-million strong horde was like losing a single hair from the backs of nine oxen, and was not much comparatively.

"Retreat to the secondary line of defence!" After an intense battle of 30 minutes, Yue Zhong finally called out the order.

As the zombies were advancing forwards without stop, the current location was piling up with corpses, and was becoming unsuitable to maintain their defence there.

Receiving Yue Zhong's orders, the experts covered the retreat of the soldiers as they all began to jump up from their various points of cover, retreating back towards the second line of fortifications.

The sea of zombies continued to slowly but steadily press forwards, forcing Yue Zhong and his men to abandon the first defence post and retreat.

Just as Yue Zhong was retreating, he noticed over 50 zombies appearing within the sea of shambling dead. As they came to the mountains of corpses, they proceeded to shove the bodies into their mouths without haste.

He saw this and his face fell: "Shit!! Are those the Devourers? They can't be allowed to evolve successfully!! Otherwise, we'll be in trouble!"

These 50 Devourers were obviously not the same bunch that Hu Yi had seen, that had evolved completely. If these 50 were allowed to complete their evolution, then Yue Zhong would have to face 50 Level 70 monsters.

Yue Zhong took a deep breath, his eyes gleaming with a cold glaze. He activated his [Shadow Steps], shooting towards the distant Devourers like lightning.

White Bones acted as the vanguard, its bone blades flashing about constantly, slicing up any incoming L2, S2 or ordinary

zombies that got too close as it charged.

Yue Zhong followed closely behind White Bones, making his way for the 50 Devourers that were all above Level 50.

As though they sensed the threat, the 50 Devourers opened their jaws wide, and showcased the black poisonous spit that they could launch and turn anybody into a zombie with. The mass of deadly slime flew at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong waved his hands, and the terrifying Devil Flame appeared out of thin air, directly burning those poisonous darts, the zombies blocking the way, and luckily, 7 of the closest Devourers, consuming them.

With the fearsome burning ability of the Devil Flame, those ordinary zombies were all incinerated instantly, including 2 of the Devourers while the remaining 5 under attack leapt out of the sea of flames, escaping the fate of the rest.

The horde of zombies split open, and 300 H1s that were hiding within the sea appeared! Ranks on ranks of these deadly ranged zombies opened their mouths, and fired 300 fireballs at Yue Zhong in concert.

Yue Zhong's speed had reached 17 times that of a normal person by now, this was nearly reaching the speed of Lightning when it was still a Type 2 , and every action of his was lightning-quick. He simply sped up and dodged the incoming fiery projectiles.

Countless fireballs landed behind Yue Zhong, exploding upon impact, wiping out the nearby zombies and causing scorched obliteration in their wake.

However, even with Yue Zhong evading with the best of his abilities, 3 fireballs still found their target! Luckily Yue Zhong was wearing the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide which deflected them with minor ease.

The hide of the Type 3 Mutant Beast was truly resilient. Adding

on to Yue Zhong's own high Endurance that could withstand even bullets, the 3 fireballs didn't cause much damage.

With a thought, the Green Jiao Cape on his back flashed, and a summoned Green Jiao-Python appeared out of thin air.

The moment the Green Jiao-Python appeared, it opened its huge mouth to exhale a thick poisonous fog across the vicinity. When the zombies came in contact with the poison, they were instantly melted into rotting, soupy, puddles

As the Green Jiao-Python was entangled with the other zombies, Yue Zhong brandished his Black Tooth Blade, and used all his strength to chop downwards at one of the Devourers.

With Yue Zhong's Strength of more than 80 points exploding out, the 2m-long Black Tooth Blade slashed down on the body, causing a huge, deep gash and revealing the bones of the Devourer.

The Devourer did not seem to notice the pain, as it charged towards Yue Zhong like a cannon with 160 or so points of speed! It opened its mouth, and a putrid smell could be detected from its gaping maw.

"My Strength is still lacking, I can't kill it in a single strike!" Yue Zhong came to an understanding, before a Devil Flame conjured in his right hand, and with the expenditure of 50 Spirit and 10 Stamina, condensed into a Devil Flame Sword that was 4m-long.

Yue Zhong held that Devil Flame Sword and slashed, and the intense heat caused the body of the Devourer to be sliced in two, as a dense, thick rotting smell came from the part where its entrails splattered out of the torso.

After finally finding a way to kill a Devourer with one slash, Yue Zhong wielded that same Devil Flame Sword and continued to unleash carnage upon the Devourers in front of him, slicing them in twain.

These Devourers were mostly about Level 50 - 60, and had not

evolved to be at the apex of Level 70. They simply could not withstand those blows from Yue Zhong, and were felled one by one.

In the following short 30 seconds, 30 of the Devourers had been done in by Yue Zhong.

The remaining 20 Devourers seemed to be linked, as they abandoned swallowing the corpses, and dragged their long tails as they jointly pounced at Yue Zhong.

The moment the 20 Devourers engaged in a joint attack on Yue Zhong, the pressure on him intensified to an unimaginable degree!

Chapter 449: Terrifying Level 70 Devourer!

A glint flashed in Yue Zhong's eyes, and instead of waiting for the Devourers to reach him, he took the initiative to charge forwards and slice another of the remaining Devourers in two.

After consecutively killing 3 Devourers, the remaining Devourers reached his side and attacked.

Yue Zhong correspondingly released the Gravity Manipulation skill, and a force immediately began pressing down on the Devourers, causing their bodies to shudder, and their movements were finally slowed.

The Devil Flame Sword in Yue Zhong's hands slashed out, leaving shadows in its wake. That single movement aimed at the Devourers who suddenly came to a stop, and the remaining Devourers found their bodies sliced apart, blood spraying everywhere.

"Congratulations on reaching Level 61, and gaining 2 points of attributes to be allocated."

Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief, and allocated those points to his Agility.

Killing 50 Devourers in that short but intense battle proved to be rewarding, as he gained 3 dropped Skill Books as well as 2 Green Treasure Boxes and 8 White Treasure Boxes.

Yue Zhong swiftly stored them all in his ring, and turned around to retreat, not looking back.

The number of zombies here were simply too many, and Yue Zhong was not confident he could get out safely if he was to be surrounded.

The ordinary zombies swarmed around Yue Zhong, but were easily dispatched by him and White Bones, as they slaughtered their way out.

Yue Zhong and White Bones had just hacked their way out of the horde, when he saw the summoned Type 2 Green Jiao-Python assisting him being bombarded by countless fire projectiles, causing its body to slowly shatter, before it disintegrated, and disappeared.

When he witnessed this, a chill came down his spine: "Even a Type 2 Mutant Beast cannot withstand that attack!! Did the zombies evolve again?"

The Type 2 Mutant Beasts were like invincible existences to ordinary zombies, now that the Type 2 Green Jiao-Python was actually defeated by those unknown fire projectiles, it was obvious that within the sea of zombies, there was an evolved zombie which had the ability to deal with Type 2 Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong's body flitted about the battlefield, and soon, he caught up with the retreating troops that had reached the 2nd defensive point.

The huge sea of zombies continued to shamle forwards with no increase nor decrease in speed, and pretty soon, the battle resumed. After another 30 minutes, Yue Zhong had no choice but to get his troops to retreat yet again, abandoning the 2nd post.

The constant intense battling and retreat continued for almost a day, and Yue Zhong was forced to abandon 8 lines of defence. The soldiers under Ying Kai Shan and Chai Zi Cang were pushed to exhaustion, nearing their limits and were switched out to take a break. The [Raven] combat uniform was extremely useful, with its +3 to all attributes, and its defensive nature had protected many of the soldiers, allowing them to maintain the defence for an entire day.

As Ying Kai Shan and Chai Zi Cang brought their battalions back, they counted a loss of 150+ soldiers. However, with the aid of the traps and heavy firepower, they had managed to annihilate over 300,000 zombies.

Wang He's and Chen Sheng Gang's troops were then deployed to the frontline, and they started to engage the zombies in battle. The number of experts in their battalions were high, and were extremely ferocious in their fighting. However, against the sea of zombies which continued to advance, they were forced to retreat as they fought. Alongside Yue Zhong they fought as they were forced to abandon post after post, making use of space and tactics to eliminate the zombies.

In the afternoon, right as the sun was about to set, Yue Zhong then gave the order for one of his trump cards to be deployed - the armored division.

"Charge!! Armored Division, onwards!!"

The armored division was the one of the cards in Yue Zhong's hands, but he did not think that he could make use of the division to totally wipe out the zombie horde. Hence, he had saved them for a critical juncture, which was to launch an assault before evening fell. After all, battling in the night was disadvantageous to the humans.

20 Type 96 tanks, 30 IFVs, 20 heavy vehicles, 10 road rollers, and 30 machine gun-mounted cars formed the armored division. At the order they came crashing out towards the zombie horde.

Wang He commanded the soldiers of the 6th Battalion and followed behind, ordering the charge towards the zombie horde.

The Type 96 tanks in the front were truly all-conquering, they dove right into the heart of battle, and made use of their weight and armor to crush any zombies in the way.

Be it the L2s, L1s, S2s or S1s, any zombie that got caught in the assault would be thoroughly trampled and minced into paste.

The soldiers of the 6th Battalion were in charge of cleaning up any leftover zombies that had escaped the crushing.

Just as the armored division were concentrating on clearing the

way of any zombies, the horde suddenly parted, as a 1000 H1s appeared, lined up neatly.

The 1000 H1s opened their mouth, and a thousand fireballs came hurtling towards the armored division.

Hong!! Hong!!

With the rain of fireballs, 7 IFVs were instantly caught in the impact and blast, as they exploded. 6 other machine gun-mounted vehicles caught fire and exploded in a ball of flames. 4 of the huge trucks were pulverized and became unusable. 5 of the road rollers were also instantly destroyed. Of the 20 tanks, 1 had been blasted apart, while the 2 of the remaining tanks had their mounted guns destroyed, but otherwise everything else was fine.

The tanks were truly the toughest existence on the battlefield, and could withstand even the hits from rockets. While those fireballs had not harmed the armor of the tanks, they had destroyed a large part of the armored division, and even 30 soldiers from Wang He's battalion were lost. This single move from the zombie horde caused a huge loss for Yue Zhong's troops.

Seeing those neatly placed H1s, the remaining 23 IFVs turned their 25mm machine guns and fired wildly at the H1s.

Facing that hail of bullets, many of the H1s were pummeled by bullets, their bodies covered with bullet holes.

The tanks, which were termed as the kings of the battlefield, also unleashed their cannons and blasted numerous H1s into pieces.

At this time, a huge number of S2s and L2s swarmed over, making their way towards the armored division.

Led by the 20 tanks, the armored division charged forwards without hesitation, causing those zombies to be knocked away, before being crushed beneath the tracks of the armored vehicles.

Facing the tyrannical tanks, any zombies that got in the way would be instantly turned into meat paste. However, with every

second, there would be other zombies to fill the gaps and blocked the movements of the armored vehicles with their own flesh and bodies. It was as futile as a mantis trying to block a car.

With the 20 tanks crushing and proceeding forward, forcefully creating a bloody path of about 1km, suddenly, a Level 70 Devourer leapt out from within the midst of the horde, and jumped onto one of the tanks.

The Devourer had insanely sharp claws, and it slashed viciously at the roof of the tank, instantly piercing that proud, thick plate armor. It then swung out with force, tearing the entire roof away from the tank, and shot a black poison dart into the tank.

When the Devourer evolved to reach Level 70, it had over 30 times the strength of a human, which was equivalent to a few tonnes of strength, and could somewhat easily rip the covering of the tank off.

Immediately, the interior of the tank was engulfed in a black fog, and the soldiers struggled in agony for a short while, before their eyes lost focus and became a group of zombies.

Losing control, the tank stopped within the horde.

"Damned bastard!" Yue Zhong joined in the fray, seeing how the Level 70 Devourer had stopped one of his tanks, his heart was filled with rage.

A tank was stopped, that proved that the rest of the horde had the means to disable the entire fleet as well.

The tank was one of the trump cards in Yue Zhong's hands, and he would not allow more of the tanks to be destroyed.

Yue Zhong immediately let out a howl towards the skies, and his hands flashed, before a Devil Flame Sword conjured in them. He activated his [Shadow Steps] and shot towards the Level 70 Devourer like a spectre.

Hearing that howl, the other trump card in Yue Zhong's hands,

the eyes of the Type 3 Lightning flashed, as it led its 400 brothers and they came speeding out from the forest, and charged in at the zombies.

On the other side, the Level 70 Devourer felt the threat from Yue Zhong and it turned to face him, unleashing a speed that was comparable to the Type 2 Lightning. It charged at Yue Zhong and in a flash, it managed to reach the left side of Yue Zhong, swiping out viciously.

If Yue Zhong was like the time where he had just appeared in Vietnam, it would be impossible for him to dodge or defend against this strike from the Level 70 Devourer. However, Yue Zhong was now a Level 61 Enhancer, and his Agility was constantly enhanced. While it could not overcome the Level 70 Devourer, it was not too much lower and it was thus possible for him to exchange blows with it.

His body lightly twisted, and the Devil Flame Sword in his hands slashed towards the Level 70 Devourer.

The Devourer responded by extending a leg to tap the ground, forcefully altering its course midair, and dodged the slash of Yue Zhong, at the same time, it unleashed a forceful kick towards Yue Zhong's body.

"What a fearsome Devourer." Yue Zhong felt as though he was struck by some immense force, his body sent flying back a few metres. His chest seemed to cave in a little, as he spat out a mouthful of blood, his heart thoroughly shocked at the strength.

Just as the Devourer had just kicked Yue Zhong away, from the midst of the horde, 3 sharp spikes suddenly shot towards the Devourer.

The Devourer turned to face the 3 sharp bone spikes, its claws slashing out, leaving a trail of shadows behind, as it forcefully chopped the incoming bone spikes off.

Chapter 450: Tank Destroyed!

The Devourer had just struck the 3 bone spikes away, when an unexpected Devil Flame Spear came whistling in from the back, and instantly pierced its head, causing it to explode into foul, smoking chunks!

"Congratulations on achieving Level 62, you have gained 2 attribute points to be allocated."

The moment Yue Zhong killed the Level 70 Devourer, a huge orb of experience had floated into his body, instantly pushing him to reach another level.

Yue Zhong swiftly allocated the points to his Agility, before a huge sense of crisis welled up in him, and he instantly shot backwards in retreat.

Only to discover, that within the horde of zombies, a number of Level 70 Devourers were galloping towards his direction.

These Level 70 Devourers, with the protection of the ordinary zombies, possessed the power to destroy a tank. While they had no way of actually demolishing the entire armor of the tank, they could tear apart the roof of the tanks, and assault the soldiers within.

Seeing so many suddenly leaping out, all the tank soldiers were gripped by fear. These freaks could actually threaten the soldiers within the safety of the tanks, and it left them with little sense of security. It must be known that tanks were widely assumed to be invincible on the battlefield, even without their cannons, no zombies could withstand the crushing of the tanks.

The 23 IFVs following behind the tanks opened fire, and their 25mm machine guns fired rapidly into the horde, aiming for those Level 70 Devourers.

Under the rain of bullets, a large number of the zombies who

moved to intercept, were instantly ripped to shreds. Many of the Level 70 Devourers were also felled by the sudden rapid fire.

However, a terrifying scene presented itself. Those Level 70 Devourers that were struck down by the 25mm machine guns instantly got up after they fell, and continued to charge towards their direction. It was obvious that the machine guns had little to no effect on these monsters.

"Fire the cannons! Fire the cannons!!"

The remaining 19 tanks swivelled their cannons towards the Devourers and opened fire. One of the Devourer was hit by one particular round, and it was blasted into pieces.

However, the movement speed of those Devourers were truly too fast, as after just taking down 2 of the Devourers, the rest had already reached this side.

In an instant, 20 of these Level 70 Devourers had crossed the defensive barrier, and were charging at the tanks.

As long as the remaining 19 tanks were destroyed, then the armored division of Yue Zhong would be crippled by half.

Yue Zhong saw the incoming 20 Devourers and his eyes widened as he shouted: "Shit! Ying Kai Shan, come and assist me!"

Ying Kai Shan had followed Yue Zhong through the life-and-death battle at the small town, and his enhancement level had reached Level 49, coupled with his combat experience, he proved a mighty fighting force.

Hearing Yue Zhong's command, Ying Kai Shan instantly rushed over, eyeing those 20 Devourers in the distance, and gave orders to his subordinates: "Everyone is to use the [Gravity Manipulation]!! Those who can use the [Airlock] and other control skills utilize them as well!"

Among those experts led by Ying Kai Shan, many of them had control abilities and they immediately casted them on those

incoming Devourers.

A flurry of control-type abilities were launched at the 20 Devourers.

Under the combined efforts of those experts, the speed of the 20 Devourers that could match a Type 2 Lightning began to slow.

Yue Zhong sucked in a breath, as he wielded his Devil Flame Sword, and rushed towards the 20 Level 70 Devourers.

In a flash, Yue Zhong appeared beside a tank, his 4m-long Devil Flame Sword swinging towards a Devourer that had just leapt onto the tank. At the same time, he activated the [Gravity Manipulation] and a huge force weighed down on the Devourer.

The Devourer was already under twice the gravity due to the supporting troops, when adding on Yue Zhong's ability, it had to support itself under thrice the pressure. Its speed was slowed down considerably, and was not as threatening as it was before. Yue Zhong's swing directly sliced it in half, causing black blood to splatter and cover the outer covering of the tank.

If it was just Yue Zhong himself, taking down this single Devourer would have required him to expend all his energy, but with the support of Ying Kai Shan and his subordinates, he managed to easily take it down.

Yue Zhong had just taken down that Devourer, when 6 others immediately pounced at him.

These Devourers had no eyes, but they had evolved an acute sense of smell and hearing, and possessed an incredible sense of danger perception. They could feel that this human in front of them was a threat to them, and hence, made their way towards him.

Right as Yue Zhong was about to be surrounded by those 6 Devourers, Ying Kai Shan waved his hand, and sharp ice picks appeared in mid-air and bombarded the 6 Level 70 Devourers.

The Devourers did not dodge nor evade, and as the ice picks landed on their bodies, they shattered, evidently not enough to pierce the hide that could withstand even the damage from a 25mm round.

Ying Kai Shan's pupils narrowed, as he continued to activate his skill, and each time the ice picks shattered on the bodies of those Devourers, they added to their body weight.

All of a sudden, a sharp bone spike exploded out from one side, shooting towards the 6 Devourers.

Facing those sharp bone spikes, the Devourers just slashed their claws, and caused the bone spikes to break off.

Seizing his chance, Yue Zhong's body flashed, and appeared behind one of the Devourers, activating his [Gravity Manipulation] and then directly using his Devil Flame Sword to slash downwards, slicing its body in two.

After quickly disposing of that Devourer, his left hand lit up, and a Devil Flame Spear was conjured, before he flung it towards another Devourer head, causing it to explode into flaming chunks.

At almost the same time, a shadow appeared from nowhere, breaking the sound barrier, and chomped down on the head of one of the Devourers, as it burst in its jaws. It was precisely the Type 3 Lightning.

Lightning relied on its incredible speed to pounce about the battlefield, assaulting the Devourers that caused even Yue Zhong to feel at a loss. Multiple bodies fell lifelessly with their heads removed.

From afar, Ying Kai Shan watched this and shuddered involuntarily: "So terrifying!"

With Lightning's mach-1 speed, in only a single exchange, Ying Kai Shan would be immediately killed.

Within Guilin City, other than those Agility-type Evolvers, if the

other Evolvers did not make any ample preparations, they would also likely be finished off by Lightning easily.

In a short matter of 10 seconds, the remaining 14 Devourers which were under the effects of the controlling skills were also killed swiftly by Lightning.

With the deaths of the 14 Devourers, the rest of the horde had no way of blocking the metal behemoths that could crush their numbers.

A large number of the ordinary zombies were then turned into meat paste under the continued assault of the remaining 19 tanks and the rest of the armored division.

With the armored division pushing forth, the huge sea of zombies was forced back about 15 km.

After ensuring that the huge horde had been pushed back, the armored division quickly retreated back towards the centre of Guilin City.

After a rough day, the armored division had to be refueled, and their ammo replenished. Even the operators within required rest.

At the same time, the troops under Ying Kai Shan had exhausted themselves after an entire day of battle, and desperately needed rest.

The 3 million-strong zombie horde was not a small number, and Yue Zhong did not think that he would be able to finish this in a day as well. He had made use of the tanks in the evening to buy time for his troops to rest as well. After all, fighting in the night was disadvantageous to the humans.

A distance of 15 km was going to take at least a few hours for the ordinary zombies, as based on their walking speed, they would cover about 1km or so every hour. However, that was the main bulk of the force, if there were no ordinary zombies that got in the way, Yue Zhong would have slaughtered any scattered pockets of

zombies easily.

As night fell, piping hot dinner was served to the front lines. The dinner consisted of huge chunks of Type 2 Mutant Beast meat as well as rice. There were various other assorted dishes brought out by the appreciative vendors from Guilin City as well.

Everyone knew how important this battle was, the moment the troops lost, everyone would stand to lose everything, and the newly established order and security would collapse again.

Many people had experienced the dark times where society lacked stability and control, and inner human depravity was rampant. For the sake of a small meal, lives could be lost. To protect their current paradise now, everyone was activated, and every youth would help to fortify the city, while the women and kids helped to deliver food to the soldiers. The good thing about being in battle was that the soldiers had no need to eat from cans.

Zheng Ming He brought a bunch of documents as he came to report to Yue Zhong: "Today's battle, we lost 327 men, expended 900,000 rounds of bullets, and 600 artillery rounds. Our current supplies, including the refilled bullets, only number around 1.3 million rounds, and there are about 500 rounds for the 122mm rocket launchers."

Hearing the report, Yue Zhong's face turned downcast, he had expended all his energy, and deployed multiple trump cards, and managed to kill over 700,000 zombies. However, his ammunition consumption was too high.

Even if the remaining 1.3 million rounds were to take down a zombie each, they could at most kill another 1.3 million zombies. However, that was just impossible.

Logistics and supplies were the lifeline of a modern military. With enough ammunition, a few Red Arrows could easily unleash hell upon those zombies.

The main contributing factor for the elimination of 700,000 zombies were the cannons and the armored division. The expenditure of the 900,000 rounds would have at most killed 60,000 zombies.

Yue Zhong waved his hands to signal for Zheng Ming He to be dismissed, as he looked to the distance and frowned, thinking silently: "I guess it's up to the trap."

"Wait a minute!" All of a sudden, Yue Zhong had some sort of inspiration, as though he caught a thought, but that sudden flash of insight left him, and he frowned as he tried to focus.

It was just that no matter how much Yue Zhong racked his brains, the insight had disappeared, and it caused him to be vexed.

"Big Brother, time to eat!" At this time, Mu Xiang Ling came skipping into the room and pulled his hands towards the dining table.

"En!" Yue Zhong was dragged to the table, and he began to stuff the Type 3 Mutant Beast meat into his mouth.

After undergoing skilled preparations by chefs, the meat melted in Yue Zhong's mouth, turning into warm sources of energy that replenished his Stamina and Spirit. It was truly a powerful nourishment.

Ning Yu Xin looked at Yue Zhong who was absent-minded, and asked: "What's the matter?"

"It must be problems arising from hunting the zombies!" Mu Xiang Ling eyed Yue Zhong and said: "Big Brother, those zombies are controlled by the Z-Types right? Isn't it easier to just dispose of the Z-Types then?"

Yue Zhong shook his head when he heard that: "It's not that simple!! The zombie horde is too vast, if you were to look out, they're all zombies. Since those Z-Types possess intelligence, how would it be easy to pinpoint their location? Furthermore, they had

always liked to stay in safe and secure places."

"Wait!! A safe place?" Yue Zhong suddenly recalled his inspiration as he spoke up to this point. He became excited and hugged Mu Xiang Ling, kissing her cheeks: "Thank you!! Little Xiang Ling!! Haha!!"

Mu Xiang Ling was caught off-guard, and after she was kissed on the cheeks, she began to struggle, with her face flushed red and using only a small voice to protest: "Lolicon!! Pervert, release me!! If you don't, I'm going to scream!!"

"Haha!!" Yue Zhong roared with laughter, his mood becoming better as he let Mu Xiang Ling down.

"Leader!! The zombies have launched a night assault!!" Just as Yue Zhong released Mu Xiang Ling, an intelligence officer came running and reporting in an urgent manner.

"What?! I'm going!" Yue Zhong's face fell, and immediately grabbed a piece of Type 3 Mutant beast meat and shoved it into his mouth before rushing off.

Ning Yu Xin and Xin Jia Rou exchanged looks, before hurriedly finishing the meat on their plates and followed suit.

Yue Zhong came to the frontlines, only to discover under the cover of the night, 10,000 S2s were charging towards Yue Zhong's location like spectres.

Since the huge zombie horde had been chased back for dozens of kilometres, the ordinary zombies would not be that fast with their speed. It was only possible for the evolved types to reach the defenses so quickly.

Chapter 451: Defeating the Zombie Horde!

Yue Zhong eyed the swift S2s and his brows furrowed: "Damn it! Those Z-Types have learned how to launch a night assault?!"

Battling at night was the toughest for humans. In the night, their vision was limited and could not exhibit 100% of their combat prowess.

The 10,000 S2s attacking at night was even more terrifying than 200,000 ordinary zombies. The moment the S2s got close, it would be devastating for the normal soldiers. Furthermore, Yue Zhong was unwilling to utilize the little heavy artillery he had against those S2s.

Yue Zhong eyed those S2s and mulled for a moment, before he unleashed a howl towards the skies.

Hearing that howl, Lightning and its brothers, which were enjoying munching on the zombie corpses, released a howl in reply, and charged out from the jungle, pouncing towards the S2s.

During the battle in the day, of the 400 ordinary Mutant Leopard Cats that Lightning led, 100 had perished at the hands of the zombies, as even the L2s and S2s had the capabilities to hurt the ordinary Mutant Leopard Cats.

"Release the flare!! Relay my order! Get Wang He and his troops to defend the post!" Yue Zhong shouted orders to an officer beside him, before he brought White Bones along with him and charged towards the horde of S2s.

By now, Yue Zhong's strength was tyrannical, any S2 that got near him would be instantly sliced apart.

White Bones ran alongside Yue Zhong, and released 10 sharp bone blades from its body, that seemed to possess lives of their own as they pierced the heads of the S2s without stop. The speed at which White Bones was wiping out the S2s was even faster than

Yue Zhong.

On the other side, Lightning led its brothers and unleashed carnage upon those S2s.

However, the numbers of the S2s were truly too many, and just the efforts of Yue Zhong, White Bones and the Mutant Beast horde led by Lightning was not enough to truly withstand the assault.

Many of the S2s leapt past the defensive line of Yue Zhong and his party, making their way towards the humans defence post.

Right at this time, all around the human encampment, the multiple traps laid displayed their effectiveness.

One S2 was in the middle of a frenzied charge when it was caught in the razor wire perimeter, and its legs were sliced off cleanly.

Another S2 was also charging madly when an icy platform appeared in front of it, causing it to lose balance and fall, while the 10 other S2s behind it got entangled and fell as well.

Outside the defence post, there were many sharp steel beams facing outwards. Any evolved zombies that were unfortunate enough to ram into the defence would be impaled on those sharp stakes.

As for the defence post itself, a thousand Enhancers leapt out, and they wielded different types of weapons as they charged at the S2s.

Hampered by the various traps, the S2s had no way of displaying their full strength, and as they keep getting caught and falling, their threat level fell. The humans charged forwards and slaughtered those incapacitated S2s.

Ice picks!! Fireballs! Air blades!! Blade beams! Blade Qi!! Ground spikes!! Sniper bullets! Vine Manipulation!! Ground Manipulation!! Gravity Manipulation! All sorts of techniques and skills were repeatedly cast on the S2s, constantly grinding them down.

The intense battle continued for an entire half hour, and the human army lost 24 of their Enhancers before they finally wiped out the 10,000-strong horde of S2s. Of which, White Bones alone slaughtered 500 S2s, Yue Zhong himself killed 300, and had reached Level 63. After disposing of the S2 army, many of the Enhancers just fell asleep at the frontlines, exhausted beyond measure.

Yue Zhong left White Bones to defend the frontlines, he himself also laid on an army cot at the frontlines and fell into deep slumber.

At noon the next day, the skies were still snowing, and the huge zombie horde finally appeared in front of Guilin City.

The sea of zombies had managed to close the distance that was created the day before by the armored division, Mutant Beast horde and efforts of the experts.

"Move out!!" Yue Zhong sat in an assault helicopter and gave the command to the pilot.

The pilot nodded in response, and flew the helicopter towards the skies.

Yue Zhong felt his body trembling together with the vibrating of the helicopter, and as it flew higher, the scene on the ground gradually became smaller.

The assault helicopter flew above the horde and Yue Zhong looked down, only to see a vast gathering of zombies, even after clearing over 700,000 thousand of them yesterday.

Other than this assault helicopter carrying Yue Zhong, there were 13 others and these were all the assault helicopters belonging to Guilin City.

They were the only aerial forms of attack that Yue Zhong possessed, one of his trump cards.

The huge horde kept shuffling forward, and soon, an intense

battle broke out at the frontlines between the troops and zombies.

With the resistance of the troops, as well as the constant advance of the horde, the scene soon became a mess.

"Execute the plan!" Yue Zhong surveyed the horde below before ordering through the walkie-talkie.

"Fire your cannons at the given location!!" In the command centre, Zhang Xue Wang immediately relayed the order.

When the command reached the artillery, a number of the self-propelled rocket launchers began firing multiple fearsome rounds into the skies.

In an instant, the round landed right at the back of the horde, causing devastation.

When those rounds exploded on impact, huge patches of zombies were instantly blasted into pieces.

After a volley of heavy fire, those zombies, which would not budge even under fire, began to experience changes.

The entire body of corpses seemed to stop for a moment, before they started to split into various groups of smaller zombie hordes. The larger ones consisted of a few tens of thousands while the smaller ones numbered in the thousands, as they made their way to different directions.

"The commander has been taken out!!" Yue Zhong eyed the collapsing structure of the horde and his heart was overcome with elation.

It was as Yue Zhong had guessed, the Z2 commanding the entire horde had been blanketed by the volleys of artillery fire, and was blasted into smithereens. Hence, the horde had fallen apart.

Yue Zhong had thought back to his previous encounters with the Z-Types and knew they were cowardly existences, and had liked to hide at the back of the hordes. Hence, he had decided to use the

cannons to force the Z-Types out, before he would chase them down and slaughter them personally. He never thought that his luck would be good, and that the single volley of fire had instantly caused the commander to perish, saving him the trouble.

Yue Zhong pulled out the walkie-talkie and gave an urgent order: "Heed my command! The 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 4th, 5th and 6th Battalions are to immediately launch an assault on the enemy!!"

After losing their commander, the sea of zombies became like scattered sand.

Under Yue Zhong's orders, the armored division that had been resting the entire day immediately charged out, making their way for the zombie horde and crushing them.

The other 5 battalions also rushed out to engage the zombies in combat.

By now, the zombie horde had lost all signs of advancing, and were mostly turning around to escape from being crushed by the armored division. Those unfortunate to be caught in the path would be turned into meat paste, while Wang He's battalion following behind the armored division also hunted down any scattered zombies.

In the skies, Yue Zhong watched the collapsing order of the horde and heaved a sigh of relief. Based on his current force, wiping out the entire horde would be incredibly tough. Having this chance now was already a blessing in disguise.

In time, there would be another Z2 that evolved to take command of this zombie horde, and the pity was that, even though Yue Zhong knew that it was a fact bound to happen, he had no means of wiping the horde out entirely.

"Set me down!" Yue Zhong commanded the pilot.

"Yes! Leader!" The pilot then navigated downwards to hover about 15m from the ground.

"You guys head back first!"

Yue Zhong then leapt out the assault helicopter into the midst of the zombie horde, and let out a howl.

Hearing the howl, Lightning led its little brothers out from the forest, and pounced for the zombie hordes, massacring the zombies in an endless slaughter.

If the 2-million strong zombie horde was to counter attack now, it would be enough to devastate Yue Zhong's troops. However, since the Z-Types were occupied with self-preservation, and had led their own smaller teams to escape in other directions, before the next Z2 could evolve to take control of the other Z-Types, none of them were willing to engage Yue Zhong nor his troops.

After relentlessly giving chase and slaughtering over 600,000 zombies, Yue Zhong gave the command to retreat. It was not that he didn't want to wipe them out, but his troops had exhausted themselves after an entire day of intense battle as well. Furthermore, it was still in the midst of winter, pushing them too much would be detrimental.

In Guilin City, there was bustling activity everywhere, however, compared to the boom of economic activity, everywhere, the expressions of people were clouded. The impending assault of the 3 million strong horde was on everyone's minds, and Guilin City only had a 100,000-strong army. They were extremely worried about the aftermath.

"I wonder what the situation at the front line is like now?" A youth sat inside a teahouse, his face full of worry as he muttered slowly.

Another youth beside him had the same expression as he lamented: "If only Regiment Commander Du was still here! If he was, our Guilin City would definitely be safe and secure."

One youth cursed out in anger: "It's all because of Yue Zhong!! If

he wasn't here!! Regiment Commander Du would not have died!! If he didn't die, those zombies wouldn't be worth shit! It's all because of that Yue Zhong!!"

Chapter 452: Chen Yao Seeks Help!

The first youth who sighed was startled and he replied: "Zhang Yan! Are you crazy? You dare to curse that person! If someone heard you, you'll be in trouble!"

Zhang Yan smirked coldly: "So what? That tyrant, don't tell me he wants to capture me? I, Zhang Yan, am right here, let him come and execute me then."

The middle aged man looked at Zhang Yan and sighed, but he did not say anything. This Zhang Yan was the son of a triad leader, and his temperament was vastly different from his father. Zhang Yan was extremely direct, and righteous, however, when his father was locked up and sentenced to the Scum Battalion, Zhang Yan harbored hatred against Yue Zhong.

Right at this time, a soldier riding a motorcycle came roaring through town as he announced at the top of his voice: "Victory!! Leader Yue Zhong had brought the troops to vanquish the zombie horde! We have won!!"

"Long live Yue Zhong!!"

"That's great news!!"

"Long live Yue Zhong!!"

The moment the people heard the news, the entire city went into a celebratory mood, and countless survivors sang praises of Yue Zhong, and many even shed tears of joy.

With this successful victory, it meant that he had protected the entire Guilin City, all 800,000+ lives and their property.

Within the city, there were many people who had established some form of livelihood already. Had Yue Zhong been defeated, these businessmen would have to flee, and abandon their hard work in Guilin City. Now that Yue Zhong had won, they could continue living in stability and flourish.

Amidst the celebrations, a middle-aged man walked over to Zhang Yan and spoke coldly: "I'm sorry, but mister, please leave! You are not welcome here!"

Zhang Yan's face fell, and immediately pulled out a bunch of ration tickets and declared: "How are you running your business? I have tickets!"

"I'm the boss! If I say I don't want your business, I don't want it! Please leave!" The middle-aged man stared coldly at Zhang Yan, before continuing: "Mister! If you can run your mouth off, why don't you throw your weight at the frontlines? You only know how to speak behind others' backs, if you have the capabilities, go to the frontlines and kill some zombies. While Yue Zhong may be lacking as a leader, he has always been on the frontlines fighting, and never retreated before anybody else. All you people only know how to criticize and malign him, what have you done yourself? Seeing your behaviour disgusts me, please do not appear in my shop ever again."

Zhang Yan grew red from the rebuke as he retorted: "I speak however I want to! That's my right!"

The boss eyed Zhang Yan coldly and pointed to the door: "Get the hell out! That's also my right as the owner!"

"Good! Good!" Zhang Yan was so flushed red from anger, and before he could say anymore, he was pulled away by the middle-aged man by his side.

"Zhang Yan! Save it!!" After which, the middle-aged man pulled Zhang Yan as they headed out.

The boss of the teahouse looked at the leaving figures of Zhang Yan and his companion and spat: "Peh!! What gives? Can't even do anything of your own! Trash that only knows how to plot behind others! Irksome!"

His words travelled to Zhang Yan's ears, causing him to clench

his fists tightly, and he gritted his teeth.

The middle-aged man looked at Zhang Yan's vexed expression and said: "Zhang Yan, you're not a kid anymore! You need to grow up!! After this battle, Yue Zhong has consolidated his footing here in Guilin City. Don't go starting trouble anymore, if he really wants to snuff you out, it would be like killing an ant to him!"

Zhang Yan spoke with a resolute voice: "Uncle Lei!! The heavens have eyes, I don't believe that Guilin City has no place that is reasonable anymore. That Yue Zhong just drags people into the Scum Battalion for no reason as cannon fodder, such behaviour is unlawful and inhumane! I just won't believe that he can pull the wool over everyone's eyes, there has to be someone who hasn't lost their mind in Guilin City yet."

Zhang Yan's father was a triad member, however, Zhang Yan had received an exemplary modern education, and was dissatisfied with his dad's way of doing things. However, with his dad's protection, he had been living like a protected flower that believed in an idealistic world where logic and righteousness prevailed.

The middle-aged man, Lei Yi, looked at Zhang Lei, sighing lightly and did not say anything else.

In this battle, Yue Zhong had stopped the impending invasion of 3 million zombies, and had won the hearts of the people. Most of the survivors in Guilin City had already acknowledged and accepted his leadership. The soldiers that had fought at his shoulders had also accepted his command, seeing that he had been placing himself at the forefront of the battle, and leading them to victory. Since his position had been fortified, no small-time crooks could seek to upend his rule any longer.

As for Yue Zhong, he had returned to his own villa, and was inspecting his loot.

After killing so many high-level zombies on the field, his returns had been decent. He opened up 2 magic gems that could upgrade

weapons, as well as other treasures.

"Level 4 Treasure: 8-Sided sword! A type of Han (Chinese) Sword, its body is wide, and it has 8 sides that were grinded. It is extremely compatible with Sword Qi, and it is incredibly sharp."

"Level 4 Treasure: Green Ghost Mask! Upon equipping, Endurance +10, Spirit +7."

"Level 3 Skill: Stealth, can silence breathing, greatly weakens perception of user. However, no movements otherwise form is revealed. Activating the skill expends 10 Stamina and 20 Spirit."

"Level 3 Skill: Firestorm, calls down a fiery disaster, burning any creature without discrimination within a 20X20m radius. Expends 40 Spirit. No restriction of class, but each individual can only cast it once in 24 hours."

"Level 3 Skill: Corpse Ghost Transformation! Upon casting this skill, user becomes like a corpse ghost, gaining huge increases in the 6 attributes, and resistant to viral infections. When transformed, user is more susceptible to light-based attacks."

The rest of the skill books and equipment that were dropped were things that Yue Zhong had already owned.

Yue Zhong looked over these skills and equipment once over, before he gave the 8-Sided Sword and Stealth skill to Mu Xiang Ling.

With the [Stealth] ability, Mu Xiang Ling's ability to survive on the battlefield would increase a whole lot more, and with the sharp 8-Sided Sword, she could kill Mutant Beasts easily.

After another day, the snowstorm came to a gradual stop, and Yue Zhong brought Duan Zi Ke and the rest of the ex-members of the Greater China Alliance over, joining his ranks. His overall fighting strength increased yet again, with Duan Zi Ke and his subordinates forming the 10th Battalion.

=====

"Yue Zhong!! Save me!!"

10 days after stopping the invasion, Yue Zhong had been immersed in training, when he suddenly received Chen Yao's transmitted call for help. Within the villa, he clutched the report in his hands tightly, his face looking unsightly.

From the report that Chen Yao transmitted, there were details of what happened after Yue Zhong left.

Yue Zhong had intended to lure the attention of Wuyan Hong's troops, and thus, attacked a few towns under his control, and absorbed a small team from the Vietnamese Freemasons.

However, as Wuyan Hong chased him down, Yue Zhong was forced to move towards the northeast, escaping into Guangxi's region, and he slowly fought and gained power, before finally obtaining Guilin City.

As for Chen Yao, her journey had not been as smooth, and although she had also brought her troops to leave in a different direction to evade Wuyan Hong's troops, a number of the Vietnamese survivors within her control managed to escape, seeking refuge with Wuyan Hong, and giving him the information of Chen Yao's whereabouts.

Wuyan Hong had immediately deployed some troops to surround Chen Yao and her troops, and she was simply not a match against Wuyan Hong, and was forced to leave the town. She was now on the run and was in the forests.

If it wasn't for Vietnam's weather that had turned strange as well, and they were blanketed by snow, Chen Yao and her troops might already be wiped out by Wuyan Hong.

Chen Yao's establishment had grown to a size of 4,000 survivors, with 500 warriors. However, as the events unfolded, she was left with a 100 warriors and only 800 survivors. Everyday, there would be casualties from the cold weather.

Chen Yao had risked it all to obtain a broadcast station to relay the distress signal to Yue Zhong.

If the Chinese wanted to expand in foreign land, it was incredibly difficult. Each and every place had their reservations, the fact that Yue Zhong had expanded so fast in Guang Xi was because he had the identity of a Chinese, which brought him numerous advantages.

At that time, when Guilin City's Freemasons was under the control of foreign power, they could not simply just push the Chinese out and take over the reins of leadership as well.

A cold look flashed past in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he spoke: "Seems like I need to make a trip... Wuyan Hong! This time around, it'll be your death!"

When Yue Zhong made the decision, he immediately assigned Ming Jia Jia, Wei Ning Guo and a number of his trusted aides to Guilin City, installing them in various key positions.

After he had settled the necessary preparations, his control over Guilin City rose another level.

By now, Guilin City had replaced Long Teng District and Tian Xin District as the most important base of operations for Yue Zhong in the Guang Xi region, as there were nearly 900,000 survivors here. Where there were people, there was a place of precious resources. It would become Yue Zhong's strongest fort in the future as well. Therefore, Yue Zhong was not willing to allow any mishaps to happen here.

Yue Zhong arranged for countless measures to be in place to cement his control and leadership, before arranging for 500 Enhancers above Level 30 to move out, forming an elite battalion dressed in the Nano Combat Suit, as they made their way towards Vietnam.

The mini army made their way by backtracking Yue Zhong's

path, entering Vietnam from Tian Xin District. By doing it that way, there was less problems to worry about, and it was relatively safer.

Arriving at Tian Xin District, Yue Zhong called for the elite battalion to rest and wait for orders, while he brought 20 experts and entered Vietnam.

He had no way of ascertaining Chen Yao's location, and in the current weather, even if everyone was an expert, expecting them to move about with a huge area to cover, and the pressure of an enemy would weigh down on them.

Chapter 453: Li Shi Min!

Out on the snow-covered fields, Yue Zhong and his party sat in a fleet led by a hummer, followed by a fuel truck, disguising as a survivor party as they travelled on the roads.

Mu Xiang Ling sat in the hummer, looking out at the fields and hills covered with snow as she complained: "So this is Vietnam! It's all snow. So boring!!"

Ming Jia Jia shot Mu Xiang Ling a look with undisguised envy as she spoke coldly: "We're here on a mission! Not to play! If you wanted to play, you should have stayed back at home!"

Ming Jia Jia was jealous of Mu Xiang Ling's looks. While she was pretty in her own right, she could not help but admit that Mu Xiang Ling was definitely many times better looking. When she thought of Mu Xiang Ling vying with her for Yue Zhong's attention, she could not contain her anger.

Mu Xiang Ling shot back a look at Ming Jia Jia, and it seemed as though there were fireworks that emitted in their exchange of gazes.

Mu Xiang Ling then chuckled, before she leapt into Yue Zhong's arms, looking pitiful, and shook his arms, before pleading like an injured rabbit: "Big Brother!! She's bullying me!! Jia Jia is bullying me!"

"Get out of there!!" Ming Jia Jia became infuriated when she witnessed that, and she grabbed Mu Xiang Ling's arms in rage and pulled her out from Yue Zhong's arms. When she was around, that was her position! It definitely could not belong to anyone else!

Although Ming Jia Jia had matured earlier than most, and possessed the experience of commanding an entire District, she was still a young girl after all, and was likewise emotional. She was territorial and would attack any invaders of her territory.

"I'm not moving!!" Mu Xiang Ling grabbed onto Yue Zhong tightly like a koala bear and stuck her tongue out at Ming Jia Jia.

"That's enough!" Yue Zhong grabbed the both of them, and sat them on either of his legs.

Both lolis glared at each other, their eyes shooting sparks.

Right at this moment, a bright light shot out, landing in front of the vehicle fleet, causing an explosion and blowing a hole in the middle of the snow-covered ground. A 1.7m-tall burly man stepped out from afar, his hands wielding a bronze bow.

That man stared at Yue Zhong's vehicle fleet, his eyes flashing with a fierce wolf-like gaze. At the same time, he pulled out a white bone arrow, nocking it with the bow, aiming at Yue Zhong's fleet: "Stop!! The arrow earlier was a warning!! This next one, I'll not show mercy!"

The man wielding the bronze bow was speaking in Vietnamese, and Ming Jia Jia proceeded to translate for Yue Zhong.

"Stop the vehicles!" Yue Zhong gave the order, before he got out of the hummer.

The blow from the bow-wielding man could instantly destroy the hummer, that was why Yue Zhong gave the order to get out of the vehicles.

24 experts groomed by Yue Zhong stepped out of their vehicles, their levels above 40, every single one of them wielding a weapon of sorts, including sniper rifles, rocket launchers, grenade launchers, 12.7mm heavy machine guns, etc, as they all aimed at the archer.

Facing such fearsome modern weapons of war, even a Type 2 Mutant Beast would be turned into mush if it came charging.

Seeing this, the bow-wielding man's expression turned frigid, as a bitter expression broke out, a chill running down his spine. He had thought that the passengers were just normal people. He had never

expected them to be experts, furthermore, he could sense dangerous gazes, and he got the feeling that the moment he made a wrong move, he would be immediately executed. He was strong, but he could not possibly contend against 24 experts who all seemed to be more dangerous than him.

Yue Zhong eyed the poor sod and coldly barked out: "Throw down your bow! Surrender unconditionally! Otherwise, today will be the day you die!"

When the man heard Yue Zhong's Chinese, his eyes flashed with a strange glint, as he threw his bronze bow on the floor, and used fluent Chinese to speak passionately: "You're Chinese!! Me too, comrade, my name is Li Shi Min. We're countrymen, so please, don't shoot. I'm surrendering."

Facing such terrifying weapons, Li Shi Min immediately became obedient. He could fight well, but the moment he was hit by a blast from any of those weapons, he would be sent to heaven.

"Li Shi Min?" When Yue Zhong heard this name, he involuntarily revealed a bewildered expression. This was the personal name of the Tang Dynasty's Emperor Taizong, and someone in modern times had actually dared to use his name. He felt it truly interesting.

Li Shi Min chuckled bitterly: "This is the name of the Emperor Taizong. That year when my dad named me, he wanted me to have an awe-inspiring name, hence this."

To be given such an infamous name, Li Shi Min had been the subject of ridicule during his primary and secondary school days.

Yue Zhong eyed Li Shi Min and asked curiously: "I'm Yue Zhong! Li Shi Min, your strength is decent, why have you taken up robbing to get by?"

That single arrow from Li Shi Min that could blast an armored vehicle showed that he did possess the strength. Such an Enhancer

had no need to worry about food. They could easily pass through villages with zombies to search for food and rations, or they could hunt in forests with their capabilities.

There were many strong individuals wandering about in this apocalyptic world. Yue Zhong had heard that within Guilin City, there were a few geniuses who had been holed up in the mountain range hunting Mutant Beasts day in and day out.

Li Shi Min turned silent as he brooded.

Yue Zhong eyed Li Shi Min and spoke out indifferently: "Forget it! If you don't want to say it, I won't force you! Since we're countrymen, I'll spare you! Come with me! After killing 100 enemies, I'll grant you your freedom."

Since Li Shi Min had jumped out in a bid to rob him, Yue Zhong could not release him so easily, however, he didn't want to force Li Shi Min to subjugate entirely, hence he gave him a way to regain his freedom. Like this, for his own freedom, Li Shi Min would become a sword for Yue Zhong.

Li Shi Min's face immediately fell as he spoke slowly: "Brother Yue! Can we discuss this? If you release me now, I'll definitely repay you in the future!"

Bai Xiao Sheng, standing beside Yue Zhong, was losing his patience, and he flashed forward like a spectre, placing a Dark Magic Blade at Li Shi Min's neck, threatening him: "Shit! You're spouting too much bullshit!! Don't waste our time!! If you don't agree, I'll chop your head off!"

Bai Xiao Sheng had originally intended to enjoy himself with the beautiful ladies in Guilin City, and lead a relaxing lifestyle. However, he was almost immediately deployed out with Yue Zhong, and had felt stifled with rage. Since he could not direct this anger at Yue Zhong, he could only unleash it against enemies. Bai Xiao Sheng was truly powerful, and he wasn't ambitious, seeking only to lead a promiscuous lifestyle with beauties.

"So fast!!" When Li Shi Min felt that cold metal on his neck, he was startled. Based on Bai Xiao Sheng's speed, the moment he entered a radius of 20m, Li Shi Min wouldn't be a match for him.

Li Shi Min chuckled bitterly: "Brother Yue, I promise you. But I really do have something I need to discuss with you."

Li Shi Min could feel the overpowering killing intent from Bai Xiao Sheng, and knew that the moment he spoke out of line, he would lose his head. In such a society where human rights and laws were out of the window, and deaths were aplenty, not to mention in the wild, he had to be careful.

Yue Zhong was not unreasonable after all, and he said: "Speak!"

Li Shi Min then began to narrate his story.

Li Shi Min had been a Year 4 university student, and had come to Vietnam for a holiday with his classmates during their term break. However, the apocalypse suddenly happened, and numerous people became zombies. Li Shi Min had been training regularly prior to the apocalypse, and his body constitution was exemplary. When he was forced to a corner, he used the wooden stick he gained from the system to kill his way out, becoming an Enhancer, and saving many people.

After that, he had been protecting this group of people as they sought to survive in this new world. If it was just him alone, with his strength, he definitely could live freely. However, for the sake of the people under his protection, he could only rush about everywhere, hunting and scavenging like mad to search for rations.

This place was within the territory of Wuyan Hong's influence and reach, and since Li Shi Min was Chinese, he was also the target of the Vietnamese. Many experts had tried to rout him to dispose of him. There were instances where Li Shi Min had really close shaves with death, but he managed to escape by a hair's breadth each time.

This time, Li Shi Min had stepped forwards to target Yue Zhong and his troops because he had not been able to find any rations nearby, and did not dare sneak into Wuyan Hong's territory guarded by his men to steal. Hence, he had no choice.

Yue Zhong eyed Li Shi Min and sighed, before speaking slowly: "Let's go!! Take me to them!"

"Yes!!" Li Shi Min did not dare disobey with a weapon at his neck, and could only pray in his heart that Yue Zhong was a decent person.

Led by Li Shi Min, the entire group soon came to a mountain range sealed by snow, and there was a huge cavern in the mountain that was covered by a layer of grass, blending in with the mountain. Without anyone pointing it out, nobody would be able to find this place easily.

"Brother Li, you're back!!" Li Shi Min had just pulled the cover open, when a little girl, covered in a few layers of Mutant Beast hide, came running up to welcome him.

"Who are these people?" The cute little girl saw Yue Zhong's group and was frightened, her eyes flashing with a wary look.

At this moment, 10 males and 15 youthful females came walking out from the deeper parts of the cave.

One of the males was surrounded by 5 others, he had good looks, and his body was more muscular than the rest, as he began asking Li Shi Min loudly: "Li Shi Min you're back! Did you find anything to eat?"

Li Shi Min frowned and replied: "No!"

The handsome and muscular male looked at Li Shi Min, before looking at Yue Zhong's group in wariness and asked: "No?! Then why the hell are you back? Who are these people?"

Yue Zhong glanced at the handsome yet arrogant man and frowned as he asked Li Shi Min: "Who's this? Why is he so

arrogant?"

Li Shi Min chuckled bitterly: "He's the president of the student union in our University, Luo Wen Shu. His father is the mayor of Qing Yang City. He's a pretty famous figure in our school."

Yue Zhong continued asking: "Did he ever search for food?"

Li Shi Min slowly replied: "No!! Finding food has always been my job."

"How do you guys distribute the food?"

"Equally!! The ladies get a portion more."

Yue Zhong stared at Li Shi Min, speechless. This guy was formidable, and had the character to boot, but he was literally rubbish in every other aspect. Not only did he handle everything about the food, he was still treated like a dog when he came back. No wonder he had no standing amongst these survivors.

Luo Wen Shu glared at Yue Zhong and rebuked coldly: "Get the hell out! You're not welcome here!"

One of the ladies, who had a thick head of hair, and a voluptuous body, covered by 2 layers of Mutant Leopard Cat's hide, spoke slowly: "Forget it! These people were brought back by Li Shi Min! We're all Chinese, everyone should stick together, and get through this tough period."

Luo Wen Shu glanced at the beautiful lady who just spoke as he rebutted: "Zhou Xue Yan, we don't have much food left!! If they join us, what do we eat then? Don't tell me you're going to give them from your portion?"

In this apocalyptic world, nothing was more important than rations. Luo Wen Shu and the rest had tasted the bitterness of not having enough to eat, and hence were not willing to risk going hungry just to share with people they do not know. At this time, food was more important than even ladies.

The young girl who had come running to welcome Li Shi Min shouted back at Luo Wen Shu: "Luo Wen Shu! Our food was brought back by Brother Li, it's also not from your efforts, on what grounds are you chasing his friends away for?"

Luo Wen Shu glanced at Li Shi Min and chuckled coldly, as he raised his hands: "That is his duty!! Didn't you hear him? The more strength one has, the more responsibilities one has to bear! Since he has the capability to hunt for food, finding food IS his responsibility! As to how the food should be distributed, it's dependent on all our decision. The minority has to follow the majority, this is democracy! I reckon, that we should chase these unknown people away! Those who agree raise your hands!"

Within the cave, many hands shot in the air, only the youthful young girl and Zhou Xue Yan did not raise their hands.

Chapter 454: Fury!

Luo Wen Shu looked smugly at Yue Zhong's group and said: "23 to 3!! The majority feels that you should get the hell out!! Please leave!! Don't make us force you!"

Although Luo Wen Shu was arrogant, he was clear about human nature. He knew that the people here would absolutely not allow their precious rations to be shared with others.

Li Shi Min saw how domineering Luo Wen Shu was, and was angered to the point that he started trembling, yet he stared fixedly at a girl beside Luo Wen Shu. She was incredibly pretty and attractive, and Li Shi Min's eyes were full of pain.

Yue Zhong eyed Luo Wen Shu's smug expression and laughed coldly, before shooting forwards like an arrow, and throwing a single punch at his face.

Luo Wen Shu's nose was instantly crushed, fresh blood flowing, as his entire body flew through the air, before he crumpled to the ground.

"What the fuck?!"

"How could you?!"

"Savage!!"

The entire cave broke out in commotion, as the people began to admonish Yue Zhong, while looking at him fearfully.

The attractive girl who had stood beside Luo Wen Shu immediately shouted at Li Shi Min: "Li Shi Min!! Stop him!! Your friend is too savage!! How can he just use force to hurt others!! What a brute!"

Li Shi Min looked forlornly at the girl who had captured his heart, and chuckled bitterly, but he did not move. That was because he was currently held at gunpoint by others. The moment

he made a strange move, Bai Xiao Sheng, who was standing behind him, would blow his brains out without hesitation. After he had witnessed Bai Xiao Sheng's speed, he did not dare to say that he could match against his speed.

Yue Zhong swept a cold glance at the people present in the cave, and pulled out his Stinger: "Shut the hell up! Whoever speaks out of line, I'll blow his brains out!"

Behind Yue Zhong, all the soldiers had also drawn their weapons and aimed at the people in the cave.

Every single one of these soldiers were killing machines with the experience of countless battles, having killed people and zombies alike. As long as Yue Zhong gave the order, they would not hesitate to kill everyone present in the cave. In this apocalyptic world, human lives were not as precious as during peacetime.

Seeing those advanced weapons, everyone was stunned. They did not dare move, nor make a sound, as they stood still and stared fearfully at Yue Zhong.

"Look at you, you really are a piece trash!!" Yue Zhong eyed Li Shi Min, before he used his Stinger to point at the attractive girl that Li Shi Min was looking at, and barked: "Get over here!"

With the Stinger pointed at her, the beautiful girl whimpered and scooted over.

"Strip!!" Yue Zhong eyed the girl and barked out coldly.

When faced with that order, the attractive girl immediately looked at him pleadingly. With everyone's gazes on her, no matter how loose she was, she would not dare to strip.

Yue Zhong immediately fired a shot near the feet of the girl.

With a single peng, the hole appeared in the ground. That hole was only about 3mm away from her bright-red toe nail.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed as he ordered coolly: "I don't like to

repeat myself. The next shot will be fired at your thighs!"

The attractive girl was pale-white with fright by now, as two streams of tears flowed down from her eyes, but she began stripping quickly, revealing a black laced underwear and bra, against her pale white skin, the surrounding males stared at her fixedly, gulping their saliva.

Li Shi Min shut his eyes tight, not willing to see his love interest being humiliated.

"Stop!!" Just as the girl was about to remove her bra, Yue Zhong called for her to stop.

She instantly stopped, and turned to look at Yue Zhong.

"Do you see that? This should be how a man leads!" Yue Zhong patted Li Shi Min's back as he continued indifferently: "This woman, I'll present her to you! In exchange, from now on, you work for me!"

Yue Zhong did not like the girl in front of him, and he had never had the habit to keep a harem, hence he decided to leave her for Li Shi Min.

Li Shi Min seemed to have taken one step into heaven from hell, but he still looked at the lady hesitatingly, saying: "But, what if Zhang Cai Zhi is not willing?"

Yue Zhong pointed with the Stinger at her and asked coldly: "Are you willing to be Li Shi Min's woman?"

Zhang Cai Zhi immediately nodded: "I'm willing!! I'm willing!!"

Compared to Yue Zhong, Zhang Cai Zhi found that Li Shi Min was practically an angel.

Bai Xiao Sheng glanced at Luo Wen Shu and the rest and asked: "Leader! What about the males? Do we kill them all?"

In his eyes, the deaths of those males would not concern him. Bringing them along would just be a burden.

Hearing those words, everyone froze in terror, and their expressions turned to one of fear. Obviously this bunch of people could kill without blinking.

Yue Zhong replied mildly: "No need, tie them up first!!"

The males in the cave were practically trash in Yue Zhong's eyes. They could not even handle the task of searching for food. They only knew how to bicker in the cave, and bully an honest person like Li Shi Min. However, he was not someone who liked to kill innocent people, furthermore, these were his countrymen, and he would only discipline them.

Yue Zhong had taken control of the cave in an instant, and proceeded to ask Li Shi Min: "Li Shi Min! Have you heard of 'Chen Yao'?"

Li Shi Min thought for awhile, before replying: "Plant Demoness!! I've heard of her name. She's active in this region, and specially takes in refugees like us, or any Chinese that are being hunted by Wuyan Hong. I've brought these people here, but if it wasn't for Luo Wen Shu and the rest resisting, I would have joined her troops long ago."

Yue Zhong asked with a face of concern: "How Is she? Any other news on her?"

Chen Yao had sent someone to transmit that S.O.S for help, and there was no further contact after that. Yue Zhong had no way of determining her location, and hence brought his men to Vietnam.

Li Shi Min immediately replied: "No! Not long ago, Wuyan Hong had sent a small team to pressure the troops of the Plant Demoness. It's rumored that the battle was intense. As for more detailed reports, I'm afraid only Wuyan Hong's troops possess the information. The Chinese are struggling to do anything here after all."

Under Wuyan Hong's leadership, the region was under

propaganda, and a large majority of the Vietnamese viewed the Chinese with hatred. As a Chinese, Li Shi Min would find it hard to obtain any valuable intel. Furthermore, he had to run all over the place to feed 20 some 'masters', and was usually too exhausted to do anything else.

Yue Zhong pondered before asking: "Are there any troops of Wuyan Hong stationed around here?"

Li Shi Min spoke with a little anger: "Yes!! Nearby here, there's a town around 20km away. There are 2 companies of soldiers there! We have no idea how many troops exactly! They're there specifically to deal with the Plant Demoness. Because of their existence, the Chinese factions nearby have been forced to enter the mountains. Many have died to the cold and hunger!"

When Yue Zhong heard that, he emitted a strong and icy killing intent: "Tonight will be the day they die!!"

Nightfall, within the town, there were many torches lit, and there was a hustle and bustle of activity.

Yue Zhong had brought his men quietly as they snuck up near to the town.

There was a layer of wooden fences surrounding the entire town, meant to keep out low level Mutant Beasts as well as zombies.

As Yue Zhong neared the wooden fences, he could see clearly the many human heads impaled on stakes, as well as some other corpses impaled through their entire bodies, both male and female alike. The scene looked like it was straight out of hell.

Yue Zhong even saw some children's bodies that had suffered the same treatment, their faces contorted in pain before they died. The chilling scene seemed to reflect the '98 treatment of Chinese in Indonesia.

Li Shi Min stood by Yue Zhong's side as they looked at the corpses, gritting his teeth as he spoke softly: "These are all our

Chinese comrades!! Those Vietnamese beasts had them killed the moment they got their hands on them!! Those who ran, would be tormented beyond belief. They would then be stuck on these fences, to serve as a warning!"

On the face of this earth, humans were capable of the kindest of acts, but at the same time, the most cruel and inhumane behaviour came from humans as well.

Yue Zhong eyed the numerous bodies hung up on the wooden fences, having not seen such cruel acts since the apocalypse, he still could not suppress the surging fury within him: "Wuyan Hong! I will definitely wipe you and your entire line out!"

When those soldiers following behind Yue Zhong saw the bodies, each of them began to boil with rage, their hearts filled with intense hatred for the Vietnamese.

"Do it!!" Yue Zhong's order rang out coldly.

Ming Jia Jia, who stood beside Yue Zhong instantly summoned her Type 2 Shadow Wolves, sending them into the night.

A number of those Shadow Wolves leapt out from the darkness, ripping the throats of those Vietnamese soldiers by the gate, killing them.

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps, carrying Ming Jia Jia on his back, his eyes blazing with fury as he charged into the town.

20 experts followed closely behind Yue Zhong.

The moment they breached the town, the entire town seemed to ring out with warning sounds.

In 2 seconds, a short and scrawny middle-aged man stepped out on top of a roof, decked in Vietnamese military wear, as he laughed coldly: "You must be Chinese monkeys!! So stupid! Do you only know how to conduct a raid at night?"

The middle aged man was Ruan Wen Yi, the Company Officer of

the Wolf Fang Battalion troops in the town! He had reached an enhancement level of 48.

Chapter 455: Kill Them All!

After suffering losses a number of times, the Vietnamese had begun their own preparations. It was especially so as to protect against the raids from the Plant Demoness Chen Yao. Ruan Wen Yi had even designated certain heavy defences. Although Yue Zhong had gotten Ming Jia Jia to dispose of the soldiers soundlessly at the gate, it was still enough to alert the entire town.

Ruan Wen Yi had then appeared, looking down at Yue Zhong's group from a vantage point, smiling coldly with a smug expression.

"We've fallen into a trap!!" Li Shi Min saw the sudden appearance of Ruan Wen Yi and he was instantly taken aback.

"Kill him!" Yue Zhong eyed Ruan Wen Yi as he gave the order coldly,

Ruan Wen Yi glanced at Yue Zhong and smirked: "Haha!! You want to kill me? Stop dreaming! In another 5 minutes, you'll be entirely surrounded by the troops and our Wolf Fang Battalion soldiers that are on their way here. Surrender now, become our slaves, and you might still have a chance at life."

At the next instant, a silhouette that was hard to discern with the naked eye appeared beside Ruan Wen Yi and flashed past his body, leaving a headless corpse.

When that silhouette finally stopped on the roof, it revealed Lightning's terrifying figure, carrying Ruan Wen Yi's detached head, still beaming with a smug expression, in its mouth. Lightning then chomped down viciously, instantly crushing the head into a bloody mess, before swallowing it into its stomach.

When Li Shi Min saw that, his entire body trembled in fright, as he thought to himself: "What fearsome speed!! How can anyone defend against that?"

"Kill every single enemy that resists!" Yue Zhong barked out coldly, before charging further into town.

Beside him, White Bones followed closely behind, along with 4 Shadow Wolves.

The 20 experts following Yue Zhong were split into 2 teams, each team heading off towards different directions.

Since the enemy required time to gather their troops, Yue Zhong and his team had to make use of this time to cause as much chaos as possible, as well as kill the maximum number of enemies they could.

Otherwise, when the enemy had gathered their full strength, it would be harder to deal with them by then.

Yue Zhong rushed towards the place where Ruan Wen Yi appeared, and in 3 seconds, he saw 20 experts of the Wolf Fang Battalion.

These 20 experts were in the midst of rushing over, and when they saw Yue Zhong appearing, they were all stunned. They had never expected Yue Zhong to break past the defences of their Company Leader Ruan Wen Yi in such a short time.

Right at the moment when the 20 soldiers stopped, White Bones instantly shot out 10 sharp bone spikes. 6 of the experts were pierced through the head, while the 4 were nailed to the ground through their bodies.

Lightning was like a tornado, as it immediately pounced into their midst, and in a flash, swiping out and causing 10 heads to roll on the ground, leaving 10 headless corpses still swaying where they stood.

"Strong!! A Type 3 Mutant Beast is truly strong!!" Yue Zhong watched Lightning and his eyes flashed with content. If he had to personally act against those 10 experts, it would have expended some energy. However, Lightning had only taken 1 second to

completely wipe them out, leaving them with not even a single second to react.

In the martial arts world, speed was not easy to break, and since Lightning's speed had reached the apex, unless it was a person with 15 times the speed of a normal person, there would be no way to react to Lightning before being killed. The Type 3 Lightning was one of the strongest trump cards in Yue Zhong's arsenal, and its killing potential had long since surpassed Yue Zhong himself. This was the result of Yue Zhong painstakingly feeding Lightning with numerous high-quality nuclei.

After easily disposing of the Wolf Fang Battalion in the town, Yue Zhong continued running further in, with White Bones and Lightning beside him.

Upon activating his [Shadow Steps], Yue Zhong's speed would reach up to 18 times that of a normal person, almost reach the sound barrier. In 2 short seconds, he had already reached the army camp within the town.

At that point in time, the soldiers were still busy getting ready. When they caught sight of Yue Zhong's sudden appearance, everyone was shocked.

All of a sudden, 5 Type 2 Shadow Wolves charged out and bit through the necks of 5 Vietnamese soldiers, before pouncing on another 5 next to them.

At the same time, White Bones had already shot out 10 bone blades, slicing off the heads of 10 other Vietnamese soldiers, sending them flying. Yue Zhong himself pulled out his 12.7mm heavy machine gun and sprayed at the gathering soldiers.

Under the barrage of bullets, many of the Vietnamese soldiers were instantly shredded, suffering varying degrees of injuries, some even had their brains blown out. It was truly a cruel scene.

With that sudden assault, the neatly organized army was

instantly thrown into chaos, many suffering injuries while others dead. However, these soldiers were still considered elite soldiers in their own right, even when faced with such a preemptive attack, they dove for various cover in different directions, before raising their guns in a bid to return fire at Yue Zhong.

The Bronze Spiritual Bell floated out from Yue Zhong's chest and floated above his head, releasing an impregnable shield around him. The bullets just bounced off the shield emitted by the bell, not injuring Yue Zhong in the slightest.

From the other side, Lightning shot forwards, weaving about the soldiers, and everywhere it touched, there would be a mangled corpse and fresh blood spraying all around.

"Devil!! He's the devil!!"

"Shit!!! He's untouchable!! What do we do?! We can't kill him!!"

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!"

Many of the soldiers were dying by the tens at the hands of White Bones, Yue Zhong, those 5 Type 2 Shadow Wolves and Lightning. No matter how organized the Vietnamese soldiers were, or how many advanced weapons they had, there was simply no time to mount any sort of defence or resistance. They could only die helplessly. After just a short bout of resisting, even the toughest soldier had surrendered and abandoned his weapon.

From behind, Bai Xiao Sheng had quickly led his men as they went on a killing spree on other Vietnamese soldiers, before reaching Yue Zhong's location.

When Li Shi Min came to the army camp, and saw the hundreds of corpses, his eyes widened with shock: "What the hell!! Was this done all by himself?"

Li Shi Min had never expected that a single person would be able to annihilate 2 companies of men alone, forcing the remaining troops to surrender as well.

Li Shi Min knew he was considered an expert, if given enough time, handling 30 expert soldiers would not be an issue. However, to take on 2 companies of soldiers at once, his best bet would be to kill 3 then retreat, otherwise the moment he was surrounded, he would be dead.

As for Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest, who had seen the truly terrifying extent of Yue Zhong's strength, they were used to the fact that their Leader could actually terrorize the entire town on his own. They had discussed in private before, believing that while Yue Zhong would not be able to deal with a battalion that had advanced weapons, wiping out one without modern weapons would be no issue.

In this post apocalyptic world, strength was everything, but even the strongest enhancer would at most be able to contend with a small proper army.

Bai Xiao Sheng glanced at all the soldiers that had surrendered, before asking Yue Zhong: "What do we do with all these Vietnamese prisoners?"

Yue Zhong passed the order: "Find some officers for me, I have things to ask them."

Bai Xiao Sheng was extremely efficient, and very soon, the remaining commanding officer, his two vice-commanders and 4 platoon commanders were brought in front of Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong glanced at the 7 officers, and pointed to a platoon commander before asking: "I want to know, who here knows anything about the Plant Demoness Chen Yao? You first!"

The platoon commander's face twisted in hatred as he stared at Yue Zhong and cursed: "Peh!! Damn Chinese dog!!"

Yue Zhong casually placed a gun at the head of that platoon commander, and fired a shot, blowing his brains to bits, dyeing the ground with red and white matter.

"Vicious!!" Li Shi Min jumped when he saw that, his back breaking out in cold sweat. After witnessing Yue Zhong's decisiveness, he swore to not entertain any thoughts of escaping, instead serving to complete whatever task Yue Zhong had for him.

"Your turn!!" After killing one of the platoon commanders, Yue Zhong did not rush to aim the Stinger at another platoon commander, speaking in a cold drawl.

The platoon commander immediately knelt in front of Yue Zhong and pleaded: "I don't know!! Sir!! I don't know!! I really don't know!!"

Peng!!

Following the sound of a gun, the skull of that platoon commander was likewise blown apart like a watermelon.

Yue Zhong swung to point at another platoon commander as he spoke coldly: "My patience has its limits! If you're not willing to speak, I'll just kill every single Vietnamese here! You shall accompany my dead countrymen 6 feet under!! Your turn!"

The platoon commander knelt and pleaded: "I'll speak!! I'll speak!! Please spare my life!"

The commanding officer immediately cursed out in rage: "Wang Zhen Qi!! Are you still a Vietnamese soldier? How can you be so spineless, and kneel to this Chinese dog!!"

He was immediately killed with a shot to his head after admonishing his subordinate.

Seeing that, the remaining officers all turned pale with fright. They had just discovered, that while many of the Chinese captives they tortured were easy to bully, and could tolerate a lot, and were kind, there was the opposite to them as well, in the form of this Yue Zhong would did not seem to care about captives nor see them as people.

The platoon commander continued while kowtowing: "The Plant

Demoness Chen Yao and her troops had been defeated by us at the Daluo Mountain. They had already retreated further in. Their exact location, we do not know either. The one who had been in charge of encircling and suppressing Chen Yao was Ruan Wen Yi. We were just obeying orders. Please spare my life!!"

"Fine! I'll spare you!!" Yue Zhong obtained a satisfactory answer, and waved his hands for this soldier to be brought away.

Bai Xiao Sheng then came to Yue Zhong's side and asked: "What do we do with the Vietnamese in the town?"

Yue Zhong's pupils retracted as he spoke softly, but coldly: "Kill them all!! Let them accompany our countrymen in death!"

Chapter 456: Infuriated Vietnamese!

In the small town, there were a total of 465 Vietnamese. They were all brought to the entrance of the town and executed on the spot, before their heads were decapitated and stuck all around the town. It was reminiscent of practices of ancient civilizations.

Li Shi Min watched all these, and could not help but exclaimed: "Yue Zhong! This is too cruel!! They are just ordinary citizens after all!!"

Yue Zhong shot Li Shi Min an icy look as he retorted: "Li Shi Min! When they killed our fellow Chinese men, did they think like that? Under Wuyan Hong's rule, the Chinese are living like pigs and dogs, how is that not cruel? Every single Vietnamese here is Wuyan Hong's subordinates, and his power, with every person left alive, to us, it's an additional threat! This is war! In war, if you're merciful to your enemies, you're vicious to yourself!"

Yue Zhong eyed Li Shi Min and coldly declared: "I hereby order you to bring me the heads of 100 Vietnamese within a month. I don't care who you kill, as long as you kill a hundred! Otherwise, your little lover Zhang Cai Zhi will face death! Go!"

Upon hearing that, Li Shi Min was momentarily speechless, with his eyes wide open. However, thinking to how Yue Zhong had slaughtered 465 Vietnamese cruelly without blinking his eyes, he felt a chill run down his spine, and gritted his teeth as he replied: "Yes, Leader!!"

After which, Li Shi Min took up his Bronze Bow and ran off into the snow.

Bai Xiao Sheng came up to Yue Zhong, as he glanced at Li Shi Min's leaving figure and spat a mouthful of saliva, saying: "What a fool! This is a war zone between 2 races! Either they die or we perish. Under such circumstances, he still wants to exercise mercy, what a dumbass."

Yue Zhong looked at Li Shi Min's figure and muttered: "He's a good guy!! Just not suitable for this sort of world."

Li Shi Min had the strength, but even amongst the survivors he was protecting, his position was the lowest, precisely because he was too gullible and was toyed by Luo Wen Shu.

Yue Zhong turned to ask Bai Xiao Sheng: "How many Chinese people did we rescue?"

Bai Xiao Sheng's eyes flashed with a dark look: "63! All of them women. 13 had been tormented to the point of insanity. The remaining 50 are weak in body and spirit as well."

Yue Zhong fell silent, since those Chinese women had been brought here in such weather, it would not have bode well. He was already mentally prepared, but hearing it, he still felt unwell.

Yue Zhong replied softly: "Take them back to the cave! If possible, get them trained to become soldiers. Before I'm back, no one is to leave the cave. Otherwise, execute them!"

In these foreign lands, Yue Zhong had no stable place of operations, and since the cave could not have sustained more than 400 people, it was one of the reasons for Yue Zhong's decision to execute those Vietnamese.

Bai Xiao Sheng was slightly shocked as he directly asked: "Leader! Are you going to Daluo Mountain alone?"

Yue Zhong replied: "No. Ming Jia Jia, Chen Luo, Wang Xian, and Liu Han. These people will follow me!"

The 4 that Yue Zhong mentioned had the abilities to seek people, and they were more valuable than any others on the current search mission.

Bai Xiao Sheng insisted: "Do you want to bring more with you?"

After knowing each other for so long, Bai Xiao Sheng was extremely confident about Yue Zhong, but he didn't want

something untoward to happen to him in Vietnam as well.

Yue Zhong rejected: "No need!"

Not long after, a truck bearing various items set off from the small town, making its way towards the cave in the mountains. All that was left of the town was the aftermath of the battle, and the depiction of hell with all the corpses and heads being hung.

Yue Zhong had not established any base in Vietnam, and to avoid the retaliation from Wuyan Hong's troops, they could only hide within the cave.

=====

Within a luxurious villa in Langson, Vietnam.

A 36-37 year old male, who was decked in military uniform, and had an imposing stature, had an extremely grim look on his scar-ridden face. He slammed down on the table and cursed loudly: "Damn bastard! Who was it? Who dared to kill 768 of our Vietnamese people?! And dared to chop their heads off and stick them on the wooden fences?! Bunch of monsters!"

This middle-aged man was called Wu Zhi, he was one of the 13 generals of the Vietnam Army, and was a huge racist as well. The number of Chinese that had died at his hands numbered over a hundred.

When Wu Zhi and the rest killed the Chinese, they had treated it like slaughtering animals, and did not feel any sense of guilt nor sin. However, the moment their own people were killed, they were filled with an immense fury like a rabid dog.

A handsome young man of about 1.7m with a slightly convexed cheekbone stepped forwards, his body radiating a heavy bloody aura, as he said: "General, it must be the Chinese! From what we inspected, all our countrymen have been killed, but the shitty Chinese have been rescued!"

The young man was one amongst 4 geniuses honed by Wuyan

Hong. The 4 were Evolvers that were exceptional in their own right, and this particular young man was known as the Blood Butcher Zhang Man Xu.

Zhang Man Xu was one of 5 dual-attribute Evolvers in the whole of the Vietnam Army, which consisted of over 150,000 people. His combat strength was considered the top of the 4 Pillars of the younger generation. He had overcome many Chinese factions and his hands were stained deep in Chinese blood. He was also considered to be one of the most extreme members of the Vietnam Army.

After the events when Yue Zhong had managed to escape from Vietnam, Wuyan Hong had swallowed up numerous other Vietnamese factions, and conquered Langson City, achieving huge expansions. His military might had soared as a result.

Another young man with tanned skin and an eyepatch over his left eye chuckled grimly, his demeanor silent but sturdy: "It's not like it's a bad thing! Once we announce this, Lei Jing Jie and his bunch of cronies would shut up and stop covering for the Chinese dogs."

The young man with the eyepatch was called Ling Luo, and he was also one of the 4 Pillars of the younger generation. While his combat abilities were not as tyrannical as Zhang Man Xu, he was extremely intelligent.

Regardless of factions, there would be differing opinions. Even amongst Wuyan Hong's racist Vietnam Army, there would be decent people that would speak up for the Chinese. Lei Jing Jie was the representative for the Chinese. Of course, his faction and voice was considered weak amongst the rest of Wuyan Hong's troops, and they did not dare to openly go against Wuyan Hong. Hence, would only do things within their means to help the Chinese as much as they could.

In any establishments, there would be decent and horrible

people. Even under Yue Zhong's command, certain people who escaped his notice might have even more perverse tendencies than the Vietnamese people.

One young man with contorted features, yellow teeth and protruding lips frowned and chimed in: "Just who was the one who did it? Don't tell me it was the Plant Demoness Chen Yao?"

This man with yellow teeth and protruding lips was also one of the members of the 4 Pillars. His name was Yuan He. He had an ugly disposition, and he was extremely bitter that people mocked him for his looks. When his temper flared, he would employ vicious tactics to kill his enemies.

Ling Luo thought for a while, before shaking his head: "Nope! It's definitely not Chen Yao! Her methods are not so vicious! Furthermore, she has just been forced to retreat by us, she would definitely not have the strength to do this."

Zhang Man Xu laughed confidently, his eyes flashing with a powerful flame as he looked at Wu Zhi and said: "Regardless! Since he dared to act against our Vietnamese Army, his outcome is only death! General, please allow me to bring some men to wipe them out!"

Wu Zhi's eyes gleamed and he smiled: "Good! Zhang Man Xu, I shall send you to go eradicate this bunch of rebels. How many people do you need?"

Zhang Man Xu licked his lips, and his eyes revealed a bloody light: "30 members of the Wolf Fang Battalion should be enough!"

Wu Zhi directly agreed: "Good!"

As one of Wuyan Hong's trusted generals, Wu Zhi had no means to activate the entire Wolf Fang Battalion, but deploying 30 of them would not be an issue.

Following his expansion of power, the experts under Wuyan Hong had grown by leaps and bounds as well. The number of

experts in the Wolf Fang Battalion now numbered in the 300s, and had become a truly powerful and renowned expert battalion.

"Thank you General!" Zhang Man Xu's face revealed a savage grin, and he could almost taste the joy and pleasure of slaughtering his enemies. He liked to be in control of someone else's life. In fact, seeing his enemies suffer under his blades was his favourite experience. The stimulation was indescribable.

In a secret location of Langson City, a bunch of Vietnamese were sitting within.

One of the middle-aged man had a look of resentment as he said: "Jing Jie!! This time, those Chinese were too much! They killed 700 of our countrymen!! We can't continue helping them like this! I'm sorry, but I want out!"

"I want out too!! Those Chinese are too cruel!! I don't want to help them anymore!"

A number of the Vietnamese came up to Lei Jing Jie and saluted him, before turning around to leave the room. These were Vietnamese who pitied the Chinese that had been suffering and humiliated under the treatment of their fellow Vietnamese, and hence decided to help them. However, upon hearing the news that there was a slaughter of 700+ Vietnamese people, they had become enraged and left this association to express their resentment.

Lei Jing Jie silently returned their salutes, and thanked them for their help, at the same time, his heart was filled with anguish: "Seems like, a devil has appeared from China."

Lei Jing Jie was Pro-China and Vietnam, and he was extremely clear on the might and threat of his neighbouring country. There were numerous powerful warriors in China, and he had always sought to co-exist peacefully with Chinese, and treated the Chinese fairly.

Prior to the apocalypse, China had been stable and secure, and

the Vietnamese would not easily seek trouble. But the moment the apocalypse set in, all social stability and order went out the window, and supremacists and nationalistic views were the easiest ways to gather people. Hence, Wuyan Hong had chosen an opportune time to put forth his ambitions of swallowing China, and thus proposed the idea of purging the lands of Chinese, gaining the support of racists and nationalists.

Under that sort of environment, Lei Jing Jie could only go with the flow helplessly, while doing all he could within his power to help those Chinese. When he heard the news of 760+ Vietnamese perishing at the hands of an unknown Chinese, his heart turned cold, and knew that finally, a fearsome demon had arrived to retaliate.

Lei Jing Jie was smart, and he knew exactly what entails the merciless slaughter of 700+ people. The very fact that the person had managed to breach the defences of the small town with its inhabitants spoke a lot about the might of the assailant.

Lei Jing Jie looked to the sky, and prayed in his heart: "I pray that the gods above will protect our Vietnam!! Let us get past this disaster!"

At the onset of the apocalypse, the voice that had called itself 'God' had filled the heads of everyone, and under those circumstances, many non-believers felt their beliefs crumbling, and many had even converted into disciples. That was the reason for the rise of various other unorthodox sects.

The Heaven Sect had been able to gather so many believers was largely due to the voice that had supported the existence of 'God'.

"Kill the Chinese dogs!!"

"Make them pay!!"

Within Langson City, when the majority of the Vietnamese heard that 700+ fellow countrymen had been wiped out, they were

infuriated, and anti-Chinese sentiments were at an all-time high. An angry mob soon formed as they marched the streets.

Many Chinese people that had been forced to become slaves were pulled out by their masters, and thrown to the angry mob to be beaten to death. Many were even caught and placed on top of a burning fire, as the surrounding Vietnamese watched and laughed in glee.

Li Shi Min had by now, snuck into Langson City. As he watched the Vietnamese beating and killing the Chinese, some being even burnt alive, his heart was set aflame by fury, as he cursed inwardly: "How is this alright?! These bastards!! These inhumane bastards!!"

"Save me!! Save me!!" A Chinese girl came running towards Li Shi Min's direction with fear on her face. A number of Vietnamese kids of about 12 or 13 were laughing as they rushed towards her, using their daggers to attack her, driving the daggers into her body, drawing fresh blood.

Compared to adults, these kids were even more terrifying. Their perception of the world had not matured, and slaughtering other humans was comparable to killing ants, there was no difference.

As the Chinese girl was dismembered, her blood splattered everywhere before her head was chopped off. Countless Vietnamese watched on and laughed.

Watching the Chinese girl being cut up in front of him, her eyes that held an expression of unwillingness before she died, Li Shi Min's brain was overcome by hatred and his originally kind and benevolent nature crumbled, giving rise to a surging intent to kill: "Fuck!! Fuck!! Fuck!!"

Li Shi Min swiftly drew his Bronze Bow from his back, aiming at the child who was playing with the head of the Chinese girl as though he had gained a toy.

As the drawstring released, a white bone arrow pierced through the space and penetrated the body of the child. Its speed was not reduced in the slightest, continuing in its trajectory, penetrating another 7 Vietnamese before exploding, dying the street with blood.

Explosive Arrow! This was the skill that Li Shi Min possessed, and he wasn't just a powerful archer. He was an Agility-based Evolver that had reached Level 43, and after killing that Vietnamese kid, the kind and honest Li Shi Min had disappeared, giving rise to a deadly and vicious slaughterer.

Chapter 457: Seeing Chen Yao Again!

Li Shi Min fired that single arrow which killed 7 Vietnamese, before he retreated backwards in a flurry, at the same time, cocking his bow, and firing thrice more into the crowd of people.

The 3 Exploding Arrows pierced a dozen of the Vietnamese who were gloating at the fate of the Chinese, before exploding and causing a misty spray of blood.

When the nice people are pushed to breaking point, they're the most terrifying, as they could switch to the other extreme.

Li Shi Min originally belonged to the type of men who were courageous and honest, but his honest nature was in fact a weak point as well, and hence, he had allowed Luo Wen Shu to climb over him. Currently, he had totally changed into a wild beast, allowing his true prowess to be unleashed without any shackles.

A total of over 20 Vietnamese instantly died at his hands, and the initially celebratory mood of those Vietnamese who were killing and humiliated the Chinese turned into one of chaos, as everyone panicked, running in different directions, trampling over one another.

After he had killed those 20-plus Vietnamese, he pulled out a molotov from his back, and threw it into a house nearby with flammable items.

At this point of the apocalypse, most places had regained the usage of firewood and matchsticks to light fire, and the moment the molotov shattered on the pile of firewood, it began blazing furiously, causing a huge fire.

Li Shi Min set fire to a few places, before he vanished into the smog. Langson City was after all Wuyan Hong's territory, and there were countless experts here. He did not think that he would be able to take on the entire city. However, as Langson City was

huge, it was not a problem for him to find a place and hide.

Very quickly, blazing flames consumed parts of Langson City, and even the policemen were activated. Many experts were deployed in a bid to search for the arsonist, but nothing turned up.

Daluo mountain was in fact a small mountain range, and the terrain was treacherous. There were forests, grasslands, swamps and mountains. Within these areas, there were all sorts of Mutant Beasts.

At this current moment, snow was falling everywhere, and the entire Daluo mountain range seemed to be covered with a layer of white.

Amidst the white landscape, a few black dots were travelling with difficulty, and that was precisely Yue Zhong and his team.

"How is it? Any sign of Chen Yao or other people?" Yue Zhong asked Ming Jia Jia beside him, who was currently wrapped up like a dumpling.

The noses of the Shadow Wolves were extremely sensitive, and even more perceptive than the strongest police search hounds by at least 10 times. This was one of the main ways Yue Zhong had to conduct searches.

Ming Jia Jia eyed the Shadow Wolf in front as she assessed the situation: "No good!! Too much time has passed! Furthermore, it's been snowing, and their scent have been covered by the snow! If they were careful as well, they would hide their tracks. Otherwise they would have died long ago!"

Wuyan Hong's Wolf Fang Battalion was also filled with numerous experts, with all sorts of abilities. Had Chen Yao and her troops been easy to locate, they would have been wiped out by Wuyan Hong and his troops long ago.

"Seems like I'll have to do this the old-fashioned way!!" Yue Zhong mulled a while before he looked at the mountain range.

"Chen Yao!! It's me, Yue Zhong!! I'm here!!" Yue Zhong cleared his throat before hollering loudly.

Chen Luo, one of the experts beside Yue Zhong, activated his Soundwave Transmission.

The [Soundwave Transmission] was a tasteless Level 3 skill, which could help amplify a target's voice outwards. The higher the enhancement, the larger the radius. Although Chen Luo did not enhance the ability, it was enough to help transmit Yue Zhong's voice over a 5km radius.

"Chen Yao!! It's me, Yue Zhong!! I'm here!!"

The amplified sound waves under Chen Luo's ability resounded throughout the mountain range.

After a few minutes, the ground started to tremble, and a large number of huge Mutant Black-Scaled Ferocious Boars rushed out. Their beady eyes caught sight of Yue Zhong and his team, and started to charge.

"I'll handle them!" Ming Jia Jia looked at the herd of Mutant Black-Scaled Ferocious Boars, and her eyes flashed with a glint, before looking at Yue Zhong for permission.

These Black-scaled Boars were Level 40 and had not reached the level of a Type 2 Mutant Beast, so they happened to be Ming Jia Jia's favourite prey.

Yue Zhong eyed those Mutant Black-Scaled Boars and nodded. They weren't anything in his eyes.

With delight, Ming Jia Jia pointed at those Black-scaled Mutant Boars, and 5 Type 2 Shadow Wolves charged towards them like lightning.

The speed of those Type 2 Shadow Wolves were extremely quick, moving like fleeting shadows, and in just a few moments, they pounced onto the heads of those boars. With their sharp claws digging deep into those scales, they opened their jaws wide and

took a monstrous bite, tearing off pieces of flesh.

The flesh of those Blacked-scaled Ferocious Boars was truly thick, even after having a huge chunk of meat bitten out, they did not die. Instead, they began to twist and squirm furiously, trying to shake the Type 2 Shadow Wolves off, to no avail.

The 5 Type 2 Shadow Wolves bit a few times through the heads of the boars, before finally killing them.

At the same time, the remaining 11 Black-scaled Ferocious Boars had managed to get within a 20m distance of Yue Zhong.

Right at this point, White Bones exploded into action, shooting 10 sharp bone spikes, piercing the heads and subsequently, the brains of those charging Mutant Black-scaled Ferocious Boars.

The final boar charged at White Bones with bloodshot eyes, whereas White Bones responded by waving its iconic huge axe with its eyes blazing, instantly slicing the head of the boar off.

The drops from the 16 Mutant Boars amounted to 300 survivor coins and 2 white Treasure Boxes, and when Yue Zhong opened them, he obtained 2 Mountain-splitting Blades.

"Level 2 Treasure: Mountain-Splitting Blade! This sharp weapon is the best help in dealing with Mutant Beasts."

Just as Yue Zhong was preparing to leave for another hill, an excited shout rang out suddenly: "Boss Yue!! Is that you?"

Yue Zhong turned to look, only to discover a familiar face in front of him. It was one of his trusted subordinates, Pan Jin Yong, who he had left with Chen Yao to aid her.

When Yue Zhong saw Pan Jin Yong, his eyes brightened and he stepped forward: "It's me. Where's Chen Yao? Lead me to her!!"

Pan Jin Yong grinned at Yue Zhong: "Boss Yue!! You're finally back!! That's great!! The Holy Maiden Empress would be happy to see you!!"

"Holy Maiden Empress?" When Yue Zhong heard this term, a strange feeling arose in his heart. It gave him the feel of those 3rd-rate unorthodox sects.

Under Pan Jin Yong's lead, Yue Zhong's team routed around Daluo Mountain a few times, finally arriving in front of an obviously man-made cave in the side of the mountain.

"Boss Yue is back!!" The moment Pan Jin Yong stepped into the cave, he called out loudly.

Soon, an extremely beautiful lady came out, exuding not just a charming aura, but a valiant spirit and strength in her eyes. She was followed by a number of males of different ages, it was obvious that these were the members of the upper echelon amongst the survivors.

Yue Zhong eyed the lady quietly, his eyes filled with a complicated and shocked look. The environment can really change a person. Initially, when Yue Zhong left, Chen Yao was still a stubborn but resolute girl with talent. However, the lady that stood in front of him, while her looks had not changed, her entire demeanor was different.

Not only was she no longer naive-looking, she had an intense valor and fortitude that she did not have in the past, and it added much to her already attractive charm.

Chen Yao saw Yue Zhong, and her feelings were likewise as complicated. This man in front of her had left alone in order to draw the attention of Wuyan Hong. However, he had already established major bases in the Guangxi region, and had over 900,000 survivors. At the same time, he had assembled an elite troop of over 10,000 people. Compared to the man in front of her, she had been defeated again and again in Vietnam, and was forced to the mountains where resources were scarce. This gave rise to a myriad of emotions.

Chen Yao had control over a town of more than 4,000 people.

While she knew she could not compare to Yue Zhong, she thought that she had at least managed to close the distance between the 2 of them. However, reality was cruel. She discovered she was nowhere closer to Yue Zhong than she had been, and it was devastating.

As they were exchanging looks, a young, suave-looking 27-28 year-old man in clean and tidy clothes looked at Yue Zhong with animosity and asked: "Holy Maiden Empress, who's this?"

Chen Yao frowned at the man and replied: "Lu Zhi Xiang! This is Leader Yue Zhong whom I've told you all about often!"

Yue Zhong looked towards the men behind Chen Yao, only seeing Gan Tao, Pan Jin Yong and Fan Tong Xuan who were familiar. He had no impressions of the rest of the men, and it was clear that they had joined after he left.

When Yue Zhong had left on his own to divert Wuyan Hong's attention, the force he left to Chen Yao was not exactly formidable. Chen Yao had a hard time getting to where she was currently based only on her own powers and identity as a woman.

Lu Zhi Xiang eyed the men behind and spoke out: "Holy Maiden Empress, these were all fought for by us! This outsider had not contributed at all and he wants to take control over everything?! I'm not agreeable with that, nor are the rest of the brothers!! Do you guys agree?"

"I'm not willing!!"

"Same here!!"

Battling against Wuyan Hong for so long, Chen Yao's strength had been slowly whittled away, and she had tried to bolster them by absorbing other Chinese factions. These upper echelon members that Yue Zhong did not recognize were experts that had joined Chen Yao much later, and were naturally antagonistic towards Yue Zhong who had come to assume control.

Chapter 458: salt

Right at this moment, Gan Tao stood up and used his remaining eye to glare at the people who had responded and barked: "Shut the hell up, all of you!!"

Gan Tao surveyed the people in front of him: "At that time, for the sake of drawing Wuyan Hong's attention away from us, allowing us a moment of reprieve, Leader set off all on his own. He had done so much for us!! I've long since supported Leader! Whoever that has an issue with it, is equal to going against I, Gan Tao!"

Gan Tao possessed the strongest troops amongst Chen Yao's forces, and between him and Pan Jin Yong, they commanded a total of 70 Evolvers. Those Evolvers were above Level 20, and hence, he and Pan Jin Yong possessed the strongest authority within the faction, next to Chen Yao.

Lu Zhi Xiang's eyes flashed with a strange glint as he retorted loudly: "Gan Tao!! Do you think that just because the others fear you, I'm the same? Even if Yue Zhong was the benefactor in the past, the matters after that had been the efforts of our brothers under the Holy Maiden Empress! You want to just give it away, I, Lu Zhi Xiang, am not willing! The brothers are the same!!"

Lu Zhi Xiang was in command of the secondary troop in Chen Yao's faction, and he had been attracted to her charm, and given his all to support Chen Yao. In his mind, Chen Yao was the Holy Maiden of his heart. Furthermore, if he could marry her, the enter faction would become his to control. Hence, he had expended energy and time to get in her good books, killing enemies with all his heart for her.

"I'm not willing!"

"We're not willing!"

Led by Lu Zhi Xiang's rallying calls, the rest of the upper echelons responded with a resounding voice. As the saying goes, every sovereign had his own courtiers, they would definitely not allow Yue Zhong to come in to lord over them, and disrupt the current power play.

Chen Yao watched many of her own subordinates jump out to defy Yue Zhong, and frowned immediately, speaking icily to Lu Zhi Xiang: "Lu Zhi Xiang, are you defying my orders?"

Lu Zhi Xiang looked at Chen Yao with a fiery passionate gaze, and spoke: "Holy Maiden Empress!! I will listen to all of your orders. Except this one, because this concerns everyone else!! The Chinese Sky Association is not just your own!!"

Members of the Chinese Sky Association then shuffled towards Lu Zhi Xiang's back, in a show of support as they looked at Chen Yao and the rest.

Chen Yao looked at her subordinates of the Chinese Sky Association and turned pale, she had never expected that the Chinese Sky Association that she set up with Yue Zhong in the past would be out of her control.

"Are you guys thinking of rebelling?" Yue Zhong eyed Lu Zhi Xiang and the rest, taking a step forwards, his tone becoming extremely cold.

Lu Zhi Xiang eyed Yue Zhong contemptuously and said: "Get the hell out!! Yue Zhong, You're not welcome here!! The Chinese Sky Association has survived with our own efforts. No one will take it from our hands! Not even you!!"

"Alright, I got it. Since it's like this, you can all go to hell!" Yue Zhong's gaze retracted as he pulled out his Stinger swiftly with his right hand, causing 6 fast shadows to trail behind.

Peng! Peng!

In just a instant, 6 gunshots rang out, as Lu Zhi Xiang and 5 of his

fellow committee members had their heads blasted apart. Their lifeless bodies slumped to the floor, with red and brain matter splatter all over.

White Bones, which had been beside Yue Zhong the whole time, acted as well, with 10 sharp bone spikes shooting out, piercing the heads of 10 other members, nailing them to the wall.

Ming Jia Jia had activated her skill the same moment as the 2, causing 5 Type 2 Shadow Wolves to appear from the shadows of the remaining 3 members, chomping down on their throats swiftly.

Not even 10 seconds had passed, and the revolting members gathered around Lu Zhi Xiang had been entirely annihilated by Yue Zhong and his team. A strong bloody scent permeated the area.

Witnessing this, Gan Tao, Pan Jin Yong and Fang Tong Xuan turned pale, their gazes towards Yue Zhong filled with a new degree of fear and respect.

Chen Yao was shocked and her body trembled, only recovering after a while, her eyes flashing with anger as she scolded Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong! Don't you think that was overboard?! They were my subordinates, how can you just kill them like that?!"

Yue Zhong gazed at Chen Yao and his forehead creased: "I've said this before. No matter who it is, as long as they become my enemies, I'll not show mercy. Since they dared to rebel, they had to shoulder the consequences. Chen Yao, you're still so naive. Because of that, they had already banded against you. Can't you see? The person truly in charge here wasn't you, but that Lu Zhi Xiang!"

Hearing his words, Chen Yao's already pale expression turned even whiter, as she gritted her teeth and stared at Yue Zhong with a complicated gaze.

Yue Zhong glanced at Gan Tao standing one side and ordered:

"Gan Tao! Go take their corpses away to be buried!"

Gan Tao shivered in his heart as he replied respectfully: "Yes, Boss Yue!!"

Gan Tao could feel that Yue Zhong had grown even more formidable than before, even himself being a level 43 Evolver, he could instinctively feel that he would not be able to last more than 5 moves from Yue Zhong. Furthermore, Yue Zhong's ruthless and decisive nature, as well as lack of mercy towards his enemies, gave rise to a new level of fear in his heart. He would absolutely not want to become Yue Zhong's enemy.

"Zhi Xiang!! How did you die!! Who did this?! Who killed Zhi Xiang!!" Right at this time, a troop of about 30 members came to the cave entrance. A middle-aged man who was the leader immediately began crying out in agony upon seeing Lu Zhi Xiang's corpse.

The middle-aged man was Lu Zhi Xiang's uncle Lu Xiong, and was a member of the Lu Clan, leading a team of 30 experts from the Lu Clan.

Yue Zhong glanced at him and replied coldly: "It was me!!"

Lu Zhi Xiang glared back with immense hatred in his eyes, asking: "Why did you do it?!"

Yue Zhong replied indifferently: "Because he instigated a revolt! He planned to obstruct my taking control of the Chinese Sky Association."

Lu Xiong's eyes frosted over, and pointed a finger at Yue Zhong, commanding loudly: "Good! Good! Good!! I want you to accompany him in death!! Everyone, attack! I want him dead!!"

Lu Xiong's words had just landed when a sharp bone spike shot out from one side, instantly piercing his head, nailing him to the wall.

Seeing their own clan leader being pinned to the wall, the 30 Lu

Clan experts all stopped momentarily and trembled, their hearts turning cold.

Yue Zhong eyed the 30 members and his voice rang out coldly: "I am Yue Zhong, Leader of the China Sky Association. Surrender now, and I can let this go! If you insist on rebelling, don't blame me for being merciless!"

A female Evolver wielding daggers immediately called out: "Don't listen to him!! He killed Master Lu Xiong, let's all attack to avenge him!!"

Similarly, her words had just exited her mouth when Yue Zhong waved his gun, and immediately shot her head open. With his current speed, firing 6 bullets almost simultaneously was an easy feat, and he could easily catch the movements of any Agility-based Enhancers.

When the dagger-wielding female Evolver's head had been blasted apart by Yue Zhong, the remaining experts hesitated.

Right at this moment, Chen Yao came up to Yue Zhong's side, and berated the experts: "I'm Chen Yao! This is Yue Zhong! He's the one who started the Chinese Sky Association, and is the leader, you guys still aren't putting down your weapons?! Are you thinking of revolting as well?"

Although the remaining experts did not recognize Yue Zhong, they knew Chen Yao's position as the Holy Maiden Empress. They began to throw down their weapons, and saluted Yue Zhong and Chen Yao.

Yue Zhong chuckled and commended Chen Yao: "Not bad!! Seems like your position as the Holy Maiden still has some authority after all."

Chen Yao was expressionless as she stared at Yue Zhong: "I don't deserve the praise! Yue Zhong! If I didn't come in time, how would you have handled the situation?"

Yue Zhong replied mildly: "Like I said, I've never been one to show mercy to my enemies."

Chen Yao glanced at Yue Zhong, and chuckled bitterly in her heart, this man in front of her was still as tyrannical and overbearing as ever. If she had not appeared, those who were not willing to submit might very well have been executed on the spot.

Yue Zhong walked back into the cave, and gained control of the entire association.

Since those problems had been nipped in the bud, Yue Zhong then proceeded to regain authority with the help of Chen Yao, Gan Tao, Pan Jin Yong and Fang Tong Xuan.

Chen Yao brought a document to Yue Zhong, with a hint of worry as she reported: "Our current faction has 632 people left, of which, 562 are Chinese, 20 Vietnamese, 50 are foreigners. We have 300 rifles left, ammunition about 20,000 rounds. The rations in the storage can last for another 6 days. Fortunately for you hunting those Black-scaled Ferocious boars, we can hold out for a while more. However, we currently lack salt, as our salt reserves have almost been depleted. Without salt, the human body would not be able to function."

While salt was seemingly unimportant, it could not be missing from humans' dietary habits. Without enough salt, the human body would become weak.

Since Chen Yao and the rest had been forced to live within the mountains, salt had since become a precious resource. Never in her dreams did Chen Yao think that what would threaten their survival was the lack of salt, instead of rations. Initially, when Chen Yao's faction had been forced to be on the run from Wuyan Hong, many had grabbed huge amounts of food, but neglected to bring salt.

"I have a 100 jin of salt with me. Take it!!" Yue Zhong waved his hand, and immediately threw a bag of salt out.

Within his storage ring, there were weapons, rations, water and salt, all sorts of resources. However, this 100 jin of salt was one of the treasured items within his storage.

Chapter 459: The Cruel Vietnamese Army!

Being forced to live in the mountain region was not as pleasant as some might have thought. Instead, it was incredibly tough. There was a lack of resources everywhere, and there was no way of obtaining any necessary supplies that could otherwise be found in populated places.

If Yue Zhong had not come to the Daluo Mountain, Chen Yao and her troops might have been forced to attack the various towns under the Vietnamese Army rule to get salt and other necessities.

As Yue Zhong passed the salt to Chen Yao, the dissatisfaction and unrest as a result of his forceful takeover began to settle down. Also, he had Chen Yao to support him. Although her position was not as firm and iron-clad as compared to Yue Zhong in Guilin City, she still had some form of authority and charm. With her aid, the rest of the troops slowly began to accept that Yue Zhong was their leader. In any case, being able to live on in the current world was already a blessing.

In fact, if it wasn't for Wuyan Hong's vile and hateful oppression of any race other than the Vietnamese, with just an order, Yue Zhong could send away at least ? of the people by Chen Yao's side.

After things had settled down, Yue Zhong began training the survivors in Daluo Mountain. All the soldiers, regardless of gender or age, were all treated like soldiers as he made them undergo strict training.

In Vietnam, it was incredibly hard for Yue Zhong to just deploy troops as and when he liked. He could take down a single faction on his own and proceed to do so for the rest, but he would be hard-pressed to gather more trustworthy members.

The fact that Chen Yao had been forced to the Daluo Mountains was because they were betrayed a few times by the Vietnamese under their care, revealing their tracks and locations, allowing the

experts to chase up, and deal them devastating blows.

After 4 days, the weather had turned clear, and not a single cloud could be seen in the skies. Rays of sunshine shone on the snow-covered ground, and the reflection made everything seem brighter.

A troop of 200 soldiers that were armed to the teeth were currently escorting a group of 500 survivors. The frail survivors seemed to be susceptible to any sudden gust of wind, each of them wearing tattered layers of cloth, and their faces pale-white with fear as they entered the Daluo Mountains.

Zhang Man Xu was riding a non-mutated horse as he stepped forward and hollered: "Chen Yao!! I know you're in there! I am Zhang Man Xu from the Vietnamese Army!! I want to see you!! If you're not out in 10 minutes, I'll begin killing! A life will be taken for every 10 minutes with no sign of you, until you come out!"

Beside Zhang Man Xu, an Enhancer with the same [Soundwave Transmission] skill amplified his voice and sent it resounding throughout the mountains.

10 minutes passed.

Zhang Man Xu looked at the quiet and serene Daluo Mountains and chuckled coldly, waving his hands. A 12-13 year old girl with simple clothes, and a pair of eyes that shone with fear was brought in front of him.

Zhang Man Xu pulled out a gun, pointing the trigger at the girl's head. He laughed cruelly before pulling the trigger.

The gunshot resounded throughout the entire mountain region.

There was an additional bullet hole in the head of the girl, her eyes that were filled with hope and faith in life dimmed, as she crumpled to the floor.

After shooting the Chinese girl dead, a twisted, excited smile broke out on Zhang Man Xu's face as he laughed: "Chen Yao! Because you failed to appear, A girl has died because of you!! Are

you that cowardly? Will you watch 500 of your comrades die because of you?!"

Zhang Man Xu saw that his words had not achieved the intended effect and his eyes flashed with a cold gaze as he pointed at the Chinese: "All of you! Shout!!"

With that order, the Vietnamese soldiers immediately whipped out belts and lashed out at the Chinese, causing them scream out: "Miss Chen Yao!! Save us!!"

"Please!! Miss Chen Yao!! Appear and save us!!"

"Ah! It hurts!! It hurts!!"

"Please don't hit us anymore!! Please stop!!"

From the midst of the Chinese survivors, painful shrieks and screams began to ring out, as the Vietnamese Enhancer amplified the sounds throughout the mountain region.

The Vietnamese soldiers just laughed cruelly as they continued torturing the Chinese survivors. In war, many soldiers lost their humanity easily, and became cruel butchers.

Even America, known as the world police, during the Vietnam war, had slaughtered countless villages of innocent Vietnamese. These Vietnamese ordinary soldiers were likewise not entirely decent, and their behaviour were vicious.

"Shameless beasts!!" Pan Jin Yong was currently hidden in a tree, and as he watched the cruel treatment of the Chinese at the hands of these Vietnamese soldiers, his hands gripped the tree trunk tightly, as he gritted his teeth and cursed under his breath.

Pan Jin Yong was a recon soldier, and lived at the very forefront of battle. He had the [Forest Ranger Transformation] skill, and when he transformed, even if he could not defeat the enemy, he could escape with ease.

At that time, when Pan Jin Yong was captured by the

Vietnamese, he was likewise subjected to inhumane treatment at the hands of the Vietnamese. When he saw the plight of these fellow Chinese, the fury in his heart reached a terrifying degree.

He cast a deep look at those Chinese being humiliated and tortured, as he gritted his teeth before turning towards the Daluo mountains and rushed towards the inner parts.

When Chen Yao heard Pan Jin Yong's report, her expression turned pale as she sent a furious slap towards a table beside her: "Beasts!!"

Although Chen Yao had been molded by her environment and circumstances into a decent and capable leader, her inner heart was still that same kind and gentle girl, and when she heard the plight of her fellow countrymen, her emotions were thrown into disarray as she felt her anger surge.

A burly looking Enhancer who looked as built as a huge bear roared in rage: "Fuck! Those animals!! Holy Maiden Empress, let's go and fight it out with them!!"

The single-eyed Gan Tao immediately rebuked: "Xu Zu! Quieten down! Listen to what Boss Yue has to say!!"

Xu Zu immediately kept quiet, however he stared at Yue Zhong with animosity. He had no favourable impression of this Boss Yue that just killed his way in. In his opinion, the Chinese Sky Association should be run by Gan Tao and Chen Yao together.

Xu Zu was a Chinese survivor that Gan Tao saved. He was also one of the 3 Evolvers within the entire Chinese Sky Association. In his mind, he only acknowledged his saviour, and benefactor who allowed him to become strong. Chen Yao had always been in charge of the Chinese Sky Association, and had sacrificed much for the greater good. Hence, he was willing to listen to Chen Yao as well.

The moment Gan Tao spoke, everyone within the cave swivelled

to look at Yue Zhong. They wanted to know how this leader would handle this matter. Other than Gan Tao, Pan Jin Yong, Fan Tong Xuan and those who had been rescued by Yue Zhong before, no one knew exactly what measures Yue Zhong would employ.

A cold glint flashed in Yue Zhong's eyes as he gave the order: "Assemble the troops!"*

=====

Following the sound of a gunshot, another Chinese man was shot point-blank in the head, as he slumped to the ground, dead.

Zhang Man Xu looked at the dead corpse and his expression was one of perverse delight as he spoke slowly: "What cowards!! The Chinese are all a bunch of death-fearing trash! They don't even dare to show their faces!"

Yuan He responded with equal arrogance: "Of course! The only strength they have is their numbers. How can they compare with our race? We Vietnamese were the 3rd most armed country in the past, and we have a record of winning against even America! How can the Chinese compare?"

Obtaining a victory over the Americans was the pride of any nationalistic Vietnamese. After World War 2, America was regarded as the strongest country around, and the whole world knew that. However, America had suffered losses during the Vietnam War. During the Korean War, China had at most come to a draw against America. This was the sole point of pride amongst the Vietnamese.

Of course, the Vietnamese would never acknowledge that during the Vietnam War, it was China that had provided a lot of help during then. They would just assume that it was their own fight, and own victory.

Zhang Man Xu replied with excitement: "That's right! After today, our Vietnam will become the strongest country in the

world. The entire world will bow at our feet!!"

With the ushering of a new era, there was the birth of wild ambition in many hearts. With Wuyan Hong leading the Vietnamese Army, many believed that it would pave the way for Vietnam to shine.

Ling Luo laughed lightly: "These despicable Chinese would then become our slaves! They will slog for us!! Being the slaves of our grand Vietnam, they should be honoured and proud!"

Zhang Man Xu and the other youths exchanged looks and roared out with triumphant laughter.

They did in fact want to see Vietnam overtaking the other countries in becoming the strongest. In order to do that, they had to step on their neighbour China to climb up. This was also one of the reasons why there was such an antagonistic view towards the Chinese.

"Drag her here!!" Zhang Man Xu swept a look across the captives, before pointing to a woman and ordered.

A soldier immediately pulled the lady up towards Zhang Man Xu.

"Don't kill me!! Please!! I'll do anything you want!! Please, don't kill me!! It hasn't reached 10 minutes yet!"

When the lady saw Zhang Man Xu, she immediately knelt and bawled, pleading for her life.

No one would want to die, and although the lady had been subjected to a lot of torture, she was still afraid of death.

Zhang Man Xu eyed the woman kneeling down, his eyes flashing with a hint of elation. He loved to see his enemies begging for their lives in front of him, after which, he would slaughter them without a care. Seeing the enemy having the slightest hope before he snatched it away and turning it into desolation, it would give him an immense sense of pleasure.

Zhang Man Xu laughed out cruelly, as he slowly raised the gun and aimed at the lady's head: "If you want to blame someone, blame that Plant Demoness Chen Yao!! Because she hasn't appeared, you'll have to die!"

"Wa!!" Although Zhang Man Xu's actions were extremely slow, the terrorizing effect was there, and the lady's face was full of fear, as she began to wail, and pissed herself.

"Hold up!!" Right at this moment, Chen Yao came walking out from the trees alone, as she called out solemnly.

Zhang Man Xu turned to look, and saw the incredibly charming and beautiful Chen Yao, and his eyes flashed with delight: "So you're Plant Demoness Chen Yao? Truly exquisite!!"

Chen Yao looked at Zhang Man Xu with fury in her eyes, spitting out her words in an enraged tone: "It is I! I have come out as per your demands! Release them!!"

Zhang Man Xu looked at Chen Yao with a strange look and laughed coldly: "You want me to release them?! Sure! As long as you become my pet, and crawl in front of me to lick the dirt off my shoes, I'll release them!!"

Zhang Man Xu was not an idiot, and he wanted to agitate Chen Yao to act. By making Chen Yao and the rest lose their composure, it would be easy to deal with them, catching them all in one fell swoop. Of course, if it was possible, he would not mind catching Chen Yao to be his personal bitch.

Wuyan Hong had countless experts under him, and had instilled a great number of military rules. A simple elite battalion would be able to deal with Chen Yao and her faction that had not much military training. However, while defeating them is easy, annihilating them all would be difficult. Hence, Zhang Man Xu wanted to goad the rest into exchanging blows with him, then he had the confidence of wiping them all out.

Chen Yao gritted her teeth as she cursed: "You use the weak and old to threaten me? Don't you feel ashamed?"

Zhang Man Xu appreciated that fury mask of Chen Yao and pointed his gun at the female Chinese survivor in front of him: "Nope!! Chen Yao, I'm ordering you to kneel right now! Otherwise, I'll blow her head off r

Immediately!!"

"Save me!! Save me!! I don't want to die!!" The female Chinese stared at Chen Yao, crying as she pleaded. She knew that the cruel Vietnamese would not bat an eye about killing her, and she had no choice but to beg her fellow countryman.

Right as Zhang Man Xu was gloating, a cold intent enveloped his mind. He was an expert of countless battles after all, and upon feeling that intent, he immediately activated his ability and shot backwards like an arrow.

With a single 'bang', a 14.5mm sniper bullet round pierced his left shoulder, sending him flying backwards a few metres, shattering his left shoulder bone. If it wasn't for his reaction speed, that single shot would have taken his head and life.

Atop a tree, Yue Zhong put down his Falcon Sniper and thought: "He does have skills!! Seems like Vietnam has a number of terrifying experts as well!"

Yue Zhong's [Sniper] skill had been trained and honed countless times, matching even the top snipers of the world. That single shot could kill most Level 40 Enhancers, however, that Zhang Man Xu had actually managed to evade a little, and he immediately knew that this young Vietnamese had a terrifying strength as an expert.

Just as the gunshot rang out, 5 Shadow Wolves burst out from the shadows of 5 Vietnam soldiers, immediately crushing their throats.

Chapter 460: The 4 Pillars of the Vietnamese Army!

When the Shadow wolves attacked, there were 3 following gunshot sounds and bullet holes appeared in 3 of the Vietnamese soldiers' heads, as they slumped directly to the ground.

Chen Yao had a few sharpshooters under her as well, just not that many. Other than the 3 top-notch snipers, the rest would not be able to get a clean headshot from a distance.

At the same time, from the forest, a number of rifles sounded, as countless bullets threatened to rain down on the Vietnamese soldiers.

At this point, Yuan He of the 4 Pillars bellowed in rage, and a bright light flashed on his right hand, as a huge Spirit barrier appeared in the air, defending the 200 Vietnamese soldiers. Countless bullets hit the barrier only to deflect off it.

The Vietnamese soldiers that were following the 4 Pillars made off towards the forests.

When Zhang Man Xu and the rest brought the Chinese captives here, they had already considered the possibility of an ambush. Hence, they chose a position which allowed for a quick retreat.

Yue Zhong glanced at Yuan He who had activated the Spirit Barrier to protect over 200 soldiers, and he conjured a Devil Flame Spear in his right hand. He then flung it with all his strength, sending it shooting through the air with lightning-speed.

The terrifying Devil Flame Spear exploded onto the Spirit Barrier, causing it to instantly disintegrate, and the backlash from the skill caused Yuan He to spit out a mouthful of fresh blood.

He had just thrown up the mouthful of fresh blood, when a sniper bullet found its way in his forehead at the next instant, blasting a new hole in his head.

"Yuan He!!" Zhang Man Xu was making his way for the forests, and he saw his fellow Pillar member being killed with a single shot, and roared out in sorrow and fury.

The young 4 Pillars were the most talented geniuses that had been trained up by Wuyan Hong, and they had all sworn to dedicate their lives and strength to the cause of glorifying Vietnam. They were the best of friends, and seeing his comrade dead, it caused Zhang Man Xu to be swallowed up in an endless fury.

Zhang Man Xu's eyes were filled with sorrow as he ordered loudly: "Damn Chinese dogs! You will pay for your actions! Kill all those Chinese dogs!!"

With that command, the Vietnamese soldiers immediately turned their guns on the helpless Chinese survivors still chained up and fired.

Tatata!!

Following the sounds of spraying, countless bullets rained down on the Chinese survivors, causing a bloodbath, as a huge number of the Chinese fell in their own blood, screaming and groaning in agony.

Many of the survivors had tried to escape in the other directions, but were shot dead by the Vietnamese, causing red blood stains to splatter all around on the snow-covered ground.

Zhang Man Xu looked at those fallen Chinese survivors and his eyes flashed with a hint of madness as he laughed: "Haha!! Haha!! Chinese dogs must all die!! You all can go and accompany Yuan He in his death!!"

When the Chinese Sky Association saw their fellow countrymen being shot down, their eyes flashed with an incredible rage: "Bastards!! Damn fucking Vietnamese!!"

Yue Zhong looked at the wretched Chinese survivors, and a

frosty look came over his face. White Bones, which was beside him, immediately charged towards Zhang Man Xu's position.

In comparing the shooting efficiency and effectiveness, the Chinese Sky Association was severely lacking against the Vietnamese, as Zhang Man Xu had at least 10 snipers beside him. In the crossfire, members of the Chinese Sky Association would be shot down with their heads blasted.

White Bones charged out from the forests, and immediately attracted all the gunfire. It dashed through the snow, evading all the bullets, while making its way closer towards the Vietnamese.

When White Bones had charged out, Yue Zhong had activated his [Shadow Steps] at the same time, and made for the Vietnamese Army from another direction.

With the cover of the trees and various other terrain, using sniper rifles to attack the enemy would be too difficult. Killing them up close would be a whole lot quicker, and hence, Yue Zhong had not hesitated to charge towards the enemy side.

"So he's finally here? So fast! Chen Yao actually had such an expert under her?" Zhang Man Xu looked at White Bones rushing over, and his pupils narrowed. In the reports back at base, there had never been any details of such an expert.

In just a matter of 7 seconds, White Bones had already breached the Vietnamese side, and it exploded out with 7 sharp bone spikes, piercing the heads of 7 Vietnamese soldiers accurately and instantly killing them.

Peng!!

Just as White Bones had killed those 7 Vietnamese soldiers, a large piercing round from a sniper rifle slammed into White Bones' left shoulder, sending it flying back about 6-7 metres.

Zhang Man Xu looked at White Bones and laughed out coldly: "Heh! Fool! You think you can stand against the might of an elite

troop all by yourself? What an idiot!"

Those large piercing rounds were meant to deal with armored vehicles, if fired at a person, even with the protection of a Mutant Beast hide, the terrifying power would pierce the armor and cause heavy injuries to the person. If the Endurance of the body was not strong, then it was likely that the victim would be dead.

Zhang Man Xu was a dual-attribute Evolver, and his attributes were Agility and Endurance. That was how he had managed to evade the shot from Yue Zhong's Falcon Sniper. If Zhang Man Xu wasn't an Endurance-type, that single shot might have already caused his shoulder to be destroyed.

Just when everyone present thought that White Bones was sure to be dead, it leapt up from the ground, with a small hole in its left shoulder. The bone parts started to mend together visibly, before the hole disappeared.

After repairing that hole, White Bones flashed, and directly penetrated the defence line of the Vietnamese soldiers, its hands shooting out bone spikes, piercing the heads of 3 Vietnamese soldiers.

"Too strong!!" Witnessing this, all the Chinese Sky Association felt their heart turn cold, it was the first time that they saw a freak that could even survive an anti-armor round from a sniper rifle.

"What the hell!! Why is there such a monster!!" When those Vietnamese soldiers saw White Bones unleashing its carnage like a demon, their morale instantly plummeted.

On the other side, Yue Zhong had breached the location of the Vietnamese Army, and he wielded his huge Black Tooth Blade, instantly slicing a soldier in two at the waist, while his left hand sprayed with his .05 submachine gun, causing 2 Vietnamese soldiers who had unfortunately stuck their head out to be shot dead.

After easily dispatching those 3 Vietnamese soldiers, Yue Zhong shot forwards, before his face suddenly changed, and he leapt backwards rapidly.

Hong! Hong!!

Yue Zhong had just retreated, when the area he had just landed suddenly exploded with a huge bang, as countless shrapnel shot outwards.

The Vietnamese had actually planted a few landmines around, and because Yue Zhong had rushed in too quickly, he had set off the detonation by accident.

The Vietnamese who spent much of their time battling in the jungles were like fish in water, and knew how to make use of the terrain to set all sorts of traps.

As the dust cloud settled, the Bronze Spiritual Bell appeared on top of Yue Zhong, as he was enveloped by the green aura, completely shielding him from harm.

Seeing the uninjured Yue Zhong, the remaining Vietnamese soldiers in the forest began to fire at him.

Regardless of the type of defence, they would have a limit, as long as they could break the limit, they would be able to destroy the defence.

Yue Zhong eyed the countless trees and dense forest that concealed the 200 Vietnamese soldiers, and his eyes flashed coldly, before he raised his right hand, and activated his Devil Flame. A ball of fiery red flames shot out from his hand and began consuming the forest.

With the terrifying burning rate of the Devil Flame, the forest seemed to thaw itself from the snow almost instantaneously, and patches of trees began burning up. Yue Zhong continued to cover the forest with more Devil Flames.

In the middle of burning, the various traps meant to deal with

experts began exploding, and the resulting blasts and shrapnel immediately caused the deaths of a few soldiers within the vicinity.

Yue Zhong's Devil Flame had been enhanced to a +4 level, and with his high Spirit, the might of the Devil Flame was truly terrifying, that was the reason why the heat could cause the huge trees to be suddenly engulfed in flames.

"Damn it!! Why is there a fire!! Who's that bastard, how come he has such a scary ability! We can't let this go on!!" Zhang Man Xu saw Yue Zhong constantly setting things aflame, and his eyes began to show a hint of fear, as he brought out his Level 4 Treasure: Blood-Breaking Spear, and activated its ability, shooting towards Yue Zhong like a meteor.

Zhang Man Xu was an Agility and Endurance-based dual-attribute Evolver, and when he reached his maximum speed, it was beyond even that of Bai Xiao Sheng. In a span of a few breaths, he came charging at Yue Zhong, his spear aiming viciously at Yue Zhong's heart.

Yue Zhong activated his [Shadow Steps], using all his strength to parry the blow from Zhang Man Xu.

A frightful strength came travelling from Zhang Man Xu's Blood-Breaking Spear, and caused Yue Zhong to be sent flying back 3-4 metres.

Zhang Man Xu did not give Yue Zhong the slightest chance to rest, as he shot forwards like an arrow, and a number of shadows were formed behind the Blood-Breaking Spear, seemingly intent on harming Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong was no pushover himself, and the 2m-long Black Tooth Blade came blocking the blows on either of his sides, constantly parrying the spear.

Zhang Man Xu's eyes grew fiercer, when all of a sudden, a bright

light shone out of his right hand, and a sharp ice pick exploded on Yue Zhong's right leg, causing it to be frozen instantly.

Making use of that chance, Zhang Man Xu laughed grimly, and he grabbed his Blood-Breaking Spear to thrust towards Yue Zhong's head: "Go to hell! Damn Chinese dog!"

Chapter 461: Killing The Four Pillars

Right at this time, Yue Zhong's face remained stoic in the face of such an attack. With a single thought, a nether portal opened up in mid-air, and a sharp bone spike shot out from within, aiming for Zhang Man Xu's head.

"Damn it!"

Zhang Man Xu was after all an Agility-based Evolver, and his reaction was nimble. He lifted the spear, and directly parried the incoming bone spike.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed and he cast the [Art of Fear] on Zhang Man Xu, and a terrifying Spirit attack assaulted Zhang Man Xu's mind.

Right as the Spirit attack enveloped Zhang Man Xu, a beam of white light shone from his body, and he laughed at Yue Zhong coldly: "Spirit attack!?! All Spirit attacks are ineffective on me!! Chinese dog, today's your death day!!"

In the middle of his laugh, he suddenly felt a surge of danger rising in his heart, and he forcefully rolled to one side.

Alas, a strong gust of wind brushed past his body, as an incredibly sharp claw tore open the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide on his body, tearing a huge chunk of meat from his waist.

Zhang Man Xu felt a sharp stab of pain as he cast a look at the source of wind, and his eyes flashed with fear and shock: "A Type 3 Mutant Beast!! How is that possible? Can they possibly be tamed??"

While he was still stunned, Yue Zhong shot forwards like an arrow and slashed viciously towards Zhang Man Xu's head.

Zhang Man Xu's eyes flashed coldly, and he summoned all his energy and pushed his Spirit to the brim, even with his injuries, he forcefully used his spear to parry the attack from Yue Zhong.

However, from the right of Yue Zhong's strike, a sharp bone spike shot out like a meteor and pierced Zhang Man Xu's armor, went in one ear and out the other, nailing him onto a nearby tree!

Zhang Man Xu spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, his eyes opened wide as the light dimmed. The look in his eyes were of disbelief and unwillingness, before his body went limp and he died. Although he did possess a frightening amount of combat strength, under the combined attacks of Yue Zhong, White Bones and Lightning, he was still defeated.

Against Zhang Man Xu's strength, the entire Chinese Sky Association was helpless. Even Chen Yao, who was an Evolver herself, would be dealt with almost immediately if it had come to a close confrontation. It was because of his tyrannical strength that they had daringly brought only 30 members of the Wolf Fang Battalion and 200 elite members of the army to deal with Chen Yao. It was precisely because they had assumed it would be more than enough to deal with Chen Yao and the rest.

"Man Xu!!" The remaining Ling Luo of the 4 Pillars witnessed Zhang Man Xu being impaled by White Bones attack, and screamed out in sorrow and anger.

The 30 members of the Wolf Fang Battalion immediately charged for Yue Zhong, as many of them activated their abilities in a bid to crush Yue Zhong, White Bones and Lightning.

Yue Zhong's body flashed, and directly leapt towards the blazing forest.

White Bones evaded those threatening abilities, at the same time, charging towards the 30 members of the Wolf Fang Battalion itself.

Lightning immediately exhibited its mach-1 speed, and in a flash, all the abilities targeting it lost their aim.

In just that second, Lightning managed to land in the midst of the 30 Wolf Fang Battalion members. 3 of the Strength-based Evolvers

had their heads removed near instantaneously from their bodies as they fell to the ground, fresh blood flowing.

2 summoners who were in the midst of their summoning suddenly had slashes on their chests, reaching all the way to their lower half of their bodies. Blood and organs began to drop out onto the ground with sickening plops, as they screamed in agony.

4 Enhancers who were concealed and preparing to cast curses also did not escape, as their heads were also separated from their bodies in a single swipe, and the entire casting array disappeared.

Lightning ravaged about within the midst of those Wolf Fang Battalion members with incredible speed, leaving the unfortunate soldiers with no chance to react before being killed. The only ones who managed to barely see Lightning's movements were Agility-based Enhancers that had activated their abilities, but even then, they could only catch sight of it's shadow, and were powerless to stop Lightning's attacks.

The entire group of Wolf Fang Battalion soldiers was wiped out completely.

On the other side, White Bones had directly leapt into the midst of the ordinary Vietnamese army, and began unleashing carnage and hell on those soldiers. Everywhere it passed, its bone spikes would shoot out and the Vietnamese whose hands were filled with Chinese blood were all nailed to nearby burning trees.

White Bones, Lightning and Yue Zhong had attracted the entire attention of the Vietnamese Army, and seizing this opportunity, Gan Tao and Pan Jin Yong led the elite members of the Chinese Sky Association to charge in and slaughter the Vietnamese soldiers.

Under the joint attacks of so many parties, the morale and fighting spirit of the Vietnamese soldiers were beginning to crumble, as they started to escape towards various directions. These were the elite members of the army no doubt, but even they

would be afraid of death. When they saw that the chances for a victory were slim, they would likewise seek to retreat and live to see another day.

"Damn it!! Damn it!! How did it become like this!! Damn Chinese dogs!!" Ling Luo turned to run, as he mixed about with the rest of the soldiers and tried to escape. The only thing on his mind was to hurry and report to Wuyan Hong about the encounter they had today.

All the soldiers were running, and they knew that with their actions towards those Chinese, they would not expect mercy from the enemy.

Gan Tao hollered out with bloodshot eyes: "Kill these bastards!!"

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

The entire Chinese Sky Association roared out in unison and chased them down, hacking and slashing any escaping Vietnamese soldier.

There were a few brave souls amongst those retreating soldiers, upon seeing that there was no escape, they turned around in a bid to fight it out. However, the moment they turned, Yue Zhong would pick them off, shooting their heads off.

With that intense hunt, the remaining Vietnamese soldiers would be killed one by one.

"I won't die!! I will definitely make it out alive!" Ling Luo was running like mad as he gritted his teeth, activated his [Forest Ranger Transformation] skill, and transformed into a Forest Ranger as he leapt towards a tree.

Peng!!

Ling Luo had just moved, when Yue Zhong raised his gun and fired a single shot at his skull instantly blowing it apart, and

splattering his fresh brains on the tree ahead. Another member of the 4 Pillars of the Vietnamese Army was taken out just like that.

Gan Tao's body was covered in perspiration, as he ran up to Yue Zhong while breathing heavily, and a look of utmost respect: "Boss!! Every single soldier has been taken care of! What's our next move?"

By this time, all the upper echelon members had gathered around Yue Zhong's side, and as they looked at him, their eyes were filled with respect as well. This battle could be said to have been single-handedly decided by this man and the expert beside him that had rushed into the enemy's side and caused widespread collapse. Even more so, this man had a Type 3 Mutant Beast under his control.

Yue Zhong surveyed the scene filled with numerous Vietnamese corpses and spoke coldly: "Waiting for others to move has never been my style!! Gan Tao!! Gather the troops and follow me!!"

Gan Tao became extremely excited and replied: "Yes, Boss!!"

=====

Luo Cun Town was a small town about 30km away from Lang Son City, and in this small town, there were 4,000 Vietnamese survivors as well as a battalion of soldiers stationed there.

The fact that Luo Cun Town had been assigned a battalion to be stationed was because it had an incredibly important resource - Coal! There were various coal mines of varying sizes here. In an apocalyptic world where fuel and oil was lacking, coal was the next best alternative. It could be used to provide warmth, and to power electricity. That Lang Son City could still be lit at night, showed that this Luo Cun Town had decent amount of coal.

Yue Zhong stood on high ground as he looked down coldly at Luo Cun Town: "I'll kill my way in first! Wait for my signal, and you guys proceed!!"

The strength of the Chinese Sky Association was still weak, and

Yue Zhong did not want to risk suffering casualties. Based on his current strength, if he were to suddenly unleash his power, taking out a battalion was not an issue.

"Yes!" The many experts of the Chinese Sky Association replied with respect. They had already seen the might of this man for themselves. Even without them, Yue Zhong and his team would have been enough to wipe out the 200 Vietnamese soldiers that Zhang Man Xu had brought. With such a powerful leader, it was a blessing and honour to them.

"Let's go!" Yue Zhong then held Ming Jia Jia's hands as they walked towards the direction of Luo Cun Town.

"Who are you people?" There were 8 Vietnamese soldiers on guard duty at the entrance, and upon seeing Yue Zhong and Ming Jia Jia approaching, 2 of the soldiers stepped up to question them.

With a thought, a nether hole appeared in mid air, and 7 sharp spike shot out explosively, piercing the heads of 7 of the Vietnamese soldiers, killing them immediately.

With a flip of Yue Zhong's hand, the huge Black Tooth Blade appeared and was pressed against the neck of the Vietnamese soldier, as he spoke coldly: "Bring me to the army camp!"

Although the Chinese Sky Association had no way of contending against the Vietnamese Army and Wuyan Hong, it was not impossible to gain some intelligence. Hence, Yue Zhong knew that within the Luo Cun Town, there was a battalion stationed here.

"Alright!! I'll bring you!! Don't kill me!!" The Vietnamese soldier's eyes flashed with a hint of fear as he spoke out.

Ming Jia Jia provided the translation to Yue Zhong.

"Go!" Yue Zhong coldly barked, and the Black Tooth Blade in his hands disappeared.

However, White Bones had stepped out from the nether realm and stood behind the Vietnamese soldier, a sharp bone spike

pressed against his heart.

Under the threat, the Vietnamese soldier led them along the roads of the town.

When the soldier came to the army camp, his eyes flashed with a strange glint, as he suddenly hollered: "There's an emey!! Everybody!! The Chinese dog has killed his way in!!"

"What heroics!!" Yue Zhong exclaimed coldly.

White Bones extended his bone spike, immediately piercing the heart of the Vietnamese soldier.

The soldier revealed a satisfied grin, before slumping to the ground.

At this time, countless Vietnamese soldiers surrounded the place.

Chapter 462: Human Firepower

The Vietnamese soldiers saw Yue Zhong directly executing their friend, and they instantly became enraged as they fired at him.

With a thought, Yue Zhong summoned his 10m long Type 2 Green Jiao-Snake and it appeared out of thin air. As soon as it did it opened its huge jaws and spat out a thick fog of poison gas.

When the green poisonous gas traveled through the camp, 8 of the Vietnamese soldiers who came into contact with it began dissolving rapidly, turning into a puddle of flesh and blood on the ground, but not before shrieking out with hair-raising screams.

Countless bullets turned to fire at the Green Jiao-Snake, but we're deflected off. Ordinary rifle bullets had no means of harming any Type 2 Mutant Beast with a strong defence.

Ming Jia Jia pointed at the Vietnamese soldiers, as 5 Type 2 Shadow Wolves pounced out from the shadows and lunged at them, ripping their throats out.

White Bones braved the onslaught of bullets as it breached the crowd of humans in 3 seconds, its bone blades dancing about, piercing numerous Vietnamese soldiers through their heads.

Yue Zhong wielded a grenade launcher with one hand, and a .05 type submachine gun in the other as he followed behind the Green Jiao-Snake, and they headed further into the camp.

Any Vietnamese soldier that stepped out to face the Green Jiao-Snake would be corroded almost instantly, or met with a bone spike through their head. No one had any means to stand against the assault from Yue Zhong's team.

An elite sniper scrambled to get atop a construction site, as he pulled out a Bartlett sniper and aimed at Yue Zhong. He was one of the top 10 snipers under Wuyan Hong, and was frequently concealed to deal with any experts that came meddling. He had

even dealt with Enhancers above Level 40 before.

In this post-apocalyptic world, snipers were terrifying experts. There were many experts that could possess higher enhancement levels than snipers, but they would still be at the mercy of a single shot from any sniper.

The sniper forcefully suppressed his killing intent, as he aimed at Yue Zhong, steadied his breathing, and pulled the trigger.

A single armor-piercing round from the Enhancer-hunting expert came streaming through the air towards Yue Zhong's head.

Just as Yue Zhong's head was about to be shot, the Bronze Spiritual Bell floated out, and released the layer of green barrier, defending against that attack.

Yue Zhong swiftly turned and locked on to the sniper on top of the construction site, and he immediately raised his right hand and fired at the location.

Following the sound of the gunshot, the sniper's head was blasted apart.

"Chinese dog!! You deserve to die!!" Right at this time, following some angry roars, the earth split, as a number of sharp spikes rose from the ground towards Yue Zhong and Ming Jia Jia.

Yue Zhong grabbed Ming Jia Jia up and dodged to one side, with the help of his Danger Perception. Countless sharp spikes brushed past his body, but did not actually harm him.

Suddenly, the glass windows of a house nearby shattered, and 2 Agility-type Enhancers charged out, possessing the speed of S2s, wielding daggers as they made for Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, his right hand moving in a blur as he opened fire at the Enhancer on the right, before moving on to the left Enhancer within milliseconds.

Following the almost consecutive gunshots, the 2 Enhancers

found themselves blasted apart, fresh blood flowing everywhere.

This was Yue Zhong's current speed, 18 times that of a normal human, and if he were to unleash the full extent of it, he could easily do many things in a single second.

2 other Enhancers from the Vietnamese army ran towards 2 structures, but before they could even act, Yue Zhong had fired another 2 shots, ending their lives prematurely.

4 other soldiers who were hiding within a small alley wanted to leap out to attack Yue Zhong, when they suddenly came under the attack of 4 Type 2 Shadow Wolves, their throats bitten off.

Elsewhere, White Bones flashed about, as the spikes shooting out from its body continued to nail many of the soldiers to walls. It waved its huge axe about, slicing any unfortunate soldier that came in its path into two.

In the Great Vietnam Empire's Army, every base would have an elite team of experts made up of Enhancers. These Enhancers were all of better constitution and physique than ordinary soldiers, and with the strictest of training, they would become top-notch special forces or assault forces.

Within this Luo Cun Town, there was a commander leading the team of Enhancer elites called Wu Chen Yi, and as he witnessed Yue Zhong slaughtering his subordinates like chickens and dogs, his entire body was trembling with fury as he cursed: "Fucking Chinese dog!! Damn beast!!"

Wu Chen Yi's vice-commander Yang Zhi Qing had an anxious expression as he asked: "What do we do captain?! Our brothers are being slaughtered by that person!!"

Wu Chen Yi spat coldly: "Are the brothers gathered?"

Yang Zhi Qing replied: "They've assembled!! Awaiting your orders."

Wu Chen Yi's eyes flashed with a resolute gaze as he said: "Then

follow me!! For the Great Vietnam Empire! Regardless of the price we pay, we have to kill that Chinese dog!! This will all be for the glory of the Vietnam Empire!!"

Yang Zhi Qing's eyes were also ablaze with a heated gaze as he saluted Wu Chen Yi: "Everything will be for the Great Vietnam Empire!!"

Wuyan Hong led the Great Vietnam Empire's Army for the sake of the glory of Vietnam, and to become the strongest country in the world. With that lofty ambition, countless passionate and hot-blooded Vietnamese were willing to bend over backwards and spill blood to achieve that goal.

Everyone had their strengths and weaknesses. Wuyan Hong was a racist towards the Chinese, and wanted to enslave all of them, treating them as the stepping stone towards greatness. To the Chinese, he's a slaughterer, a devil! However, to the Vietnamese, Wuyan Hong was their hero. It was just like the Japanese war criminals in the Yasukuni Shrine. To the Chinese, those war criminals were butchers who had committed horrific acts, however, to the Japanese, they were people who had given their lives in service to their country.

With Wu Chen Yi's resolute decision made, 40 Enhancers that were above Level 20 followed closely behind him, as they made their way towards Yue Zhong and his team.

While most of the Enhancers that were above level 30 were drafted into the Wolf Fang Battalion, there was a huge majority of experts that were above Level 20 as well. These were assigned to the various camps.

"It's time!!" Yue Zhong casually shot another soldier at point blank range, before pulling out his flare gun to fire into the sky.

"It's the signal!! Brothers, let us charge!!" Gan Tao, who was hiding with his men surrounding Luo Cun Town, began to shout, his eyes flashing with a bloodthirsty gaze!

After speaking, Gao Tao immediately leapt forward and charged towards the direction of Luo Cun Town.

Following closely behind were 500 Chinese Sky Association members wielding rifles, their eyes filled with hatred and fury as they charged towards Luo Cun Town. There were many women and children amongst this huge group, but every single one of them had the same look in their eyes.

In this foreign land, Yue Zhong's troops had been lacking, hence regardless of age or gender, he had grouped them up together to train, in order to push them more. In the event of deployment, even if they were to die, they would go down with their enemies.

These Chinese survivors were largely formed from people rescued by Chen Yao and Yue Zhong from the hands of the Vietnamese. They had suffered plenty under the treatment of the Vietnamese, and by now, regardless of their gender or age, they had been trained to follow orders without question. In this new world, without power, the weak would only get bullied.

Under Gan Tao's lead, 500 Chinese Sky Association members killed their way into Luo Cun Town. Because of Yue Zhong's advance charge, the soldiers of the Chinese Sky Association didn't meet much resistance as they charged in.

Inside Luo Cun Town, although they had come under sudden attack, the brave Vietnamese began to rally and rise to clash against Gan Tao and his troops with whatever weapons they could lay their hands on. Many women and children took up arms as well to engage Gan Tao and his men.

Inside Luo Cun Town, all the Vietnamese knew they were already at odds against the Chinese, and both sides would not rest till the other was dead, and hence, almost everyone started to get embroiled in the fighting.

However, melee weapons and bows could not compare to rifles and guns, and those Vietnamese who were rushing to engage were

instantly gunned down. Groups of Vietnamese laid in their own blood as they groaned and moaned.

In the ensuing gunfire, over 400 Vietnamese fell, and shrieked in pain. The bravado and courage that propelled them to die with their comrades began to ebb away together with their lives.

The majority of the Vietnamese began to lose their fighting will and spirit, and tried to make their escape.

"Attack!! Destroy the Vietnam army, victory is ours!!" Gan Tao gunned down a Vietnamese woman who was running towards him as he hollered loudly.

While this group of Vietnamese survivors had the courage, their combat prowess was simply lacking. Facing Gan Tao and the rest would only mean death. Only the battalion of soldiers would be considered a threat, and if Gan Tao and the rest could deal with that battalion, there would be no one in Luo Cun Town that could threaten them.

"Kill!!"

"Kill!!"

"Kill!!"

The warriors from the Chinese Sky Associations were all overcome with bloodlust as they shouted and followed Gan Tao towards the camp.

In the direction of the camp, Yue Zhong had killed another group of Vietnamese soldiers, when Wu Chen Yi appeared in front of him together with the remaining 40-plus members of the experts troop.

"For the glory of the Vietnam Empire!! Everyone, charge!!! Kill him!!" Wu Chen Yi eyed Yue Zhong and bellowed.

The 40 experts of Level 20 and above unleashed their abilities all at once, firing them at Yue Zhong from all directions.

Amongst those Enhancers, 90% of them were Strength-type or

Agility-type, while the other 10% of the people possessed special Level 3 Skills. The 30 of them who were strength or agility-based were stronger than most ordinary people, and they all wielded some weapons as they charged towards Yue Zhong.

"A bunch of fools!" Yue Zhong looked on as the 40 experts came charging at him, and he laughed coldly, flipping his hands, and a 12.7mm heavy machine gun appeared in his hands.

Yue Zhong held the heavy machine gun and fired wildly at the 40 Enhancers.

The 12.7mm bullets rained down on those 40 Enhancers like a torrential pour.

An Agility-based Enhancer was immediately punched with a 12.7mm, and his entire body was torn apart at the waist.

A Strength-based Enhancer had just shot forward, when one of the rounds pierced his neck, and his head was separated from his body.

A Spirit-based Enhancer managed to conjure up a [Psychic Barrier] that deflected a number of rounds, when his face began to contort, the barrier disintegrated, and he spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, before his body was riddled with more rounds.

Yue Zhong had Strength 7 times that of a normal person, and the recoil from the gun was negligent to him. It was able to exhibit its terrifying might, as it threatened to swallow up the lives of those 40 Enhancers. In just the blink of an eye, 15 Enhancers were ravaged by the line of fire.

The remaining Enhancers who managed to react faster dove for cover, not daring to reveal their positions. 15 of their comrades had been wiped out instantly by Yue Zhong, causing them to be filled with a fear of him.

Wu Chen Yi's eyes were bloodshot as he cursed out loud: "Fucking shit! How is he so good at gun wielding?!"

Most high-levelled Enhancers would focus on casting their own abilities, and not place such importance on the usage of modern weapons. However, Yue Zhong was different, not only did he emphasize training of his gun control, he did not neglect the research into modern and advanced weaponry.

After all, the various skills were means of killing as well. The might of a fireball would not be able to compare against the destructive might of a rocket. Furthermore, the usage of skills expended Stamina and Spirit, on the battlefield, it was a downside of abilities.

The remaining 25 Enhancers hid behind their covers, when suddenly 5 Shadow Wolves pounced out from the shadows and found their targets, ripping their throats out.

On the other side, White Bones suddenly appeared from nowhere, twirling with its bone blades, piercing the head of an Enhancer.

"These fellows are truly troublesome!!" Yue Zhong eyed those Vietnamese Enhancers as he frowned. If these soldiers were to engage him in a face-to-face battle, he had the confidence to deal with them quickly. However, if they continued to hide behind cover, it was extremely frustrating to have to deal with them. If these fellows were not dealt with cleanly, destroying the command would be harder as well.

Chapter 463: Killing Wu Chen Yi!

Yue Zhong eyed the Vietnamese soldiers hiding behind cover, and the heavy machine gun in his hands disappeared, before he pulled out two .05 submachine guns and charged forwards.

In just 5 seconds, Yue Zhong had ignored the various Vietnamese experts hidden behind cover, as he charged out of the area and made his way towards the command post.

"Damn it!! He's intending to destroy our command post!!" Wu Chen Yi's heart turned cold, and immediately shouted out: "That Chinese dog wants to destroy our command centre! Stop him!!"

If the Vietnamese command post was destroyed, the entire town would be without a leader, and to this small town, it was equivalent to its destruction.

Under Wu Chen Yi's orders, the Vietnamese experts had no choice but to extract themselves from cover, and charge towards Yue Zhong. Amongst them, there were many who were well-versed in the usage of daggers and blades, and compared to guns, they placed their faith in their weapons of choice.

There were some others who still raised their guns and fired continuously at Yue Zhong, however, it was ineffective as the bullets just bounced off the green aura of protection surrounding Yue Zhong.

The defences of the Bronze Spiritual Bell was effective against normal bullets, if one wanted to break past the defence, it would take at least a 100,000 rounds.

Yue Zhong saw the soldiers coming out from their covers and turned around, the 2 .05 submachine guns in his hands firing spitting fire.

Under the rain of bullets, the soldiers were all struck down and started to groan in pain.

High-level Mutant Beast hides were valuable possessions in Vietnam, and only the elite troops under Wuyan Hong could get to equip them. Other than that, only those commanders or soldiers who had contributed heavily to the cause and racked up merits would get the chance to do on such hides.

"Shit!! Damn Chinese dog!!" Wu Chen Yi watched as Yue Zhong easily annihilated his troops, and he could not tolerate it anymore as his eyes turned bloodshot, and he activated his ability [Electromagnetic Manipulation], as a bolt of electricity flashed in his right hand, and he flung it towards Yue Zhong like a bomb, together with a handful of ball bearings

Wu Chen Yi's [Electromagnetic Manipulation] ability had been raised to Level 3, and under the strong effects, ball bearings could exhibit a terrifying power similar to cannons. A single ball bearing could destroy even an armored vehicle.

When Wu Chen Yi had just appeared, Yue Zhong had felt a sense of threat from him, and in a flash, he disappeared behind cover like a spectre.

Those ball bearings that were charged by the [Electromagnetic Manipulation] exploded upon impact on the wall behind Yue Zhong, causing multiple fist-sized holes.

Right at this time, a Shadow Wolf came leaping out from behind Wu Chen Yi, lunging to take a bite out of his neck.

"Pei! Such petty tricks are useless against me!!" Wu Chen Yi snorted coldly, as a cold glint flashed past his eyes, and his body seemed to be charged by electricity, enveloping himself. The Shadow Wolf that was near his body was instantly electrocuted by the high voltage, as it started to smoke, before disappearing from the world.

The Type 2 Shadow Wolf was extremely sneaky in its movements, and was hard to defend against. Without ample protection, Wu Chen Yi might have already met his maker.

However, since he already knew of the dangers earlier after witnessing it, he had prepared himself, and now, the Type 2 Shadow Wolves could pose no threat to him.

Wu Chen Yi looked towards the direction where Yue Zhong hid himself and urged: "Chinese dog!! You'll still have a chance if you surrender now!! As long as you surrender, we will not pursue the past! Furthermore, I will seek for Wuyan Hong to pardon you, and allow you to join our Vietnamese Army, becoming an honoured member of our race. At that time, gold, women, and power, whatever you want, you will get them! This is Vietnam, just you alone would not cause any huge waves here. Even if you try to hold out till the end, there's only death that awaits. Join us, and become part of our Vietnam, only then, will you get a chance at life!"

Wu Chen Yi could smell danger from Yue Zhong. This was the same type of danger that he could sense from Wuyan Hong.

Wuyan Hong had personally given rise to the Great Vietnam Empire, after countless battles, any enemy who had gone against him were reduced to bones. His entire body radiated an extremely cold and heavy killing intent. Initially, when Wu Chen Yi had exchanged a few blows with Wuyan Hong for practice, he had almost been killed for real. Hence, Wu Chen Yi became like a lapdog, and only sought to fight for the glory of Vietnam.

This time, Wu Chen Yi had felt the same type of danger emitted from a person other than Wuyan Hong.

"My answer is... To kill you all!!" Yue Zhong laughed coldly and pulled out his heavy machine gun, leaping out from behind cover and intending to spray at Wu Chen Yi.

"Bullets are useless against me!!" Wu Chen Yi saw the dense barrage of bullets and laughed coldly, waving his hands, as a strange barrier made of electricity appeared in front of him. Facing that layer of electricity, even a cannon would be blocked, or deflected, as long as it hadn't explode.

The countless bullets were stopped by the shield, before flying back towards Yue Zhong in the next moment.

Those very same bullets shot towards Yue Zhong before being deflected by Yue Zhong's own green barrier made by the Bronze Spiritual Bell.

Wu Chen Yi had a smug look, but at the next moment, a feeling of danger rose in his heart, as he hurriedly rolled towards the right.

A sharp bone spike pierced the spot that Wu Chen Yi had just been on an instant before, as 2 other sharp bone spikes continued to shoot towards the dodging body of Wu Chen Yi, nailing him to the ground.

White Bones followed up with a vicious swing on its huge axe as it leapt out the window like a demon, swinging down on Wu Chen Yi's head, cleaving it in two.

"Captain!!!" Yang Zi Qing let out an anguished howl, as both of his hands slapped the ground, and a number of vines extended rapidly towards White Bones.

The eyes of White Bones flashed, as it pointed towards Yang Zhi Qing, and a sharp bone spike shot out swiftly from its finger. The bone pierced one of the vines, and penetrated Yang Zhi Qing's head.

Yang Zhi Qing spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, his eyes dimming, before becoming a lifeless corpse.

The vines began to disappear.

After White Bones had dealt with the commander of the elite battalion, it continued to make its way for the other experts, slaughtering them one by one.

"Ah!!"

"Save me!!"

Wu Chen Yi and Yang Zhi Qing had died, and the rest of the expert battalion began to lose their fighting morale, as they tried to escape in various directions. White Bones chased after them doggedly, like a death god that would not stop reaping their lives.

Yue Zhong himself carried Ming Jia Jia as he made his way to the command centre.

Hong!! Hong!!

Following the sounds of some rockets, the Green Jiao-Python was finally blasted to pieces by the Vietnamese Army that it was entangled with, before it slowly dissolved into light.

"Is the Green Jiao-Python finally killed? As expected, the strength of an army is truly terrifying! I must quickly destroy their command centre!" Yue Zhong saw the Green Jiao-Python disappearing and thought quietly.

The defences of those huge Mutant Beasts were truly terrifying, but their movement was relatively slow. As long as enough firepower could be utilized, a Type 2 Mutant Beast could be taken down by a decent sized army.

Even if it was a Type 3 Mutant Beast, with enough modern weaponry and time, they could be destroyed as well.

"Kill him!!"

Yue Zhong had just run for 5 seconds when a company of soldiers appeared in front of him to stop him, as they began firing immediately.

The command centre officer of Luo Cun Town was intelligent as well, the moment he knew there was an expert that had infiltrated, he immediately deployed a company of soldiers to ensure his own safety.

Yue Zhong's body shot forwards like a beam of light and breached the line of defence. Waving both his hands, 2 terrifying tornadoes of Devil Flame began forming, threatening to envelop

everything as they moved towards the soldiers.

Hong!!

Hong!!

Within the blazes of those 2 fiery tornadoes, all the grenades and rockets instantly caught fire and exploded, and the resulting blast consumed the lives of all the 30+ soldiers present.

With the cover of the fiery tornadoes, Yue Zhong continued his advance. In a matter of seconds, he arrived in front of the command centre.

Yue Zhong then proceeded to yank the door open, and instantly his expression turned before he shot backwards hastily.

Hong!!

Following an intense earth-shaking explosion, the entire command centre was enveloped by a huge blaze, with the terrifying flames travelling outwards in all directions.

The Vietnamese soldiers had set a trap in a bid to take down Yue Zhong.

"Foolish Chinese dog! Just a brute!! In this world, only those with intelligence are the ones truly in power!!" The commander of Luo Cun Town, Wu Ji looked on from afar as the fires consumed Yue Zhong, laughing coldly.

One of the intelligence officers immediately stepped forwards to bootlick: "This was all possible due to Commander's amazing plan. Of the entire Great Vietnamese Empire, other than Wuyan Hong, you are the smartest!"

Wu Ji laughed smugly: "The Emperor is a man of both intelligence and skills, he is beyond us mortals! I'm naturally not worthy! But yes, other people are worth shit to me."

Right as the 2 of them were continuing their banter, the dust dispersed and a green silhouette shot towards them.

"Commander! He's not dead!"

"He's still alive!!"

Seeing the green silhouette lunging towards them from the dust that had yet to settle, a number of the soldiers beside Wu Ji immediately turned pale, and tried to escape in various directions. They had even forsaken their commander.

Wu Ji's face fell as he turned and tried to run away as well.

Chapter 464: Revenge!

Yue Zhong's speed was indeed fearsome, and in a mere 2 seconds, he had reached Wu Ji. He casually swung his blade, and sliced a Vietnamese soldier blocking the way in Twain.

As Yue Zhong had evaded the blast, only a minor force from the shockwave had affected the defences of the Bronze Spiritual Bell. It did greatly wear down the defences, but failed to injure Yue Zhong in the slightest.

If it wasn't for the protection of the Bronze Spiritual Bell, Yue Zhong would have suffered greatly from that blast.

Wu Ji saw his subordinate being chopped in two, and his legs instantly gave way as he grovelled on the ground, begging: "I'm the 14th Battalion's Commander Wu Ji of the Great Vietnam Empire Army!! I surrender!! Please spare my life!!"

Yue Zhong's blade stopped at the neck, short of slicing Wu Ji's head off. Wu Ji immediately looked at Yue Zhong and his eyes flashed with fear: "Yes! Yes!! Sir!! Let me take out my walkie talkie!! I will inform them to surrender immediately!"

Yue Zhong replied coolly: "Fine!!"

Wu Ji's eyes then flashed with an insidious look, as he reached for a grenade and revealed a grim smile, pulling the pin out forcefully: "Long live the Great Vietnam Empire!"

Yue Zhong immediately kicked out furiously at Wu Ji, sending him flying back dozens of metres.

With a bang, Wu Ji was blasted into pieces, with countless shrapnel pieces shooting outwards in all directions.

Although this Wu Ji liked to hear fawning words, but in crucial times, he was truly decisive and ruthless, and willing to sacrifice his life for his country.

Yue Zhong looked at the mess that was Wu Ji, and thought to himself: "These extremists are truly fucking tough to deal with!!"

Those extreme racists were cruel and sadistic towards their enemies, but at the same time, for the sake of their ideals and ambitions, they could be equally harsh on themselves. That was why they were hard to deal with.

Wuyan Hong could put together such a strong force because he had so many extremists supporting his ambitions and ideals. Both sides relied on each other to grow and expand. If Wuyan Hong wasn't an extremist himself, he would find it hard to obtain such loyal subordinates.

"Kill him!!"

"Kill that Chinese dog!! We can't let him go back alive!!"

Wu Ji's death had ignited the fury of his subordinates, as they began to bellow loudly, having lost all reason. Some began to fire multiple rockets at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong eyed the rockets and the soldiers, before pushing his speed to the limit, with the help of his Danger Perception, he continually dodged the incoming projectiles.

A number of rockets landed behind Yue Zhong and detonated, causing dust and debris to explode outwards. However, not a single one managed to graze Yue Zhong.

Such rockets truly had the capabilities of killing Yue Zhong, however, as long as they did not hit, he would be fine. He had always been enhancing his Agility, precisely so he could deal with such situations.

Yue Zhong's body flashed, as he weaved in and out of the blast radius, nearing the soldiers with each step. His .05 submachine guns appeared in both his hands, and he began firing, taking down the soldiers one by one.

With Yue Zhong unleashing his maximum speed, the ordinary

Vietnamese soldiers found it hard to follow his movements, and every second, a soldier would be taken out. Just as the death rate crossed the 40% mark, the elite troop of soldiers began to collapse, each of them breaking away to escape for their lives.

Ming Jia Jia activated her ability, this time summoning 6 Shadow Wolves, and they charged forwards with a speed equivalent to a Type 2 Lightning. They chased down the escaping soldiers, pouncing on them before tearing their throats out.

With the chase of the Shadow Wolves, in just 15 minutes, the entire troop was wiped out, leaving behind a ground strewn with corpses.

The patrol forces and expert forces were all taken down by Yue Zhong and his team, and the remaining company of soldiers managed to hold out for a while more. Yue Zhong led White Bones, Lightning and Ming Jia Jia to charge over, causing the soldiers to scramble for their lives.

The Vietnamese survivors within Luo Cun Town were filled with fear as they tried to escape as well, and the entire town was in chaos. In the ensuing mess, a number of them trampled over their own fellow countrymen.

"Boss!! Everything's stabilized!! What do we do now?" Gan Tao came to Yue Zhong's side, his entire body drenched in blood, as he asked excitedly.

As Gan Tao looked at Yue Zhong, there was a look of idolization and veneration. This man in front had not only saved him, but given him strength as well. The moment he returned, he had led them on a successful conquest against a town filled with elite Vietnamese forces.

When Chen Yao had led the Chinese Sky Association, they simply did not dare to go against the Vietnamese army. The moment there was a clash, the Chinese Sky Association would be defeated without a doubt. However, right now, Yue Zhong had led them to

assault and come out victorious. In one single operation, his position was elevated even higher. In the apocalyptic world, people were more willing to follow a leader that led them to victories rather than a beauty.

Yue Zhong's expression turned frosty, and he gave an order filled with killing intent: "Kill!! Kill until they become obedient! Make sure to get everyone's hands filled with those Vietnamese animals' blood!"

Hearing those orders, Gan Tao's eyes flashed fiercely, and he licked his lips excitedly as he replied: "Yes!! Boss!!"

"Brothers... Let us charge!!" Gan Tao hollered to his subordinates, as they charged towards the mayhem in town.

In a flash, countless gunshots rang out in the town centre, and whoever stood in the way of Gan Tao and his men, regardless of gender or age, they were all shot down.

Without warning, nor any shouts to alert them, just gunshots! Gunfire rang out continuously, causing anyone who stood to fall in their own pools of blood.

The entire Luo Cun Town seemed to be a depiction of hell itself, as a huge number of Vietnamese laid groaning and moaning on the ground in pools of their own blood.

Chen Yao could not take it anymore and she came to Yue Zhong's side to plead with him. "Please stop! Please, Yue Zhong!! These ordinary Vietnamese folk are innocent!!"

Yue Zhong eyed Chen Yao, frowning slightly as he spoke slowly: "Chen Yao!! This is war!! On the battlefield, there are no innocent parties! If they don't die, they will become future troops, doctors, labourers, and tools of weapons aimed at us!"

Chen Yao had after all gone through some hardships together with Yue Zhong, and he was willing to explain to her. If it had been another woman who had nothing to do with him, he would have

swept her to one side without bothering so much.

Chen Yao opened her eyes wide as she pleaded with Yue Zhong: "We can take them in as slaves! Turn them to our strength!!"

Chen Yao had witnessed the atrocities that the Vietnamese had committed against the Chinese, it was just that she was still benevolent in nature, and wasn't willing to watch all these Vietnamese people die. As to condemning them to be slaves, it was considered a light punishment for the sins that some of them had committed. Although she was kind, having undergone molding as a leader, she still knew to seek beneficial solutions.

And to Chen Yao now, she could see that only a beneficial proposition would appease the furious Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed in cold fury as he rejected her proposal: "No! We don't have a stable establishment, and cannot afford to hold this many Vietnamese. The only thing we can do now is to destroy this town, and not let Wuyan Hong gain any further benefits from here!"

In this area, Yue Zhong had not gained a foothold, if he were to bring the 4,000 people to the Daluo Mountains, the moment Wuyan Hong deployed some troops, they would be easily found. If they had a base, he could still consider resettling the 4,000 some Vietnamese, and make use of them.

Chen Yao stared at Yue Zhong for a while, before trying once more weakly: "Yue Zhong!! If you pass this order, everyone will view you as cruel and merciless! It would be detrimental to any future expansion."

Yue Zhong laughed blandly: "Chen Yao! My reputation isn't exactly saint-like! In Guilin City, my enemies have termed me as a tyrant! A cruel tyrant! I couldn't care less about how others view me.

The victor is king, as long as I am victorious, I am king! History

would be written by me! If I fail, everything is for naught. Having an undesirable reputation is nothing."

Tyrant! That was the nickname that people who were disagreeable with Yue Zhong coined in private. Even after cleaning a few times, there were still some parties not happy with his rule. It was just that these factions could not do anything about Yue Zhong's iron-clad grip.

Chen Yao looked at this man who stood at the apex and sighed, before she gritted her teeth and thought silently: "Then let me be the one to pass this order!!"

"Pan Jin Yong!!" Chen Yao summoned him over.

"Is anything the matter, Holy Maiden Empress?" Pan Jin Yong came over and asked. Chen Yao was after all a top authority figure amongst the members of the Chinese Sky Association.

Chen Yao hesitated a while, before a look of resolution flashed in her eyes: "Convey my orders! The entire Luo Cun Town is to be wiped out, not even the dogs or chickens are to be spared! Avenge our fallen comrades and countrymen!"

Pan Jin Yong's eyes glimmered with emotion as he replied fervently: "Yes! Empress!!"

Pan Jin Yong was filled with hatred towards the Vietnamese and when he heard this ruthless order, he became incredibly excited.

The moment Chen Yao gave the order, the entire Luo Cun Town was once again dyed in blood, as many Vietnamese were captured and executed. Blood flowed freely, as screams and cries of terror filled the night, while the ground was slowly filled with corpses.

After annihilating the entire Luo Cun Town of its survivors, the various coal mines were destroyed, the buildings were set on fire, and smoke billowed towards the skies.

Chapter 465: Pen!

"Animals!! Bunch of fucking animals that deserve to die!!" Within a manor in Lang Son City, Wuyan Hong was currently enraged, as he slammed down viciously on a glass table, causing it to shatter into countless shards on the ground.

The deaths of the 4,000+ Vietnamese survivors within Luo Cun Town had thoroughly infuriated Wuyan Hong. It was the first major setback that he had suffered.

In Vietnam, Wuyan Hong was often involved in clashes with the other various factions, but they were seldom cruel towards their own people. After all, humans were the most precious resource now, without sufficient people, a power would find it hard to expand.

Time and time again, this unknown assailant had single-handedly caused the deaths of numerous Vietnamese, counting the previous close to thousand survivors, over 5,000 survivors had fallen at this unknown assailant's hands. Wuyan Hong's faction had only 150,000 people, and it was like 3% of his total power. How could this not enrage him?

As to Wuyan Hong himself slaughtering over 2,000 Chinese and foreigners, he simply did not put them to heart. It was always the case for humans, one will only pay attention to the shortcomings of others, but will nearly forever be oblivious to oneself's.

A civil-looking man with spectacles and a head of long hair as well as skin more tender than a woman's, spoke up and consoled Wuyan Hong: "Emperor, please be appeased!! Those Chinese simply lack human nature!! Don't anger yourself and agitate your body just because of them!"

This particular man was called Zhao Yuan Shuang, and he was the most trusted intelligence officer of Wuyan Hong, at the same time, he got on incredibly well with almost everyone. His

responsibility as the Chief Intelligence Officer was huge, and his position high.

"Boss, let me take some men to exterminate those Chinese animals!!" A burly-looking man with knife scars all over his face, and even claw marks on his shoulders, spoke up. As he spoke, his right hand twisted the breasts of the Chinese beauty in his arms, his gaze carrying a fierce killing intent.

The Chinese beauty felt tears welling up in her eyes from the pain, but she did not dare to cry out, instead, giving a seductive smile. The lady previously in her position had enraged this man, and was directly chopped in two, and she would not forget that scene for eternity.

This burly man with scars all over him was called Wu Tong Xiong, and was an Enhancer that had followed Wuyan Hong through his multiple conquests. As Wuyan Hong's vanguard, the number of enemies he killed reached over 200. He had even rescued Wuyan Hong from the jaws of death a few times, and was considered to be Wuyan Hong's number one trusted aide. He was only him among the entire Great Vietnam Empire that dared call Wuyan Hong 'Boss' instead of 'Emperor'.

Wuyan Hong was extremely proud and spiteful, and was particular about how others referred to him. After he established the new order of country, there was a subordinate that called him Boss out of habit, and was instantly slapped across the cheek, before being sentenced to be punished in a decommissioned unit and given an empty position. From then on, other than Wu Tong Xiong, no one else dared to call Wuyan Hong as boss.

Wuyan Hong eyed Wu Tong Xiong and gritted his teeth: "Kill! Kill! Kill! You only know how to go around killing!! Where they are right now, how many people, we don't even know, much less their background. How can we just kill! How do we go about it?!"

Wuyan Hong truly hated this unknown assailant to the core,

after establishing the country, and warring on all sides, he had swallowed up countless other factions, and had not really suffered any setbacks. However, this time round, he lost 5,000 people, and it enraged him to no end.

Wu Tong Xiong chuckled, and did not say anything further. Wuyan Hong was his boss, and being scolded by the boss wasn't a big deal to him. If Wuyan Hong did not scold him, he would feel more uneasy.

Zhao Yuan Shuang spoke slowly: "Judging from their point of attack, this person should be related to the Plant Demoness Chen Yao. Based on other reports, the Plant Demoness has a subordinate called Yue Zhong. This Yue Zhong was the one that attacked our smaller towns, and removed Li Guang Yi, before escaping towards Guang Xi region. Chen Yao's methods aren't that vicious, and if I'm not wrong, it should be the return of Yue Zhong and his men!"

The Great Vietnam Empire had captured many of the Chinese factions and Chen Yao's subordinates. Under torture and other methods, they had managed to obtain such intel.

Wu Tong Xiong's eyes flashed fiercely as he licked his lips: "Yue Zhong!! So it's that pathetic piece of shit that we chased away? He dared to return to Vietnam? He truly doesn't fear death! This time, see how I'll deal with him. Yuan Shuang, do you know what kind of place they are at now?"

Zhao Yuan Shuang spoke slowly to Wu Tong Xion: "If one wanted to hide in this region easily, and the only safest place to hide out would be the Daluo Mountains, that's where they most likely are at."

Wu Tong Xiong laughed grimly and stood up: "Great! I'll bring some troops right now to Daluo Mountains to wipe the whole lot of them!!"

Wuyan Hong glared at Wu Tong Xuan and spoke coldly: "Sit down!!"

Hearing Wuyan Hong's order, Wu Tong Xiong sat down quietly.

Wuyan Hong looked at Wu Tong Xuan with a little disappointment: "Daluo Mountain is so big! Do you know where they are exactly? The weather is so strange right now, if there was a sudden snowstorm during your operation, what will you do? How come you can't think all these things through?"

Wu Tong Xiong was a capable man of countless battles, and was fiercely loyal to Wuyan Hong. He followed Wuyan Hong's orders to the tee. However, his main weakness was that he was rash, and liked to use violence to solve problems, instead of using his brain.

However, Wuyan Hong did hold Wu Tong Xiong in high regard, because he had saved his lives countless times, and was a sharp blade that could be utilized. He was one that did not think for himself.

At this time, a person entered the room and reported: "My liege!! There's someone who claims to be an envoy from the European Union and he seeks an audience!"

Wuyan Hong cursed out: "European Union envoy? At this time, what the shit is the European Union! Do they still think that it's a white man's world? Who the fuck is this envoy?"

The European Union, America and Russia were at the forefront of science and military might before the apocalypse. They formed the major powers of economic strength, and had always looked down on the rest of Asia.

Wuyan Hong already hated those European people and their attitude before the apocalypse. After the world-changing event, he had humiliated and tortured any foreigner that he could get his hands on.

The officer immediately replied: "The envoy is a white man!"

Wuyan Hong's eyes flashed with hatred as he ordered: "Stuff him in the pig's pen! Feed him with the same shit that those pigs eat!!"

The officer responded before dismissing himself: "Yes! Liege!!"

Zhao Yuan Shuang glanced at Wuyan Hong, slightly opening his mouth as to say something, but he quietened down. He was extremely clear of Wuyan Hong's intense dislike and hatred for America and China. At the same time, the subordinates under him were as extreme as him.

Zhao Yuan Shuang was an utilitarian, and he knew that if he were to say anything to Wuyan Hong's dislike, he would be banished.

"Go capture him!! Throw him into the pig pen!!" The officer immediately brought some men with him, as they entered a room where they had kept the envoy Felix that was sent by the Kingdom of God.

4 soldiers stepped forward and easily subdued Felix.

He immediately shouted: "Heavens! What are you guys doing? I'm an envoy from the European Union. I have some terms to discuss! You can't apprehend me!! I'm an envoy!! I want to see your leader Wuyan Hong!! I have important matters to discuss with him!!"

The military officer looked at Felix with disgust and directly spat a glob of saliva on his face: "Pei! European Union! What kind of world do you think you're in, that the European Union is still big? You think it's still 2 years ago? Throw him into the pig pen with his people and feed them like pigs!!"

The 4 soldiers immediately dragged Felix towards the pig pen.

Felix continued to holler at the top of his voice: "No!! You can't do this to me!! I'm the envoy from the Kingdom of God! I have something important to discuss with your emperor Wuyan Hong! You can't treat me like this!!"

Initially, Felix had planned to make use of the European Union's name to discuss with Wuyan Hong. However, he never thought

that even before meeting Wuyan Hong, he would be dragged to the pig pen.

The officer stared at Felix hatefully, and turned around to leave: "These bunch of white-skinned pigs! You deserve to eat swine food!!"

The type of leader would determine the type of subordinates. When Hitler became the ruler of Germany, the whole of Germany had become almost as radical as he was.

After Wuyan Hong had become Emperor, the entire nation had been filled with a nationalistic pride and supremacist attitude. Other than Vietnamese, they felt other races to be beneath them.

Felix was under the custody of the 4 Vietnamese soldiers, and were dragged all the way to the pig pen. The moment he reached, he could smell the pigs, as well as the stench from other humans, excrement, sweat and other nauseating smells all mixed together. It was truly revolting.

Countless Europeans and pigs that were not infected were kept inside the pen. Be it men or women, they all huddled together for warmth.

The current weather was harsh and cold, and the dozens of Europeans were all huddled together, and trembling profusely from the cold, their bodies seemingly turning purple.

Cotton clothes were precious resources, and Wuyan Hong would naturally not give those to the people that he thought to be lowly.

The 4 soldiers stripped Felix of all his clothes, and kicked him harshly, sending him tumbling into the pen: "Get in!!"

When Felix fell in, he immediately landed in a pile of pigs' faeces and human urine, and he immediately vomited.

"Animal!! Damnable animals!! You will pay for your arrogance and despicable acts!!" After vomiting, Felix screamed hoarsely.

"Bastard!! You're disgusting!!" One burly European survivor immediately stepped forwards and punched Felix viciously, breaking his nose.

Chapter 466: Destined To Cooperate!

"Damn it! They're too cruel! Those Vietnamese monkeys!!"

"Sadistic, rude AND barbaric! Those Vietnamese monkeys!! They're not listening at all! Are we really going to cooperate with a bunch of monkeys that just won't listen?"

"Our envoy was locked in a pig's pen by them!! This is an outrage to our Kingdom of God! Those damnable Vietnamese monkeys didn't just stop at humiliating our fellow people! This is too much!!"

After Felix was captured and locked in the pig's pen, the news quickly traveled to the Vietnam branch of the Kingdom of God.

Upon hearing this news, the entire Vietnam branch of the Kingdom of God went into an uproar. Everyone within the centre was European, and they always thought themselves to be higher than others. After the apocalypse, when the Kingdom of God was established, they assumed that their reach over the entire world was even more strengthened. Hence, when they heard that their envoy was being humiliated and ill-treated, it was like a slap to their face.

"Silence!!" At this time, a blond-hair Caucasian spoke out slowly. He had an eagle-like gaze and hooked nose, and was dressed in a neat suit.

This Caucasian was the director of the Vietnam branch, and his name was Entiendo.

Another good-looking Caucasian with a sword-like gaze and a few deep scars on his face saluted towards Entiendo: "Director!! We will definitely not let Wuyan Hong get away with this! He has gone overboard!! We must seek revenge!! Please allow me to lead the Army to deal with this Wuyan Hong, and let him taste the consequences of offending the Kingdom of God!"

This good-looking Caucasian with his blond hair reaching his shoulders was called Alex, and he was the commander of the Army under the Vietnam branch's control. He was an Agility and Endurance-based dual-attribute Evolver. At the same time, he had received special forces and assassination training. In the past, he had single-handedly wiped out a fully armed company of elite Vietnam soldiers. Along with having a brilliant record, this all showed how terrifying he could be.

Entiendo's eyes flashed with a light of wisdom as he spoke slowly: "No, Alex! Wuyan Hong is not some trash. Although he's proud, cruel, overbearing and arrogant, his troops are truly not to be underestimated. He himself is a strong expert. If we want to make use of the Army to deal with him, we would be able to annihilate him, but the cost we have to bear would be equally devastating. This is not in line with our Kingdom of God's way of handling matters.

We need to control the whole of Vietnam. If we expend too much force to deal with him, then it would not be beneficial to dealing with the rest of Vietnam. In this period of time, the higher-ups are still concerned with the rest of Europe, Africa and the Middle East! We won't be able to request for additional aid."

While the Kingdom of God had embarked on its mission to conquer the whole world, their main focus of interest was still their own territory, Europe. After they had gained some breathing room from clearing the zombies and Mutant Beasts, they still had to slowly take control of all of Europe. They had stationed many troops in different parts of the world, but their elite troops were still gathered in Europe itself.

Alex's eyes flashed with a fierce light as he pressed: "Wuyan Hong dared stepped on our Kingdom of God's face, this is not a matter we can let him off so easily with. I need to carry out punishment! Director! I'm willing to lead only a battalion to exterminate him! We'll show him the strength of the Kingdom of God!"

Alex was confident in his own elite troops, as they were loyal, steadfast, and exceptionally brave. He had the confidence in their abilities to be able to overcome Wuyan Hong. In his eyes, Wuyan Hong and the Great Vietnam Empire was nothing more than a bag of jokes.

Entiendo's eyes flashed coldly as he barked: "No!! Alex! I'll not allow you to move out selfishly, this is an order!!"

Alex stared back with a strange look, before he slowly sat down: "Yes! Director!!"

Another subordinate asked: "Then Director! Are we just going to sit by and let those Vietnamese monkeys treat our envoy like this?"

Entiendo revealed a self-confident smile: "No, I will get Wuyan Hong to pay the price for his pride and arrogance. We don't have to act, there will naturally be someone to do it for us."

=====

In the Daluo Mountains.

Anreit, a middle-aged man with blond hair and blue eyes, was currently walking towards the general location of Yue Zhong and his people in the cave.

"Raise your hands! Otherwise, we'll shoot!" All of a sudden, 2 rifles appeared within the forests, aimed at Anreit.

Anreit raised his hands and spoke casually: "I don't have any ill intentions! I'm an envoy from the Kingdom of God, my name is Anreit. I have some matters I would like to discuss with your leader Yue Zhong! I know he's here, please grant me an audience with him!"

The current situation was that society was incredibly unstable, and Anreit had no safeguards nor measures to ensure his safety. If he was shot to death just like that, it would truly be a meaningless death. There was no government to protect any envoys or ambassadors after all.

If it was before the apocalypse, with his foreigner status, even the Vietnamese police would not dare touch Felix, not to mention throwing him into a pig's pen.

"Hold on!" One of the soldiers responded to Anreit, before swiftly retreating into the woods.

"An envoy from the Kingdom of God? They truly have their tricks, to be able to locate us here!!" When Yue Zhong heard the report from his soldier, his eyes flashed with a strange glint.

When Yue Zhong had entered Daluo Mountains, he had taken extra care to erase his tracks. However, he had never expected that he was still tracked down after all.

Truthfully, it was a matter of fate and luck as well, when Yue Zhong had led such a big group to hide out within the Daluo Mountains, the huge group of people had been picked up by the satellites controlled by the Kingdom of God, and hence they were discovered.

"Bring him in." Yue Zhong mulled over silently before giving the order to the soldier.

Soon, Anreit was brought before Yue Zhong.

Anreit carefully assessed this well-known 'tyrant' in front of him, who had slaughtered over 4,000 Vietnamese in a fit of anger, and smiled respectfully as he greeted: "Mr Zhong! I'm Anreit, an envoy from the Kingdom of God! It is an honour and pleasure to meet you!!"

No matter how Anreit viewed Yue Zhong in his heart, he would not show it on his face. Hence, he didn't say much.

Yue Zhong glanced at him and got straight to the point: "Anreit, what brings you here?"

At this time, Chen Yao brought out 2 cups of tea in front of Anreit and Yue Zhong, before she sat by Yue Zhong's side, quietly looking at Anreit.

"Thank you!" Anreit looked at Chen Yao, noting her elegant and valiant aura, coupled with her beautiful looks, and his eyes flashed with a strange glint, before he turned to face Yue Zhong and smiled, pulling out a piece of document: "Mr. Yue Zhong!! Our Kingdom of God would like to cooperate with you in bringing down Wuyan Hong, who's a truly despicable and evil existence. This is the distribution of Wuyan Hong's current power right now, and we hope that it would be of use to you."

Yue Zhong received the document and assessed it, only to discover that it was an extremely detailed map of Vietnam, and on it, there were indications of where Wuyan Hong's establishments were, his current troops' strength, the number of people in each place, and other detailed information.

The value of this document alone already outweighed the equipment of a battalion. The intelligence was obtained after the Kingdom of God had expended numerous pieces and resources to obtain. There were even information on some secretive factions that Yue Zhong did not know about.

Yue Zhong looked at it before throwing it back to the table and stared at Anreit and declared coldly: "It's not enough!! If this is all you have to offer, it's not enough!! You want me to be the knife, you must at least help to sharpen the knife. With our people and equipment here, with just the map, we can at most harass them. I need weapons, a huge number of weapons! I will only deploy my troops if we have sufficient firepower! Otherwise, I can only relocate my troops away from here."

Anreit felt disgruntled, but he still wore that perfect smile, and pulled out another piece of document and pushed it in front of Yue Zhong: "Mr. Yue Zhong! Please look at this then, I believe that this document should satisfy your needs."

Yue Zhong received the new document and looked, and immediately felt waves of shock coursing through his mind. In this document, there was clear and detailed information on all the

armories and storage facilities located in Vietnam. With this document, Yue Zhong would be able to easily locate them and once he had dealt with the zombies, he could gain a large number of weapons and equipment.

The Kingdom of God could expand quickly in all parts of the world because of many of their multinational corporations were secretly spies for them. Many of the ordinary army camps had already come under their control.

As for those bases that were situated deep in forests or underground, it was impossible for them to discover, but as to any bases situated near cities, they were extremely clear on the locations and details.

It was precisely because of their powerful intelligence, that the Kingdom of God could move out so quickly and decisively.

Yue Zhong looked at the document once through carefully, and asked coolly: "What're your requests?"

Anreit wore a sincere expression and said: "We don't have a single request!! We're truly sincere in working together with you. We just hope that after you have dealt with Wuyan Hong, you can help rescue our comrades that have been suffering at his hands!! And that we can still continue operating as per usual in the places you have conquered!"

In truth, Anreit was not interested in the captives that Wuyan Hong was tormenting. However, without asking for it, he was afraid Yue Zhong would suspect their motives.

Yue Zhong thought silently before replying: "I can return your comrades to you. However, the continued operations, I'll have to think about it!"

Anreit pretended to hesitate for awhile, before nodding: "Ok!"

Yue Zhong reached out and smiled: "Here's to a happy partnership."

Anreit also smiled warmly and gripped Yue Zhong's outstretched hand: "To our cooperation."

Chapter 467: Mutant Flower-Poison Spider!

Within a Vietnam army base, there was a large number of zombies decked in military uniform quietly standing still. The entire place was eerily quiet. If there wasn't a summon from any Z-Type monsters, these zombies would stay there like this until they evolved or gained a scent of a living being.

Out of the blue, a number of loud sounds and movements from a vehicle fleet came resounding, and with the noise, the zombie group started to shamble towards the source of the noise.

Outside the camp, there was a fleet of vehicles that had come to a stop, as hundreds of soldiers alighted from their respective vehicles and assembled in front of a person. She was Chen Yao.

"Kill!!" Chen Yao took a look at the zombies within the camp, and her eyes flashed, before she ordered coldly.

"Brothers, let's charge!!" With Chen Yao's orders, Gan Tao bellowed with fury and he raised his Replica Tang Sword as he charged towards the zombies.

Humans were after all intelligent, and because of that, they could dominate the entire planet even as a frail species. After the appearances of the Mutant Beasts, many intelligent humans already thought of using their tough hides as armor. Yue Zhong had brought a number of men to kill so many Vietnamese soldiers, and had obtained many low-level armors. While these armor and protective hides could not withstand bullets, blocking the claws and scratches of the zombies was no problem.

After equipping the hides, the casualties suffered by the troops would then plunge. Many of them scrambled to get a good equipment, as it was the stepping stone to enhancement and becoming strong.

This camp had about 800 zombies within, and they were soon

wiped out by Gan Tao and his troops.

After clearing the place of the zombies, with Yue Zhong's orders, the soldiers began to gather the corpses orderly and burnt them.

Ever since coming across the Devourers, Yue Zhong had a strong impression of their abilities to even destroy a tank after evolving to the maximum.

Of course, in an area of effect, the Devourers could not compare to tanks, but Yue Zhong was still uneasy, and would not risk leaving behind corpses for Devourers to swallow. Every one less freak of nature would still be beneficial to him.

"Our spoils this time is not too bad!!" When Yue Zhong stepped into the base, he saw the 20 tanks laid out neatly and rejoiced in his heart.

The document that the Kingdom of God had given Yue Zhong provided detailed information on various Vietnamese army camps and weapons storage facilities. However, the majority of them were situated at Cao Bang City*, Lang Son City. Of the various camps in these locations, most of them had been opened and wiped clean by Li Guang Yi or Wuyan Hong, bolstering their own forces.

Yue Zhong had then used the map to locate another weapon storage facility and another 3 army bases. Those 3 bases happened to be ordinary border patrol camps, and only this one that they found had actually contained tanks. After opening this place and obtaining the 20 tanks, Yue Zhong could be considered to have struck lottery.

However, just as he got excited, he immediately frowned in the next moment.

Gan Tao came up to Yue Zhong excitedly and exclaimed: "Leader, we've struck it rich!! This is an armory!! We have tanks now!!"

Tanks were considered the kings of the battlefield, and with this camp of tanks, even a 100,000-zombie horde would not pose a

problem to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong gazed at Gan Tao and spoke indifferently: "Who amongst you know how to operate them?"

Gan Tao immediately frowned, operating tanks was a specialty skill, and not anyone could just go in and get used to the controls.

No matter how advanced the weaponry, if there was no suitable operator, then they weren't worth anything. And it was precisely because of this, Yue Zhong was currently frowning. These 20 tanks were truly a treasure, but for them to exhibit their might, he lacked the necessary manpower.

"Ah!!"

"Attack!!"

All of a sudden, there were gunshots and screams from the soldiers coming from the other side of the base.

Yue Zhong's face fell and he immediately activated his [Shadow Steps] and charged towards the source of the disturbance.

In his heart, every single soldier that fought for him was an invaluable resource, and he would not give up easily on any single one of his subordinates.

4 seconds, in a mere 4 seconds, Yue Zhong had reached the source of gunshots.

Only to see that in the area, there was a swarm of countless black spiders the size of 2 palms currently pouring towards the soldiers.

"Level 14 Strange Beast: Mutant Flower-Poison Spider. It is a mutated variant with a potent venom."

Yue Zhong's troops were firing like mad at the Mutant Flower-Poison Spiders.

The rain of bullets caused countless spiders to be ripped to shreds, and as each Mutant Flower-Poison Spider burst open, the venom splattered out and caused the ground to sizzle, revealing

countless little holes.

Those Mutant Flower-Poison Spiders had low defences, but their speeds were above even the S1s, and they quickly reached the soldiers.

As one soldier was firing at dozens of the Mutant Spiders, causing them to burst open, he was immediately swarmed by 8 others, leaping towards his head.

"Go to hell!! Go to hell!!" That soldier became frantic and tried to swat the spiders off, as one of his palms actually crushed one of the Mutant Flower-Poison Spiders.

"Ah!!!" When the soldier crushed the Flower-Poison Spider, its body was squashed, and the poisonous mucus started to corrode his right hand and armor. A huge hole appeared in his right hand, causing his face to contort in agony.

The remaining 7 Mutant Spiders leapt onto his head and bit down viciously on his neck, as the potent venom entered his system, and he collapsed numbly.

Numerous other Mutant Flower-Poison Spiders pounced and climbed all over him, enveloping him within seconds.

When Yue Zhong got there, 8 of his soldiers had been consumed by those Mutant Spiders.

"Everyone retreat!!" Yue Zhong immediately gave the order, as he waved his right hand, and causing the Devil Flame to be conjured, before casting it at the spiders like a blazing tornado, enveloping them.

Within that intense flames, groups of the Flower-Poison Spiders were incinerated.

Chen Yao came to Yue Zhong's side only to see her smacking the ground, and 30 huge vines burst out from the ground. The vines danced in the air, aiming to swat down on the spiders, with each slap a huge patch of spiders would be crushed.

Chen Yao led the Chinese Sky Association members and tried to take on all sides, and she exhibited all of her might. She, who had been shying away from battles in the initial part of the apocalypse, had by now become an Evolver of Level 39 and countless battles and experience under her belt. Her combat prowess was truly overwhelming as well.

If humans were forced into a corner, they would either wait for death or explode out with incredible strength. Initially, if Yue Zhong had not been forced himself, he might not have dared to pick up the wooden staff to crush the first zombie's head.

Pan Jin Yong and Gan Tao both held their own assault rifles and fired wildly at the swarms of Mutant Spiders.

White Bones was like a fireman, rushing everywhere to kill any that escaped.

With Yue Zhong's terrifying Devil Flames, after a single fiery tornado blew past, an entire patch had been incinerated. He was like a fiery demon that controlled the flames to envelop any Mutant Spider that tried to attack.

However, even with their efforts, there were a few that managed to get away, making their way towards the lower-levelled Enhancers.

"Get out of the base!! Back to the main road!! Gan Tao, go organize a resistance!" Yue Zhong gave the order solemnly as he observed the Mutant Spiders.

In the camp, the terrain was complicated, and there were all sorts of constructions. With the cover of those buildings, the assault from the Mutant Flower-Poison Spiders were hard to defend against.

However, the moment they managed to get to an open area, the spiders would be easier to deal with. After all, Yue Zhong and his men had decent firepower, he had even brought 8 gun-mounted

vehicles with 12.7mm heavy machine guns.

"Retreat!" Gan Tao nodded and immediately brought his men away from the camp!

"Follow me!! I want to see where their nest is!" Yue Zhong eyed the never-ending swarm of spiders and charged towards the direction from where they came. He wanted to nip the problem at its bud.

Most of the time, when there was such a large swarm of Mutant Beasts, there would usually be a Type 2 or Type 3 that commanded them as the head. Once that was taken care of, the rest would immediately break from order and scramble away.

Chen Yao and Pan Jin Yong followed Yue Zhong closely.

On the way, Yue Zhong enveloped himself with a layer of Devil Flame, causing any Spiders that pounce on him to instantly combust and burn up.

As though feeling the threat, those spiders which were intending to rush towards the outside immediately retreated, trying to pounce on Yue Zhong in a bid to attack him. However, their attempts were in vain, as they were instantly burnt up by the Devil Flame cover.

White Bones followed closely behind, its bone blades dancing and slicing up many Mutant Flower-Poison Spiders. However, when the bodies of the spiders were sliced apart, the splattering venom landed on White Bones' blade, corroding small holes and causing wisps of green smoke.

White Bones' body was impervious to bullets and physical weapons, even a 12.7mm round would not be able to penetrate its bones. However, this corrosive venom was its perfect counter. After killing a certain number, it could not afford to slice any more, and it just followed closely behind.

White Bones' speed had exceeded 10 times that of a normal

person, and was even faster than most low-levelled Agility-based Evolvers. Those Mutant Flower-Poison Spiders were simply no match for it, much less jumping on its body.

=====

Chapter 468: Huge Battle of Type 3 Mutant Beasts

Yue Zhong backtracked the paths of the spiders and kept on charging, forwards. After running for about a kilometre, he finally came to a dense forest area.

The moment he stepped into the forest, he was suddenly besieged on either sides by 2 large Mutant Flower-Poison Spiders. They were the size of 2 persons' faces side by side, and their jaws were wide open, as 2 white globs of spit shot out at Yue Zhong.

"Level 60 Strange Beast: Type 2 Mutant Flower-Poison Spider!"

The moment those Type 2 appeared, a strong sense of danger had welled up in Yue Zhong's mind, and he leapt backwards with lightning speed. At the same time, his [Eye of Perception] had already provided him with the information on those 2 huge Mutant Spiders.

The 2 globs of spit landed at Yue Zhong's original position, just an instant after Yue Zhong had retreated. The sticky spit was an innate ability of those Type 2 Mutant Flower-Poison Spiders, and they were quite dangerous for an attack. The moment the spit touched the prey, the sticky silk would start to constrict, binding the prey tightly, at the same time, releasing a paralyzing agent, causing the prey to lose all sense of resistance.

Even the Type 3 Lightning would find itself in a bind if it were to be caught in those silks, and would only be consumed. Of course, Lightning's speed could break the sound barrier, and naturally would not be caught so easily.

After dodging those spit attacks, Yue Zhong immediately pulled out his Stinger and fired 6 consecutive shots at the 2 Type 2 Mutant Spiders.

Peng! Peng!

Assaulted by the shots, one of the Type 2 Mutant Spiders instantly burst open, and the insides splattered out, corroding a hole in the tree it was perched upon.

The Type 2 Mutant Flower-Poison Spider was a high-offence but weak-defence type of Mutant Beast. Its damage could cause even a Type 3 to be threatened. However, its body could not withstand even the shot of a normal rifle bullet, not to mention the might of the Stinger.

As for the other Type 2 Mutant Spider, after suffering a hit, a hole appeared in its body, and it endured the pain as it hurried over to another tree.

Yue Zhong waved his right hand and a huge ball of Devil Flames immediately shot towards the tree like a cannon, instantly engulfing the tree and burning the Type 2 Mutant Spider with it.

With the death of those 2 Type 2 Mutant Spiders, a green box and a Level 3 Skill Book popped out.

"Level 3 Skill Book: Strengthen Bullets, using energy to collect in ammunition, causing resulting rounds to have extra lethality. Active skill. With each usage, expends a minimum of 10 Spirit and 5 Stamina. Level of threat depends on bullet, skill enhancement and level, as well as amount of Spirit and Stamina used."

The Green Treasure Box also revealed a small Level 3 defensive wear.

By this time, defence drops were the lowest of the different occurrences, and even after killing so many enemies, Yue Zhong had only come across Level 2 armors, as for a Level 3, he had only 1. This was the 2nd time he obtained a Level 3 armor. With such rate, it was equivalent to a Level 4 Treasure.

"This skill should be left for those who focus on guns." Yue Zhong eyed the Level 3 Skill Book, before keeping it in his storage ring.

After all, Yue Zhong still had countless skills that lacked the

points to be enhanced, and he did naturally did not have any intentions to learn another Level 3 Skill.

After taking care of those 2 Type 2 Mutant Flower-Poison Spiders, the remaining Mutant Spiders did not scramble away nor collapse, instead becoming more aggressive as they leapt towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong watched the constant stream of Mutant Flower-Poison Spiders attacking him and he thought: "Even the Type 2s are dead! They are still not dispersing! Don't tell me that there's a Type 3 nearby?"

Yue Zhong quietly assessed the situation as he fended off the attacks from the ordinary Mutant Spiders with ease: "From the attack style of the Type 2s earlier, the Mutant Spiders are strong in offence but weak in defence! Their speed is fast, but defence is incredibly low. If it's such a Type 3 Mutant Beast, I have the chance to defeat it!!"

Yue Zhong turned to face Chen Yao and Pan Jin Yong as he spoke solemnly: "Chen Yao!! Pan Jin Yong!! You guys head back first. I'm going further in for a look!"

A Type 3 Mutant Beast was truly terrifying, and Yue Zhong did not possess the confidence for an absolute victory. Being alone, there would still be a chance for him to escape, but if Chen Yao and Pan Jin Yong were to be brought along, they might end up losing their lives in here.

Yue Zhong knew that with his speed nearing 18 times that of a normal human, even when facing the Type 3 Lightning with a Mach-1 speed, he could still react and hold his own. That was why he was confident in his survival. Otherwise, he would not go provoke those Type 3 Mutant Beasts for no reason.

"Be careful!!" Chen Yao had matured a lot, as she called out in worry, and turned around with Pan Jin Yong to exit the forest.

The moment Chen Yao stepped out, the surrounding plants and flora around here became sharp blades, acting as though they had a mind of their own as they sliced the Mutant Spiders all around her and Pan Jin Yong. In the dense forest, her power could be exhibited at 120%.

After ensuring that Chen Yao and Pan Jin Yong had left, Yue Zhong immediately activated his [Bone Encompassing Armor], forming a carapace of White Bones. Using the bone spikes to propel himself upwards onto a tree, he then proceeded to follow the trail of spiders.

After running in the dense forest for another 2km, Yue Zhong finally heard an earth-shaking roar.

He landed quietly on a branch of a huge tree, and looked towards the direction of the sound.

He discovered that there was a huge patch of purple flowers, looking like a sea of purple. In the middle, there was a tree that seemed to be carved out of purple jade, with 7 purple branches, and an extremely small sized fruit that gave off an incredibly strange aroma.

About 100m away from the purple fruit, there was a huge ape that was 4m-tall, covered entirely with red fur and ripped muscles, its claws slashing as it had an ugly expression being trapped by white spider silk.

On the other side of that spider web, there was a 2m-tall, black spider that had legs larger than the size of human legs.

"Level 85 Mutant Beast: Type 3 Ferocious Ape!"

"Level 76 Mutant Beast: Type 3 Mutant Flower-Poison Spider!"

"2 Type 3 Mutant Beasts!!" When Yue Zhong saw them, his heart immediately turned cold, before he swiveled to look at the strange fruit with that aroma. Even at a distance of more than a thousand metres, he could smell the scent of that purple fruit, and it was

capable of driving him crazy.

Each blow from the fist of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape could instantly pummel a tank, and its speed was faster than Lightning,* while it could withstand the damage from even a 37mm round. Its innate ability was its insane strength. Even amongst the Type 3 Mutant Beasts, it was an incredibly terrifying existence, tearing apart other beasts with ease. If it were to unleash a punch at Yue Zhong, even if he could block it, he would be sent flying dozens of metres, and his injury would not be light.

This fearsome Type 3 Ferocious Ape was entangled within the white spider web, and it was struggling in frenzy, tearing through the many layers of silk.

As for the Type 3 Mutant Flower-Poison Spider, it continued to shoot out spit after spit without hurry or haste, every shot landing on the Ferocious Ape and adding to its misery.

The Type 3 Ferocious Ape roared twice in succession, before the web sealed its head, cutting off its breath for about 2 seconds, before it slumped to the ground, having been affected by the neutralizing toxin from the web.

Right at this time, a grey shadow shot out from a corner, aiming for the Type 3 Mutant Spider.

"Level 73 Mutant Beast: Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse!"

Yue Zhong stared fixedly at the Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse, noting that it was about 2.7m tall, its body covered entirely in a grey armor, and sharp claws on all 4 limbs. Its defence seemed stronger than even Lightning, although its speed was slower than Lightning's.

Even so, the speed of the Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse was nearing the sound barrier, every movement as swift as the wind. It crossed a distance of more than a hundred metres in a second, as it pounced viciously on the Mutant Flower-Poison Spider.

As the Type 3 Mutant Spider seemed to be at the mercy of the Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse, the mouse was suddenly stopped in mid-air; it had been caught in an indiscernible web of silk.

This transparent spider web was a trap laid by the Type 3 Mutant Spider, it knew its combat abilities were weak, just a single punch from the Ferocious Ape could flatten it. However, it was an expert hunter and excelled in the usage of traps, as long as any prey entered its domain, even a Mutant Beast with a higher level would be at its mercy.

The Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse struggled frantically, slashing out with its sharp claws, tearing apart that transparent silk that can withstand even bullets, and it dropped down from the trap.

Just as it landed, the Type 3 Mutant Spider had already spat out a glob of white sticky silk at it, causing the Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse to be instantly enveloped and wrapped into a ball.

Chapter 469: Continuous Harvest!

The Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse struggled frantically, its sharp claws slashing without caring at the silk that constricted it.

The Type 3 Mutant Flower-Poison Spider continued to spit its white spit and silk at the Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse, restricting its movements every few seconds.

The Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse struggled against its bonds for a whole 5 minutes before slumping weakly due to the toxin taking effect.

As the 2 Type 3 Mutant Beasts were engaged in battle, Yue Zhong had noiselessly retrieved his Falcon Sniper and aimed it at the Type 3 Mutant Spider. Waiting until the spider least expected, he broke the silence by firing a single shot.

Following the loud sound of a gunshot, a single armor-piercing round blasted through the eye of the Type 3 Mutant Flower-Poison Spider, causing a huge bloody hole, as green blood oozed out on the ground, corroding the earth.

When the Type 3 Mutant Spider was assaulted by Yue Zhong, it hung on to life with its Endurance, and quickly scrambling further into the forest. It was a hunting type that relied on traps, and could not afford to face off in drawn out combat.

The Type 3 Mutant Flower-Poison Spider had a speed that exceeded a Type 2 Lightning, and was faster than Yue Zhong if he activated his Shadow Steps, and in just a few breaths, it had disappeared from view. It would be incredibly tough for Yue Zhong to hunt it down.

There were various kinds of Type 3 Mutant Beasts, some were cautious, others aggressive, and some were crafty. This Type 3 Mutant Flower-Poison Spider belonged to the cautious type, and the moment it got injured, it would retreat without a trace.

"Fast!!" Yue Zhong watched the Type 3 Mutant Flower-Poison Spider disappear from view and frowned. He thought for a second, before charging towards the jade-like tree in the centre of the purple flowers.

Just as Yue Zhong reached a distance of 100m away from the purple fruit, a number of spider silks that were nearly invisible to the naked eye flew up from the ground, wrapping around Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong struggled with all his might of 8 times the Strength of a normal person, but the tenacity of the web seemed to be even stronger than steel, and Yue Zhong could not break apart from the web.

Line after line of silk came up from the ground, as layers after layers started to lock Yue Zhong down.

Seeing that its prey had taken the bait, the Type 3 Mutant Spider that had disappeared came crawling back to about 200m away from Yue Zhong, and opened its mouth to fire more webs at him.

"It fell for it!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a cold light. He immediately fired 5 sharp bone blades from his body and twisted himself with all his strength, shredding the silk strands apart. He then stuck out his hand and conjured a powerful blast of Devil Flames at the white spit coming his way.

Under that intense heat, the white web was instantly burnt, sizzling into wisps of smoke before disappearing.

Yue Zhong then pulled out his Falcon Sniper that had just reloaded and leapt to his right, aiming at the Type 3 Mutant Spider and firing once more.

Following that same loud shot, the Type 3 Mutant Spider suffered yet another shot to its eyes, blinding another 3 of them. The bullet pierced through its body, causing a huge hole, as green blood continued to ooze out from the wound.

With a flip of his hand, Yue Zhong kept the Falcon Sniper, and switched to the Stinger, firing 6 follow up shots while the Type 3 Mutant Spider was reeling in pain.

As its eyes were blinded, the Type 3 Mutant Spider had no way of seeing anything, but it still retreated. Out of the 6 shots fired, only 2 landed, resulting in another 2 huge holes, and the Type 3 Mutant Spider bled even more profusely.

Yue Zhong again targeted at the Type 3 Mutant Spider and pointed with his right hand, as a Devil Flame fireball shot towards the beast, blasting another hole the size of a fist in its body.

By this time, after suffering consecutive injuries, coupled with the huge blood loss, the lifeforce of the Type 3 Mutant Spider began to ebb away, and its speed of retreating began to slow as well.

Yue Zhong did not dare underestimate the Type 3 Mutant Spider and activated his Devil Flame again. In an instant 20 balls of flame appeared out of the ether, blasting towards the body of the Type 3 Mutant Spider. The resulting explosions blasted the beast into pieces.

A huge orb of experience floated into Yue Zhong's body, and a Green Treasure Box and a 100 Survivor Coins dropped on the ground.

"Congratulations on achieving Level 64, you have gained 2 attribute points to be allocated."

After finishing the Type 3 Mutant Spider off, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief. Its defence was relatively low, and its innate ability was fortunately countered by his skills. If it was against the Type 3 Ferocious Ape, which had seemingly no weak points, he would be in terrible danger then.

"Level 4 Treasure: Flower-Poison Spider Ring. Upon equipping, Agility +4, Spirit +6. It has the ability to produce web. Skill

description: It can shoot out a transparent line of spider silk at a target, whittling the target's Stamina every 10 seconds, until the target's Stamina reaches 1. The silk is incredibly tough and resilient, withholding a pressure of up to 250 tonnes. The silk can be torn apart by weapons of Level 4 and above. The cooldown for the skill is 1 minute. The skill can be used a maximum of 10 times per day."

Yue Zhong carefully observed the Flower-Poison Spider Ring before equipping it in satisfaction: "It truly is a Level 4 treasure! What an item!!"

With the Flower-Poison Spider Ring, Yue Zhong had an additional useful skill, and he could even become like Spiderman.

As of now, he had a total of 9 rings on his hands, and he was just lacking one to be fully blinged up.

Yue Zhong did not dally beside the corpse of the Type 3 Mutant Spider, instead coming to the Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse that had been trapped by the spider silk.

With his eyes narrowing, he raised his right hand, expending a total of 50 Spirit and 20 Stamina to conjure up a 2m-long Devil Flame Spear.

By now, his Devil Flame skill had been enhanced till the 4th Level, and each Devil Flame Spear that he conjured could easily pierce an armored vehicle, its might equivalent to a medium-calibre rocket.

He thrustured downwards with force, and the Devil Flame Spear went through the white silk like hot knife through butter, before continuing in through the body of the Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse, splitting it apart all the way till its head.

Another huge orb of experience went into his body, and a Green treasure box dropped out as well.

Yue Zhong lamented: "What a pity, the Type 3 Shadow-Grey

Mouse wasn't killed purely by my abilities, the experience is truly little."

However, being able to kill a Type 3 Mutant Beast this easily was still a score in his eyes, after all, every part of a Type 3 Mutant Beast was precious.

Although the Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse had a weak defence, its hide was still able to withstand a 12.7mm bullet. Furthermore, its blood essence, brain, blood, meat, bones, and even the tendons were all valuable materials.

Yue Zhong opened up the Green treasure box, and after a radiant green light shone, a motorbike appeared out of thin air, its entire frame metallic-black in colour, with 6 cannons mounted in front, radiating power and sleekness.

"Level 4 Treasure: Swift Shadow Motorbike. It can reach the highest speed of 700 km/hour. Equipped with 6 20-mm Sol cannons. It can travel 300 km everyday, and will automatically generate 100 rounds of ammunition. With enough power, it can travel further. It currently has 100 rounds in its cannon."

"What an incredible mode of transport!!" Yue Zhong eyed this Swift Shadow Motorbike with an excited look in his eyes.

The fact that this motorbike could travel 300 km, which was considered an incredible distance in this apocalypse, coupled with its insane speed, Yue Zhong could easily explore places as and when he wished.

The Type 3 Lightning's fastest speed was Mach-1, but constantly using that speed to travel would consume much of its energy, and it could at most maintain that speed for about 400 km, after which its Stamina would be depleted. It could not be compared to a supersonic jet, after all, it was still flesh and blood and relied on its energy to travel.

Yue Zhong quickly kept the Swift Shadow Motorbike within his

storage ring, before striding over to the Type 3 Ferocious Ape.

Yue Zhong eyed the tightly-bound Type 3 Ferocious Ape that was the size of a bungalow, and his pupils narrowed, as he prepared himself. the Devil Flame in his right hand danced once again. After expending 60 points of Spirit and 20 points of Stamina, he conjured another 2m-long Devil Flame Spear.

Forcefully, he thrust it through the spider web, aiming for the Type 3 Ferocious Ape's head.

With a hong, the Devil Flame Spear pierced through the white spider silk and exploded on the head of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape, blasting a huge bloody wound.

ROARRR!!!!

The Ferocious Ape that had been trapped earlier by the web started to crawl to its feet, releasing an earthshaking roar towards the sky in its agony. On its head, the region around its right eye had been blown apart, revealing a bloody hole, as blood flowed profusely. Even then, it still gave off a terrifying pressure, as though it could still tear anything apart with its hands.

"Not good!! This Type 3 Mutant Beast is still not dead!! Its defence is too crazy!" Yue Zhong eyed the Type 3 Ferocious Ape that had gotten to its feet and his face fell in horror.

Chapter 470: Type 3 Ferocious Ape

Yue Zhong immediately pulled out a PF98 with a thought, and he couldn't care further about system weapons at this time. If he didn't take down the Type 3 Ferocious Ape now, the one to die will be him.

Yue Zhong had some confidence against the Type 3 Mutant Flower-Poison Spider, but against the Type 3 Ferocious Ape, he could only cause such a little injury, he knew he had no chance against this terrifying monster.

A rocket immediately shot towards the Type 3 Ferocious Ape.

It felt the danger, and quickly tensed its muscles, raising its huge claws to block the rocket.

With a huge explosion, the rocket exploded in the hands of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape, blasting apart 3 of the digits from its hand. At the same time, its right arm was torn up and bloody, but not totally destroyed.

"Is this a joke?" Even its flesh and blood can withstand a blow from a rocket!? What the hell!" Yue Zhong eyed that Type 3 Ferocious Ape that had just sacrificed its right arm to block the rocket, and his eyes widened with shock.

The Type 3 Ferocious Ape bellowed in rage, as it struggled with force, and the spider silk started to tear and rip, scattering all over the ground.

Without the Type 3 Mutant Flower-Poison Spider to continue releasing its innate ability, the white silk had no way of restraining that Ferocious Ape.

Yue Zhong's heart turned cold, as he retreated backwards explosively, pulling out another PF98 and fired another rocket at the Type 3 Ferocious Ape.

The Type 3 Ferocious Ape immediately slashed at the incoming

projectile with its right claw.

With a loud exploding sound, the remaining digits on the Type 3 Ferocious Ape's right hand were blasted apart.

The beast became enraged and it leapt with force, prying itself from the remaining web and shaking it off, shooting towards Yue Zhong like a cannonball.

The Type 3 Ferocious Ape had a speed that exceeded Lightning when it was still a Type 2 Mutant Beast, and was just barely slower than the Type 3 Lightning by a few degrees. In just 2 seconds, it had appeared in front of Yue Zhong, and raising its undamaged left hand, it swung downwards viciously at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong activated his [Gravity Manipulation] ability at the first instant, and immediately a huge amount of force pressed down on the Type 3 Ferocious Ape, causing its body to sink slightly.

However, at the next moment, it swung its fist towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong did not skip a beat and pulled out yet another PF98 from his ring. At the same time, the Bronze Spiritual Bell rose from his chest to release a green barrier in front of him.

The fist of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape came swinging like Mount Tai, and the moment the fist landed on the barrier, the green barrier immediately disintegrated. The Bronze Spiritual Bell also dimmed in lustre, falling onto the ground.

The barrier of the Bronze Spiritual Bell that could even withstand 2 rockets had completely disintegrated under the blow from the Type 3 Ferocious Ape.

Although the green barrier was destroyed, it bought some valuable time for Yue Zhong, allowing him to pull the PF98 smoothly and fire a rocket at the head of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape.

The rocket blasted towards the right eye of the Type 3 Ferocious

Ape viciously, exploding out with an intense force, causing the entire right eye area to be blasted apart, blood and meat splattering outwards.

At almost the same time, the Ferocious Ape swung its tail, striking Yue Zhong on his right side viciously.

The Bone Carapace on Yue Zhong's right side instantly shattered, following that bone cracking sound, he was sent shooting through the air towards a huge tree, knocking into it and he coughed up blood.

In just one strike, Yue Zhong had been severely injured, his body suffering countless broken ribs, his inner organs suffering from the knockback, and as he coughed, there was blood and pieces of flesh that came up with it.

"Terrifying!! As expected, based on my current strength, if I want to overcome an apex Type 3 Mutant Beast, it's still out of my reach." Yue Zhong watched the blinded Type 3 Ferocious Ape thrashing about its surroundings in its rage, as he pulled out his Falcon Sniper.

Yue Zhong adjusted his aim, suppressing his killing intent, and aimed at the eye sockets of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape, before pulling the trigger.

An armor piercing round immediately penetrated the wound in the Type 3 Ferocious Ape's eye, before blasting apart, causing more meat and blood to splatter outwards.

The Type 3 Ferocious Ape was truly enraged and it turned around, its face a horrifying mask of blood and gore. It started charging viciously towards the direction from where the shot came from.

The body makeup of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape was truly top of the food chain, far surpassing any Enhancers or Evolvers like Yue Zhong, and even though its sight was taken away, it could still

hear, smell and its danger perception and other senses were all still acute. It was still likewise terrifying.

Yue Zhong watched the incoming Type 3 Ferocious Ape and his eyes narrowed coldly, pulling out a PF98 and firing once at the beast.

The Type 3 Ferocious Ape shot forwards, moving like a spectre for about 6-7 metres, and the rocket brushed past its body before exploding on the ground behind it.

At that time, Yue Zhong had managed to hit the Type 3 Ferocious Ape was because it was trapped by the spider web, and the 2nd time had been a point-blank shot. The moment the distance was pulled apart, the beast could easily make use of its Danger Perception to dodge the incoming projectile.

Yue Zhong watched the enraged Type 3 Ferocious Ape not slowing in its charge and once more, conjured a Devil Flame Spear in his hands.

Just as the Type 3 Ferocious Ape was about to hit Yue Zhong, its body shuddered violently, and it fell to the ground. Although it had shaken off the web, the numbing toxin had not been neutralized yet. Furthermore, it was too gravely injured and its body could not withstand the effects of the toxin, and thus it slumped to the ground.

Yue Zhong immediately seized the chance and threw the Devil Flame Spear with all his strength, causing it to shoot towards the head of the Ferocious Ape like a meteor.

The Devil Flame Spear exploded upon impact, causing yet another major wound for the Type 3 Ferocious Ape.

Yue Zhong then pulled out his Stinger and fired 6 consecutive shots at the exposed skull, blasting the brain into pieces of matter and blood.

Right as Yue Zhong fired, he shot out 6 sharp bone blades from

his bone carapace into the brain of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape and started grinding it.

With the combined assaults, the brain of the Ferocious Ape was pierced through, its insides turning into mush, and it slumped to the floor lifelessly.

A huge orb of experience floated into Yue Zhong's body, at the same time, a Blue Treasure Box and 500 survivor coins exploded out.

"Congratulations on reaching Level 65, and gaining 2 points of attributes to be allocated!"

"Congratulations on reaching Level 66, and gaining 2 points of attributes to be allocated!"

With that huge amount of experience, Yue Zhong had gained 2 levels at once.

The strength of the Type 3 Ferocious Ape had been no joke, and furthermore, adding on Yue Zhong's previous 2 kills, it helped to propel his enhancement.

"A Blue Treasure Box! I wonder what's inside?" Yue Zhong saw the blue treasure box and his eyes lit up, proceeding to open it.

"Level 6 Treasure: Nucleus Energy Converter Diagram. An item that can create a machine to draw energy from nuclei. Whoever has this diagram would understand how to create a machine to utilize that energy."

As he held the blueprints, the knowledge of methods for constructing, materials, and how to utilize the machine began to enter his brain, giving him the necessary information within seconds.

"This is good stuff!" Yue Zhong held the blueprints as his heart was filled with excitement.

If he could assemble the machine, the lowest degree of nucleus

would add 00 degrees of power generation. A Type 2 nucleus could power 500 degrees of power per day. A Type 3 nucleus would power 2500 degrees of power per day. Furthermore, there was no limit to the conversion, as long as the nucleus and machine was not destroyed, it could always power that amount. It was practically like solar energy, clean and efficient.

Furthermore, once the machine is assembled, it could be used in all sorts of places. Yue Zhong's Swift Shadow Motorbike could be charged with it, and it could become a source of ammunition for energy-based weapons. Of course, those energy-based weapons would need the necessary blueprints and diagrams to be utilized as well.

Regardless, with this Nucleus Energy Converter Diagram, once he had assembled the actual machine, he would gain an incredible advantage in energy.

"What a pity!! I don't have the plant nor manpower for instruments of processing or precision, if we were in Mo Du* or Jiang Nan, it would have been better." After calming himself down, he looked at the blueprints in his hands and sighed.

Gui Ning City had no processing factories, although the number of skilled workers from Nan Ning were decent. However, to locate those factories required for the materials and assembly parts, the Pearl River Delta Economic Zone, Mo Du, Xi Jing, Tian Jing areas had more likelihood.

Guang Xi was slightly backwards in regards to technology as compared to the rest of China, and could not compare to those developed coastal areas.

Yue Zhong kept the precious diagram into his storage ring, digging out the Type 3 Blood Essences from those three beasts, before walking over to the purple jade-like fruit.

Chapter 471: Triple Attribute Evolver!

Yue Zhong came in front of the purple jade-like fruit and took a glance, before lightly plucking it and placing it in his ring.

He then pulled out a small tool and carefully dug up the small purple jade-like plant up from the ground, placing it into a pot, before transferring into his storage ring.

He had a feeling that this plant was extraordinary and he naturally did not want to leave it behind.

After all of this, he turned around to look at the area once more, before leaving the place.

Not long after, a number of soldiers came into the area and began transporting the corpses of the Type 3 Mutant Beasts into their vehicles before leaving. Yue Zhong brought his spoils of war back towards Daluo Mountain.

By now, more caverns had been excavated in the Daluo Mountains. With Yue Zhong's guidance, those Enhancers that had the abilities to manipulate the landscape were utilized to carve out more holes, accommodating more resources and people.

The moment he returned to the Daluo Mountains, after leaving White Bones and Lightning to act as his guards, he retreated to a secret cave and swallowed the Type 3 Ferocious Ape's blood essence.

Upon consuming the blood essence, it turned into warm flows of energy that enhanced Yue Zhong's body continuously. After a day, where he had fully ingested the benefits of the Type 3 Blood Essence, he had gained +3 in all attributes, and his Strength was further increased by 4.

This was the 2nd Type 3 blood essence that he had taken, and although the Type 3 Ferocious Ape was much stronger than the Type 3 Green Jiao-Snake, its effectiveness had been diminished.

After digesting the blood essence of the Ferocious Ape, he went on to consume the blood essence of the Type 3 Flower-Poison Spider. This time, he completely absorbed the energy in a single hour, gaining +1 in all attributes, and a further 2 points in Agility.

After absorbing that Type 3 Mutant Spider's blood essence, he knew his body had developed a resistance against the Type 3 Blood Essences. He hesitated a while, but in the end, he still swallowed the Type 3 Shadow-Grey Mouse's blood essence.

This time, in just 10 minutes, he had completely absorbed the blood essence, gaining him +1 in Agility. By now, any further Type 3 Blood Essences would be of no use to him, unless it was an apex leader, which would at most help boost certain attributes.

After consuming all 3 Type 3 blood essences, he moved on to pop the purple jade-like fruit into his mouth.

The moment the fruit entered Yue Zhong's body, it transformed into wisps of purple energy as it circulated within Yue Zhong's body, rushing into every single part, transforming him from inside out.

With that ravaging energy going berserk within him, Yue Zhong felt intense pain racking from the inside. Every single pore oozed out black blood that had impurities, causing him to feel as though there were thousands of needles piercing his body.

That tyrannical energy circulated within Yue Zhong for an entire day, torturing him incessantly, before coming to an abrupt halt.

"Congratulations, evolution was successful! You have become a Vitality, Endurance and Spirit Triple-Attribute Evolver. Evolution had enhanced all your attributes by 5, and a further 80 in your Vitality."

This purple jade-like fruit was a precious item equivalent to a matured Snake Birth Fruit, and because of its potential, it had attracted those Type 3 Mutant Beasts seeking to evolve in a free-

for-all fight.

Although Yue Zhong had an ordinary body constitution, with the help of the purple jade-like fruit, he broke his limits to become a Triple-Attribute Evolver, gaining a huge increase in strength.

After gaining a Vitality-based evolution, his Vitality now reached 269 points, almost 27 times that of a normal person. If a person required an entire month to recuperate, he could do so in a day. Also, his high Vitality ensured that his Level 4 Regeneration skill became more potent, increasing the rate of which his body could regenerate itself.

Yue Zhong rose from the stone bed and took a look at his filthy body, frowning slightly before heading to the washroom to clean himself up.

"Leader! Mr. Anreit is waiting for you outside!!" Yue Zhong had just exited the washroom when one of the soldiers came reporting.

His brows creasing, Yue Zhong asked: "What does he want?"

The soldier replied: "He said that there was something important to be discussed with you personally!"

Yue Zhong considered for a moment, before heading to the hall.

In the hall, Anreit was sitting on a couch, and the moment he saw Yue Zhong, his eyes lit up, and he stood up to greet him warmly: "Mr. Yue Zhong! I've finally managed to reach you!!"

Yue Zhong came to the opposite side of the couch and sat down before smiling slightly: "Mr. Anreit! What can I do for you?"

At this time, Ming Jia Jia walked by, looking extremely valiant in her military uniform. She caught sight of Yue Zhong and her expression brightened up, immediately heading to prepare two cups of tea before serving them and sitting by Yue Zhong's side.

"Mr. Yue Zhong!! We haven't met for a few days and you look even more vibrant!" Anreit observed Yue Zhong carefully as he

laughed lightly, before regaining a serious expression and handed a document over to Yue Zhong: "Mr. Yue Zhong, you might not know this!! Wuyan Hong has already deployed forces to launch an assault on Daluo Mountain! This is the route that they have planned, this time, they had actually activated 5 battalions, a total of 2,000 men! They are the elites under Wuyan Hong, and possess heavy artillery, tanks and even armed armored vehicles!"

"Oh!!" Yue Zhong exclaimed as he picked up the document to scrutinize carefully. The document listed down the routes and detailed information of the equipment and movements of the troops, at the same time, showing proof with a satellite photo.

"They have a satellite!! Their technologies are ahead of us. As of now, the distance between our sides are too wide." Yue Zhong placed the document down as he glanced at Anreit, his joy and elation from evolving being dimmed slightly.

Controlling a satellite was as big an advantage a faction could get. Using it, it could allow for free communications over the entire globe, at the same time, they can utilize them to spy on the other factions. As long as the satellite could focus on a particular area, everything within that area, from troops to movements to equipments, would all be captured by the satellite.

While Yue Zhong was still thinking about how to get started on the assembly of the Nucleus Energy Converter, other people were already playing around with satellites, and this caused his spirits to be dampened.

Yue Zhong sighed inwardly: If only we could go to the main capital or Mo Du to get some skilled workers and equipment.

If Yue Zhong could construct the Nucleus Energy Converter, his faction would be closer to Europe's level of advancement in technology. After all, the Nucleus Energy Converter would be eons ahead of current technology for energy, and it was a new source of energy.

With the converter, Yue Zhong's side would not have to worry about energy, furthermore, with the new energy source, they could advance extremely quickly.

Yue Zhong smiled and replied: "I got it! Mr. Anreit, thanks for your concern."

Anreit's Kingdom of God wanted to use Yue Zhong as a knife, to deal with Wuyan Hong. Yue Zhong knew this well. However, Yue Zhong and Wuyan Hong had an irreconcilable grudge between the both of them, and as long as he could utilize anything, he would do so.

On the road towards Daluo Mountains, a number of elite troops were making their way onwards without stopping.

All of the soldiers were decked in green military wear and had rifles and hand grenades, as they marched on with resolute expressions towards the direction of Daluo Mountains.

On the way, tanks, armored vehicles, and other self-propelling rocket launchers all formed a line of metal as they continued to push forwards.

Although Wuyan Hong was a racist and supremacist, he treated his own survivors extremely well, and had accepted a number of the border troops. Because of his absorbing of these veterans, he had managed to build up a skilled armored force of his own.

These 5 battalions of 2,000 soldiers were all men of countless battles against zombies and other humans, even against the Mutant Beasts as well. They could be considered the elites of the elites. Their combined fighting experience could even surpass the experience of troops prior to the apocalypse.

If there were any weakness of this Vietnam Army, it would be that their logistics support was lacking compared to before the apocalypse. However, it wasn't a problem for their support to fight their own skirmishes.

These elite and valiant soldiers were almost undefeatable within the Cao B?ng and Lang Son Provinces, and no factions were their match.

Inside an armored jeep, the general of this army, Wu Tong Xiong had a savage look on his face as he spat out: "This time, Yue Zhong and those Chinese beasts are all dead for sure!! I must capture that Yue Zhong alive, break his bones one by one, and fuck his women in front of him!!"

Although Wu Tong Xiong could be considered the leader of the 13 generals of the Vietnam Army, prior to the apocalypse, he had just been a pig butcher, and his character wasn't much, being quick-tempered and lustful. How he could become one of the generals was due to a stroke of luck.

Zhao Wu Shuang sat beside Wu Tong Xiong with his brows creased, hesitating before he spoke up: "I've a bad feeling. Yue Zhong and the rest had always been so careful, why would they suddenly be so stupid as to reveal their positions? Could this be a trap?"

Wu Tong Xiong brushed it off and said: "Wu Shuang, you're too cautious. We already have the photographic proof, you have also seen them, can they be faked?"

Chapter 472: Snipe! Sky Wolf Battalion

Zhao Yuan Shuang became silent, he had personally seen those photographs as well. The visuals and photographs were definitely real, and clearly showed the location of Yue Zhong and his people.

Because of those visuals, they had embarked on this major operation, in order to annihilate Yue Zhong and the rest totally.

Yue Zhong's team had become a thorn in Wuyan Hong's side, and could threaten his plans and establishments.

In a bid to counter the threat, Wuyan Hong had summoned the troops stationed in the surrounding villages back to Lang Son City. The city could accommodate 140,000 survivors easily. However, without the support of the surrounding towns, the survivors within Lang Son City had to adjust their living conditions.

Hong!! Hong!

All of a sudden, a huge explosion occurred in front of the troops, as 5 unfortunate soldiers were directly blasted into pieces by the landmines buried within the ground.

"Watch out!! There are landmines!!" One of the commanders in front hollered out hurriedly.

The entire force stopped in their tracks.

50 soldiers with bomb disposal equipment began a sweep of the entire area. During the civil war, there were countless landmines buried as well. After the war, the soldiers had to expend a lot of energy and manpower to deal with the situation. Hence, the number of soldiers with the technical know-how was not small.

At this moment, there was a sudden loud roar of a motorbike, and a sleek and powerful Swift Shadow Motorbike shot out from one side with lightning speed.

Yue Zhong, who was riding the motorbike, pulled out a .05 and

fired wildly at the 50 members of the bomb defusal squad, causing dozens of them to fall to the ground in their own blood.

After suddenly bursting onto the scene and killing those soldiers, Yue Zhong turned the Swift Shadow Motorbike around, charging straight for a small hill before disappearing

Yue Zhong was not overly arrogant in thinking that he could handle an army of 2,000 elites, but he had launched a preemptive strike to test out the enemy, as well as killing a few of his oppositions forces.

"Attack!!" With Yue Zhong's appearance, everyone became nervous, and after the order was given, the soldiers began to get on formation, getting behind cover and scanning with caution for signs of the enemy.

These soldiers were truly the elite. Molded by Wuyan Hong, and after being trained, the moment they got in formation, they were like a beast curled up with spikes, as each of the soldiers held their guns ready to fire in any direction. Anyone who sought to attack the beast would be immediately torn apart by the resulting fire.

Although Yue Zhong was strong, he was not so foolish as to think that he could take on 2,000 elite soldiers. He rode the Swift Shadow Motorbike to about 2km away, where he climbed atop a tree, and pulled out his Falcon Sniper, aiming at that Vietnamese army.

After locking onto an armored vehicle, Yue Zhong pulled the trigger once.

A single armor-piercing round penetrated the hull, before a resulting explosion blasted apart the entire vehicle.

The Falcon Sniper could automatically generate a round every day, and there were 3 types of rounds: armor-piercing, explosive and incendiary.

The armor-piercing round was the strongest in penetrative

power. The explosive round had the most destructive ability, and the moment the incendiary round met its target, it could create a 100 sqm area of fire.

"Sniper!! Sniper!!" Seeing the armored vehicle suddenly exploding, one of the officer's face fell as he shouted out.

With that order, all the vehicles swiftly travelled towards a patch of trees, engaging in covered movement.

After destroying one of them, Yue Zhong had no means of taking down another.

He looked at the responsive Vietnamese Army, and quickly packed his sniper rifle, activating his [Shadow Steps], fleeing through the forests towards the distance like a ghost.

Hong!! Hong!!

After 2 minutes, the entire area which Yue Zhong was previously in came under heavy artillery fire, as round after round blasted the entire forest into oblivion. Trees were destroyed, stones were crushed into dust, and it was truly a devastating scene.

Even for Yue Zhong, if he had been caught in that dense bombardment, he would have suffered greatly.

"An elite troop is really different!" Yue Zhong had charged out of that area and rushed down another small hill, before using his Swift Shadow Motorbike to ride for another few kilometres. He couldn't help looking back at the scene of destruction and his eyes flashed strangely.

Yue Zhong pulled out a walkie-talkie and spoke into it: "It's up to you now!"

"Yes, Leader!" The person on the other end was Li Shi Min, whose face was grimy, and had an exhausted expression, but his eyes were filled with a resolute glint, hugging his Bronze Bow closely.

After that, Yue Zhong quickly rode his motorbike and

disappeared into the distance.

"Onwards!"

After firing a volley of artillery, and not discovering any further movements, the commander of the Vietnamese army gave the order to continue. They did not want to be impeded by a single person, it was too shameful for their elite group.

A number of bomb defusal soldiers came forward, their equipment sourcing for landmines.

Just as these soldiers were carefully inspecting the ground, a bone arrow suddenly shot out from a forest, towards 2 of the soldiers without warning, piercing one of their hearts and blasting the other into pieces.

Such a miserable end immediately caused the rest to be shocked, as they hurriedly dodged for cover.

Wu Tong Xiong's eyes flashed as his expression turned savage, jumping down from a jeep and roaring: "Damn Chinese dog! You want to use these petty tricks to delay our huge empire? Sky Wolf Battalion! Come with me!"

The Sky Wolf Battalion were an elite force even more formidable than the Wolf Fang Battalion. Within it, every single member had to be at least above Level 40. Each soldier had been forged through countless battles and possessed incredible combat prowess.

The Sky Wolf Battalion was the strongest blade in Wuyan Hong's arsenal, and he had given Wu Tong Xiong command.

Wu Tong Xiong bellowed with rage, and immediately 16 Sky Wolf experts gathered by his side.

"Commander!! He's headed that way!!" A scrawny shifty-eyed member of the Sky Wolf Battalion pointed to the direction Li Shi Min ran.

This particular member had a powerful vision ability, and he had

enhanced it a number of times, being able to scan and see clearly the location of enemies within a radius of 1.5km. With such an ability, he was adept at tracking, detection as well as anti-reconnaissance.

"Kill him!!" Wu Tong Xiong's expression was hideous as he propelled forward like a cannonball towards the direction.

The experts of the Sky Wolf Battalion followed closely behind, all giving chase.

On the other side, the majority of the army continued with their landmine removal as they slowly advanced.

Clearing of landmines had 3 main methods, machine, detonation as well as manual removal. The Vietnamese army lacked the advanced technology to remove by means of machine, and they could not afford to waste ammunition or firepower through detonation. Therefore, they relied on the simplest but slowest method of manual removal. Their advance thus slowed down.

Back to Li Shi Min, he was charging through a thick forest like a defeated dog, having to run for his life after just firing one arrow. The powerful killing intent was chasing him without stop, and the moment he turned back, he knew he would be dead.

Li Shi Min was an Agility-based Evolver, but even someone like him would die when facing with 16 other powerful experts. Even the leader, Wu Tong Xiong, could easily take care of Li Shi Min.

"You can really run!! Must be an Agility-based Evolver? Even if you are, today, you'll die by my hands!" Wu Tong Xiong looked at Li Shi Min who was not so far ahead, causing the leaves and twigs around him to scatter. Wu Tong Xiong laughed coldly, and activated all his strength, shooting forwards even faster.

Wu Tong Xiong was the strongest fighter under Wuyan Hong's command, his level being 56. Furthermore, he was a Strength and Agility-based dual attribute Evolver, and his combat strength was

truly terrifying. It was just slightly inferior to Wuyan Hong and those others who hole themselves up in the forest to train non-stop. Currently, with him exerting all his might, he managed to draw even closer to Li Shi Min.

"Damn it!! What an insane speed!!" Li Shi Min took a glance at the closing Wu Tong Xiong, and gritted his teeth, turning around with a quick draw, shooting an explosive arrow towards Wu Tong Xiong.

"Cheap tricks!!" Wu Tong Xiong faced the terrifying explosive arrow and laughed coldly, his face twisting slightly, dodging the life-taking arrow by a hair's breadth.

The arrows passed by Wu Tong Xiong and exploded on an expert of the Sky Wolf Battalion, causing the head of that expert to be sent flying.

That expert was decked in Type 3 Mutant Beast hide with its obscene defence, which could withstand the bulk of the impact, but his head was unprotected, hence, decapitation.

"Damn bastard!!" Another Sky Wolf Battalion Spirit-based expert bellowed in rage, and immediately unleashed a Spirit attack at Li Shi Min.

Faced with that attack, Li Shi Min felt his head swim, his speed slowing down. He bit down on his lip viciously, shaking himself clear from the pain. However, a bullet had reached him by this time, and he gritted his teeth, barely twisting his body. Alas, the bullet pierced his left ear, ripping it apart, causing blood to splatter everywhere.

Chapter 473: Wu Tong Xiong!

At the same time, a bone arrow shot through the air with a green trail, exploding on Li Shi Min's body, sending him flying about 6 - 7m.

If it wasn't for the protection of the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, his body might have been pierced. Even so, the impact from that bone arrow shocked his entire system, causing some broken bones and a disruption to his internal blood and energy flow. He coughed up a mouthful of blood.

Li Shi Min was after all, a Level 42 Agility-based Evolver. He wasn't afraid of contending against any one expert from the Sky Wolf Battalion. However, if he was up against 2 or more people working together, he definitely would be at a disadvantage. With the combined efforts of 16 Sky Wolf Battalion members, he had no choice but to forcefully navigate and survive.

Li Shi Min knew that it was a critical juncture, and he hastily rolled to one side, dodging into a patch of wild grass, making use of the cover to evade other incoming attacks.

"Pei!! Damn Chinese dog!!" One of the experts from the Sky Wolf Battalion spat out, before making a grabbing motion in mid-air, as a huge gravitational force enveloped the entire region Li Shi Min was in, causing him to be pressured by 4 times the usual gravity.

Weighed down by that pressure, Li Shi Min felt as though he had suddenly put on a whole lug of meat, his heartbeat becoming irregular, and his spectre-like speed slowing down a whole lot as well.

[Gravity Manipulation] was considered to be the bane for all Agility-based Evolvers. Unless it was an expert that had received huge enhancements in their Strength and Agility, it was hard for most people to ignore the restraining effects of the added gravity.

Wu Tong Xiong laughed savagely, shooting towards Li Shi Min like a cannonball: "Chinese dog!! I will take my time to slaughter you, you swine!!"

"Go to hell!" At a distance, Yue Zhong was atop a tree, and his eyes flashed coldly before pressing a button.

Hong! Hong! Hong!!

All of a sudden, there were numerous explosions, as a number of remote explosives hidden in the forest detonated, enveloping all 16 members of the Sky Wolf Battalion in seconds.

Shrapnel flew everywhere, as trees were twisted till they broke, caused by the resulting force from the explosion travelling outwards.

Li Shi Min was also sent flying backwards from the force, landing about 7-8m away.

Those members of the Sky Wolf Battalion were after all not simple people, each being of Level 40 and higher. That explosion might not necessarily be able to kill them instantly. Hence, for his own sake, Li Shi Min quickly scrambled to his feet and rushed towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong was currently leading over 20 of his own elite experts, all of them likewise above Level 40. He had set this trap with Li Shi Min as bait, as a means of taking down as many experts under Wuyan Hong as he could.

A Level 40 Enhancer was not easily groomed. Each one that they took down meant one less expert on Wuyan Hong's side.

As the dust settled, the devastating scene was revealed, as 8 corpses laid strewn on the ground. While the experts of the Sky Wolf Battalion were strong, they were still after all, of flesh and blood. They had lost 8 of their members as a result of that explosion.

There were still 8 who had survived, including Wu Tong Xiong.

"Fuck!! You bunch of Chinese dogs must die!!"

Wu Tong Xiong had sensed the danger at the first instant and evaded the heart of the explosion. However, a piece of shrapnel had penetrated his left eye, blinding him on that side. It caused him to be filled with rage. He grabbed his Level 4 Green Tooth Spear and charged towards Yue Zhong and his men!!

Since their lead had charged forwards so ferociously, the remaining 7 members also followed closely behind, brandishing their weapons.

Wu Tong Xiong was one of the strongest killers of the Great Vietnamese Empire, having killed over hundreds of people by himself, and he had even counted 3 other Evolvers as his victims. That was why he was so confident of facing Yue Zhong and the rest.

Yue Zhong saw that Wu Tong Xiong and his men was rushing at him, and immediately pulled out his Stinger, firing 6 shots at 2 of the Sky Wolf Battalion members behind.

Of the 2, one was an Agility-based Evolver, and the moment Yue Zhong had aimed at him, he had dodged to a side, hiding behind a huge tree.

The other immediately transformed into a 3m-tall were-bear, with thick and coarse skin. As the 3 Stinger bullets landed on his body, they caused 3 bloody wounds, but not enough to deeply penetrate nor heavily harm his body.

"Experts! These fellows aren't weak!" Yue Zhong frowned when he saw that.

These men were truly experts, but as long as they could be taken down, Wuyan Hong will suffer a huge loss.

Wu Tong Xiong snarled at Yue Zhong with a twisted expression: "Damn Chinese dog, I will tear you into shreds, and cook your brains as tea!"

"Retard!! I'll slice you apart first!!" Following a cold laugh, Bai Xiao Sheng appeared, slashing towards Wu Tong Xiong with a Dark Magic Blade in his hands.

Currently, under Yue Zhong's command, Bai Xiao Sheng had the fastest speed, only Xin Jia Rou could surpass him, and only under the condition that she activated her 2nd Order Skill Divine Speed, and it would only be a short while.

"Scram!!" Wu Tong Xiong's eyes turned bloodshot, as he growled like a beast, using his 16 times Strength to strike with his spear, parrying Bai Xiao Sheng's blow.

Bai Xiao Sheng's Strength was only 3 times that of a normal person, and with that huge disparity in Strength, he was instantly sent flying 6-7m, while the Dark Magic Blade in his hands also got sent flying.

As a Strength and Agility-based dual attribute Evolver, Wu Tong Xiong possessed a huge advantage in battle. If Bai Xiao Sheng wasn't an Agility-based Evolver, he could have easily pierced Bai Xiao Sheng with that single spear strike.

Wu Tong Xiong sent Bai Xiao Sheng flying, and immediately shot forwards like an arrow, a fierce glint appearing in his eyes, as he thrust viciously with his spear.

White Bones' fiery eyes flashed dangerously, as it raised its hands, shooting 6 bone spikes out at Wu Tong Xiong. If Wu Tong Xiong insisted on killing Bai Xiao Sheng, he would be pierced by those sharp bones spikes.

Wu Tong Xiong did not intend to exchange his own life for Bai Xiao Sheng's, and he swiftly turned around, the Green Tooth Spear quickly parrying those Bone Spikes.

Bai Xiao Sheng seized the opportunity to evade to one side, his face pale. He had always thought it would be hard to find someone that can win over him other than Yue Zhong, but today, he found

out that Wu Tong Xiong had crushed his confidence easily, filling him with unwillingness and rage. However, he was clear that he was not Wu Tong Xiong's match, and if he continued, he would be throwing away his life.

On the other side, the 20 Level 40 experts came to blows with the 7 remaining experts of the Sky Wolf Battalion.

Both sides exhibited their abilities, and in that exchange, Yue Zhong's side lost an expert. The other side suffered a death and a heavily injured casualty.

Under the combined blows from everyone, the heavily injured Sky Wolf Battalion member was killed the next moment, as the remaining 5 members were suppressed and forced to retreat into the forest.

Yue Zhong looked at the scene and frowned, before letting out a loud howl.

Lightning, who had been lying in wait, immediately leapt out, biting off the head of one of the Sky Wolf experts.

"Beast! Damn Chinese dogs!! You guys are forcing me!!" Wu Tong Xiong watched as members of the Sky Wolf Battalion fell one after another, and his eyes became red, finally releasing his trump card: his Second Order Forest Ranger Transformation.

In an instant, Wu Tong Xiong's body sprouted a layer of green runes that covered his entire body. His size didn't change, however, he seemed to become one with the environment, giving off an aura of invincibility.

After transforming into a Second Order Forest Ranger, Wu Tong Xiong looked coldly at Yue Zhong, his body flashing and he reached White Bones with a speed that surpassed Type 2 Lightning.

In response, White Bones shot out bone spikes one after another at Wu Tong Xiong.

Wu Tong Xiong gripped his Green Tooth Spear and easily swatted the bone spikes away, before thrusting forwards, piercing the skeleton that could withstand even the impact from a 12.7mm round. Immediately he swung with all his might, sending White Bones soaring through the air, landing 20m away.

"What a strong fellow!!" Yue Zhong saw how easily Wu Tong Xiong sent White Bones flying, and his pupils narrowed. If it had been a normal person, that single strike could have easily caused the heart of the victim to be destroyed almost instantly.

Yue Zhong could see that Wu Tong Xiong was a close-combat specialist, and he immediately activated his Gravity Manipulation, causing a two-fold gravitational force to press down on Wu Tong Xiong.

Wu Tong Xiong laughed savagely at Yue Zhong, shooting towards him like a cannonball: "It's no use!! Unless you can control the gravity to be more than 5 times! Otherwise, with just this, it's useless!!"

Yue Zhong's face remained impassive, as he retreated explosively, pulling out his .05 gun and spraying wildly at Wu Tong Xiong.

"Guns are useless too!! Today, you are going to die!!" Wu Tong Xiong laughed maniacally, charging through the barrage of bullets, even with Yue Zhong's marksmanship and Agility, he could not hit him even once.

"This rabid dog! He truly has some ability!" Yue Zhong watched Wu Tong Xiong charging at him wildly, before activating his [Art of Fear], and a terrifying Spirit attack enveloped Wu Tong Xiong.

The moment the skill landed on Wu Tong Xiong's body, a green light radiated outwards, and dispelled the Spirit attack. Yue Zhong knew at once that there was a treasure on his body that defended against Spirit attacks!

Chapter 474: Pouncing on Thin Air!

"Go to hell you Chinese dog!!" Wu Tong Xiong had reached Yue Zhong in a mere 3 seconds, as a spear thrust came slicing through the air like a meteor, aiming for Yue Zhong's head. His speed had thoroughly surpassed that of a Type 2 Lightning.

The Second Order Forest Ranger Transformation had given him a huge boost to his body constitution, at the same time, within the forest, his movement speed and battle senses were enhanced. This spear strike was infinitely more overbearing and oppressive than the one he had unleashed on Bai Xiao Sheng.

Yue Zhong had no way of evading, and his eye's flashed with a chilly light, pulling out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade, forcefully attempting to parry the Green Tooth Spear.

It was Yue Zhong's 9 times Strength against Wu Tong Xiong's 20-times that of a normal person after his Second Order skill, and instantly, Yue Zhong was sent flying backwards by the disparity in strength, his hands numb, and the Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade in his arms almost flew from his grip.

A cold glint flashed in Wu Tong Xiong's eyes, as he shot forwards, and once more, thrust forward with a vicious spear strike towards Yue Zhong's heart.

Right at this time, a huge hole appeared in mid air, and from the hole, 10 bone spikes shot out like shooting stars at Wu Tong Xiong.

Wu Tong Xiong immediately withdrew his weapon, causing it to blur with speed, before striking at the 10 bone spikes, shattering them into pieces.

At that instant, Yue Zhong pulled out his 12.7mm heavy machine gun and sprayed at Wu Tong Xiong.

"Fool!! If you can't hit me, your machine gun is just trash!!" Wu Tong Xiong laughed out coldly, his body dodging all the bullets,

maneuvering towards Yue Zhong and once more thrusting out with his spear.

"You are the true Fool!!" Yue Zhong laughed coldly himself, as the Bronze Spiritual Bell rose up from his chest, forming a green barrier in front of him.

As the insane strength behind Wu Tong Xiong's spear strike slammed into the shield, the shield shuddered a while, as traces of ripples spread out all over the shield.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed, as he immediately activated his Devil Flame, causing a huge pillar of fire to engulf the area around him, including Wu Tong Xiong that had given his all in that earlier strike.

Wu Tong Xiong's body responded with a white glow, as a bright light of energy enveloped him, blocking that pillar of Devil Flame.

As the top expert under Wuyan Hong, Wu Tong Xiong had a number of fortunate encounters, and he had even killed a heavily-injured Type 3 Mutant Beast before. This white light shield was a treasure he obtained from that Type 3 Mutant Beast.

Right at this time, a sniper bullet blasted on Wu Tong Xiong's body, further whittling down the energy of the white shield.

A number of gravitational shackles flew onto his body, causing him to be pressured by 6 times the normal gravity.

"Damn it! Are they all defeated?" Wu Tong Xiong felt the abnormal changes, as his expression turned ashen and he whipped around to look, only to discover that the other side had been defeated and rounded up by the experts under Yue Zhong.

"Chinese dog!! I will remember today's debt. You won't have to wait long, I'll definitely be back to kill you myself!!" Wu Tong Xiong eyed Yue Zhong coldly, before turning around swiftly to retreat. Although he was brutish and violent, he wasn't an idiot. If he continued to fight on, he definitely would fall here.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, activating his [Shadow Steps], and using his speed that can match a Type 2 Lightning, he chased after Wu Tong Xiong: "Where do you think you're going? You will be buried here today!!"

Wu Tong Xiong was faster than a Type 2 Lightning in his Second Order Forest Ranger form. However, with the 6-times gravitational force weighing on him, his speed had plunged by quite a lot.

In just barely 3 breaths, Yue Zhong had chased up, and was slashing viciously towards him.

"Fuck! I, Your father, am definitely killing you today!!" Wu Tong Xiong's eyes flashed fiercely as he twisted his body abruptly, thrusting out with his spear like an enraged dragon.

10 sharp bone spikes suddenly exploded out from behind Yue Zhong, aiming for Wu Tong Xiong.

Yue Zhong did not hide nor evade, his eyes flashing coldly, and his right hand conjured out a long Devil Flame Spear, before he threw it forcefully towards the white shield protecting Wu Tong Xiong.

Wu Tong Xiong's spear thrust landed on the green barrier covering Yue Zhong, and the explosive strength tore apart the shield, causing it to disintegrate.

The Devil Flame Spear also came in contact with the white shield on Wu Tong Xiong, and the resulting force from the explosive nature of the Devil Flame immediately blasted the shield apart, so much so that even Wu Tong Xiong's hair was singed from the heat.

The 10 bone spikes continued to assault Wu Tong Xiong.

That tyrannical spear strike from Wu Tong Xiong had destroyed Yue Zhong's green barrier, however, he had no time to withdraw his spear for another strike, and he could only twist his body to roll to one side.

The 10 bone spikes suddenly shifted their trajectory and landed on Wu Tong Xiong's body, sending him flying back about 4 or 5 metres, shaking his internal organs while he coughed up a mouthful of fresh blood.

Wu Tong Xiong's body had been enhanced a few times by different blood essences, but he had no way of comparing against Yue Zhong. After receiving that blow from White Bones, his body had truly suffered a heavy injury.

Before he even landed, a gust of wind blew past, and his head disappeared, as a fountain blood sprayed from his headless corpse, dying the ground red.

As the wind settled, it revealed the Type 3 Lightning's silhouette, and was precisely it that seized the opportunity to destroy this strong enemy of Yue Zhong when he was mortally wounded.

Confirming Wu Tong Xiong's death, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief and walked over to his corpse to strip it of the equipment.

This Wu Tong Xiong was after all the strongest general of Wuyan Hong, and he truly had a vast collection of items. From his body, Yue Zhong obtained both Strength and Agility-enhancing equipment. There were even 4 pieces of rare equipment. They were the Level 3 Defensive Armor, Bell of Clarity, Light Shield of Defence and the Level 4 Treasure Green Tooth Spear.

"Level 5 Treasure: Light Shield of Defence! Upon equipping, it can automatically defend its owner. When energy is depleted, it can be recharged, or automatically refilled after 24 hours."

"Level 4 Treasure: Green Tooth Spear! It possesses a strong penetrative power, and can destroy any weapon of Level 3 and below."

Yue Zhong valued the Level 5 Treasure Light Shield of Defence the most, with this, he gained another defensive mechanism. In this new world, defensive treasures were even more precious than

offensive ones. Likewise, they were hard to obtain.

Other than Linghu Xiangru and Wu Tong Xiong, Yue Zhong had not yet met any other strong experts that had such powerful defensive artifacts.

Bai Xiao Sheng came up to Yue Zhong and reported: "Leader!! Everyone has been taken care of!"

Although the Sky Wolf Battalion was strong, with the enemy forces 5 times their size, they were still wiped out. Of course, Yue Zhong's side paid the price of 2 heavy casualties as well.

"Disperse!" Yue Zhong ordered indifferently.

With his orders, everyone quickly made their way away from the area.

=====

"What's going on? How come Wu Tong Xiong is not back yet?" Back at the army, Zhao Yuan Shuang paced about anxiously.

Wu Tong Xiong was a terrifying killer who had killed an entire company of elites on his own, as well as over hundreds of militants. Zhao Yuan Shuang had utmost confidence in his abilities. However, Wu Tong Xiong was Wuyan Hong's number one right-hand man, if anything untoward was to happen to him, Zhao Yuan Shuang knew he could not bear the responsibility either.

Zhao Yuan Shuang called for one of the commanders of the elite force: "Chen Gong Ming, go take a company of your troops to go provide reinforcements to General Wu."

The elite force was made up of all experts who had undergone strict military training. They were well-versed in modern warfare as well, and in battle, they could exhibit a might that was stronger than just experts relying on their skills and abilities.

"Yes! Commander!"

Chen Gong Ming saluted, before quickly leading his men towards the forest.

After a long while, just as Zhao Yuan Shuang was becoming impatient, Chen Gong Ming came back, his expression ashen: "Commander! General Wu has been martyred!"

When Zhao Yuan Shuang heard this, his mind went blank, as he stammered out at a loss: "What??? General Wu has died!?"

Wu Tong Xiong was Wuyan Hong's most trusted aide, and they could be considered as close as brothers. With Wu Tong Xiong's death, as the vice-commander, Zhao Yuan Shuang was sure to be in trouble. He did not dare imagine the consequences of being the bearer of the news.

Zhao Yuan Shuang gritted his teeth as he hollered out: "Everyone advance with full speed!! We must reach Daluo Mountains as fast as we can! This time, we must annihilate Yue Zhong and his people!!"

With that command, everyone moved out. Over 200 bomb defusal soldiers came to the front lines to clear the mines quickly.

Yue Zhong had planted plenty of landmines along the way, including some traps, which slowed the advance of the Vietnamese troops. However, Zhao Yuan Shuang was insistent on making sure they reached Daluo Mountains.

Following the report, Zhao Yuan Shuang brought his troops to the inner parts of Daluo Mountains, however, to their dismay, they discovered that everyone had gone, leaving behind massive caves.

"Damn!! He escaped!!" Zhao Yuan Shuang looked at those countless caves and his face turned steely.

"Commander! The Emperor has something to say to you!" Right at this time, a soldier came running up with a transmitter to Zhao Yuan Shuang. He received it before carefully asking: "What instructions do you have for your subject, my liege?"

From the other end, Wuyan Hong's steely voice came resounding, together with some explosions in the background: "Yuan Shuang! Bring the troops back immediately!! We have trouble!"

Chapter 475: Battle at Lang Son!

A distance away from Daluo Mountains, 600 soldiers were braving the cold and snow as they lugged huge bags of resources towards a certain direction.

Every single one of them, even children of 11 or 12 were carrying guns or some bags of dozen jins. If it was a scene from prior to the apocalypse, there would be people who would stand out to curse at Yue Zhong for mistreating women and children. However, in this new world, whoever dared to snatch those guns from those kids, those little rascals would definitely fight.

Guns were a symbol of strength, and in this new world, only those with strength could lead better lives.

"Master! If we just walk away like that, would it be fine?" Xin Jia Rou, who was decked in a military uniform and looked extremely valiant and charming, walked up to Yue Zhong and asked.

Yue Zhong had initially agreed to help the Kingdom of God to deal with the Wuyan Hong problem. However, Yue Zhong had instead taken his people to escape from Daluo Mountains, and it caused Xin Jia Rou to be uncertain.

Yue Zhong glanced at Xin Jia Rou and replied mildly: "I only promise to attack and cause Wuyan Hong some problems, not engaging in a full frontal assault against his elite!"

The Kingdom of God had intended to make use of Yue Zhong to deal with Wuyan Hong harshly. Yue Zhong had his own intentions as well. With his current strength now, even if he could defeat those elites of Wuyan Hong, it would be a devastating loss to his side as well. To engage the 2,000-strong army, he would definitely have to pay a price. He was not willing to do something so foolish.

Even so, Yue Zhong would be considered to have offended the Kingdom of God. However, he did not care, because he had always

intended to go against this mega-empire that intended to take control of the whole globe. Furthermore, in the future, if he wanted to bring the Chinese to new heights, he definitely would come to clashes with the Kingdom of God.

Hearing his words, Xin Jia Rou became silent as she fell back behind Yue Zhong and they continued on their journey.

=====

Outside Lang Son City, a number of well-equipped soldiers were engaged in attacking the city, firing heavy artillery at the inner parts of the city, destroying structures and buildings.

"Fucking bastard!! Chen Sheng Yong dared to attack at this time!" At Lang Son City, on top a secret vantage point, Wuyan Hong overlooked the city that was being bombarded, as his soldiers and bases were being taken down one by one. His expression was extremely ugly.

Eagle King Chen Sheng Yong was a small-time leader hailing from the direction of Th~~??~~i Nguy~~??~~n*, and his faction could not compare to Wuyan Hong, with only 80,000 survivors. However, Chen Sheng Yong prioritized the advancement of his army, and had a 10,000 strong army. The ratio of his military to his faction was 1:8. While the army seemed huge, in truth, only 2,000 of them had guns. The rest of the 8,000 relied on melee weapons to fight.

Even so, Eagle King Chen Sheng Yong had built a name for himself in the Northern Vietnam area, and Wuyan Hong had never intended to provoke him.

Wuyan Hong had a truly large faction, but to deal with Eagle King Chen Sheng Yong, it would be at a cost as well. Although there were zombies in between the 2 factions, they both knew about each other, and had remained impassive towards each other. Wuyan Hong had never thought that Chen Sheng Yong would take this opportunity to stab him in the back. Furthermore, his timing was impeccable, as Wuyan Hong had actually deployed a majority

of his troops to deal with Yue Zhong.

Right now, in Lang Son City, Wuyan Hong had 6 battalions stationed, roughly 2,500 soldiers on standby. However, Zhao Yuan Shuang was currently holding the 6 most elite infantry battalions. Although they were both 6 battalions, in terms of combat strength, the troops on Zhao Yuan Shuang's hands were at least twice that of those remaining with Wuyan Hong.

With the dense barrage of artillery fire, Eagle King Chen Sheng Yong and his troops began to overcome post after post.

He looked at the various camps that he conquered in Lang Son and his face revealed a look of excitement: "Wuyan Hong!! This time, you're going to fall at my hands!"

Being first in the charge was the elite battalion under Chen Sheng Yong, and they charged in after each volley of heavy fire, storming through with their secondary attacks as they advanced.

One of the intelligence officer came up to bootlick: "Congratulations Eagle King!! After this, there will be no one that can compare to you in the whole of North Vietnam!"

Another intelligence officer also laughed slightly: "Eagle King truly is a man of miracles! You managed to breach Wuyan Hong's defences in such a short while. This Wuyan Hong truly is old-fashioned, he dares to call himself Emperor. We're already in which century? Come on."

When Wuyan Hong established his Great Vietnam Empire, he had declared himself as the first Emperor. Because of his sole command and leadership, no one expressed any dissatisfaction. Those that did were already dead. However, in other factions, there were those who were unhappy with his oppressive and tyrannical rule. It was not like in ancient times, now society was more civil and cultured. Even those insufferable officials of high positions and despotic sons of leaders in countries or corporates did not dare call themselves Emperor.

"I would like to be Emperor myself!!" Chen Sheng Yong glanced at his intelligence officers, his face wearing a grin, but he sighed lightly in his heart.

The position of an Emperor, whose words was law, just a single sentence could decide the fate of an entire heritage. Who wouldn't want that sort of authority and power? However, Chen Sheng Yong looked at his subordinates who did not support the idea of an emperor rule, and hence, he did not voice out that inner desire to establish a Vietnam empire in his own name as well. After all, he still relied on his men to help him conquer and expand, if he just consoled himself with a single leader rule, it would be enough. Being an emperor was pushing it, no one would support him.

In truth, there were many experts who did not agree with Wuyan Hong's self-proclamation as Emperor, and had thrown their lots in with Chen Sheng Yong, which proved that the hearts of the people played a part in strength as well.

The defences within Lang Son City was incredibly stubborn, and every single soldier of the Great Vietnam Empire fought back valiantly against the assault of Chen Sheng Yong's troops.

After Chen Sheng Yong launched his assault on Lang Son, with every step of the way, there was a price of blood to pay. Both sides suffered casualties in the resulting slaughter for each defence post.

The 6 battalions of infantry soldiers stationed within Lang Son City were definitely not a match for Chen Yong Sheng's forces, but in the clashes, they exhibited a strong fighting will and spirit to defend their posts, fighting it out with their lives on the line. Hence, the Eagle King's army suffered greatly with each advance in position.

Lang Son City had seemingly turned into a meat grinder, swallowing the lives of both Wuyan Hong's and Chen Yong Sheng's forces.

Both sides had gone all out right from the get go, and the

casualties were increasing. However, both sides had no choice, and could only grit their teeth to continue.

This battle would determine who would become the boss of this entire region. Regardless if it was Wuyan Hong swallowing Chen Sheng Yong's forces, or the other way round, one of them would definitely become the overlord after the battle.

With a faction that had over 200,000 survivors, it was more than enough to be recognized as the presiding faction in this area.

It was precisely due to the lure of becoming the overlord of the entire region that Chen Sheng Yong had decided to risk it all and engage Wuyan Hong's forces.

A military officer came up to Chen Yong Sheng with a pale expression as he asked: "Eagle King!! The 3rd Battalion had fallen!! What do we do now??"

The 3rd Battalion had just charged into the base in Lang Son City, and engaged in an intense crossfire for about an hour. Their losses had by then exceeded half their original numbers, and this kind of results would cause anxiety to a commander.

Chen Sheng Yong ordered with a steely expression: "Command the 2nd Mortar Battalion to immediately fire another round at Lang Son City!!"

After clashing for about 3 hours, 3 of the infantry battalions had been severely decimated, and although the enemy had suffered more, such a result was unacceptable to Chen Sheng Yong. Those soldiers that were decimated were his elites, and training up another new batch of soldiers to be like those would not be easy.

The commander was shocked as he stammered: "Eagle King!! There are many of our comrades in Lang Son City!!"

As the soldiers were extremely strong in their camaraderie, the mortar and artillery troops did not fire any rounds when their comrades had charged in. Furthermore, there were many ordinary

citizens within the city. If they acted, many of the ordinary survivors would definitely suffer.

Chen Sheng Yong's eyes were filled with a chilly light: "This is an order!!"

"Yes!!" The soldier's heart turned cold as he quickly dismissed himself.

Hong!! Hong!!

Immediately, a volley of rounds blasted on to Lang Son City, causing various structures and buildings to be destroyed, as numerous survivors were injured or killed in the resulting blasts or falling debris.

Under that terrifying artillery attack, the entire Lang Son City was plunged into chaos, as countless survivors rushed out of their own houses and tried to escape towards another direction.

Rioters took the chance to start committing arson, robbery and rape. The whole of Lang Son City became like a scene out of hell.

Wuyan Hong saw the growing mayhem with bloodshot eyes as he bellowed out: "Chen Sheng Yong you bastard!! You dare to fire on our own countrymen!! I will tear you into pieces!! There will be nothing left of your body!!"

Wuyan Hong had never expected Chen Sheng Yong to be so ruthless, to actually fire onto the innocent survivors, causing mayhem and chaos.

As the volleys of artillery fire continued raining down on the various structures and buildings, soldiers and survivors alike were either blasted to death or buried alive.

After a few rounds of heavy fire, the 4th Battalion of Chen Sheng Yong charged in, launching an assault on the battered and broken people of Lang Son City.

Due to the heavy fire, many of the elite soldiers and experts of

Wuyan Hong were killed, and the ordinary soldiers had long since lost their courage and escaped.

"Wolf Fang Battalion!! Charge!!" Wuyan Hong saw the entrance of the troops under Chen Sheng Yong, his face turning extremely unsightly, as he made his way towards them.

Chapter 476: [The Oriole Behind](#)

(From the idiom: The mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind: meaning to pursue a narrow gain, neglecting the greater danger)

Wuyan Hong's body flashed, at the same time, he activated his skill [Metal Manipulation], as he slapped a car beside him. The vehicle immediately twisted unto itself, transforming into a layer of battle armour covering his body. With that layer of metal protecting him, even a 12.7mm round would not be able to break past his defence.

Wuyan Hong leapt forward, and he was followed by 50 of his Wolf Fang Battalion members, each of them being over Level 30 in enhancement.

The current commander, Wu Da Hui and vice-commander Li Yuan Da stuck close to Wuyan Hong. They were the strongest in the Wolf Fang Battalion, and even members of the Sky Wolf Battalion were not necessarily a match against them.

The 4th Battalion of the Eagle King's troops quickly came to clash with the Wolf Fang Battalion, and the soldiers of the Eagle King's troops already launched their attacks from afar, as a barrage of rain fell upon the Wolf Fang Battalion.

Under the dense rain of bullets, 4 of the experts were immediately taken out with shots to the head, while the rest activated their skills in a bid to evade the bullets.

Wuyan Hong did not care about the onslaught of bullets, he was after all a Spirit and Strength dual-attribute Evolver, and those normal bullets could not harm him, nor slow him down. Even a large calibre bullet would at most cause him to be knocked back, with no injury.

Wuyan Hong was like a tank as he charged straight at the Eagle

King's 4th Battalion, waving his hand, and activating his Second Order Metal Manipulation skill. A number of sharp steel beams came exploding out suddenly from their various constructions, piercing the bodies of the 4th Battalion soldiers. In a flash, 8 of the soldiers in his line of sight were directly decimated.

After killing 8 of the 4th Battalion soldiers, he was suddenly besieged by 2 soldiers on either of his sides, both of them spraying their weapons at him.

Countless bullets rained down on Wuyan Hong's body, causing his metal armor to be battered and destroyed bit by bit.

Wuyan Hong eyed the two 4th Battalion soldiers and waved a finger at them, as two structures beside the soldiers crumbled upon themselves, and the steel beams within shot out explosively, penetrating their bodies, impaling them onto another wall.

Wu Da Hui immediately transformed into a werewolf as he darted around the field like a spectre, jumping out from structures from time to time, twisting the necks of unsuspecting soldiers.

Li Yuan Da was an Agility-based Evolver, and his speed was astonishingly fast, many a times, the soldiers of the 4th Battalion would just feel a breeze blowing past them, before their heads came off unknowingly.

With Wuyan Hong's lead, the Wolf Fang Battalion tore into the unfortunate 4th Battalion like an enraged tiger, slaughtering them while keeping their own casualties low. Other than the 4 who lost their heads at the start of the battle, another 4 were blasted to death by grenades.

One of the commanders came up to Chen Sheng Yong and reported anxiously: "Eagle King!! The 4th Battalion is requesting for back up!! There are many high level Enhancers among the enemy!! There are even a few Evolvers!!"

Chen Sheng Yong laughed coldly as he stared at the commander:

"So the Wolf Fang Battalion has made their move eh? Heh! Wuyan Hong, seems like you can't take this anymore? Convey my orders!! Immediately fire a volley of artillery fire at the position of the 4th Battalion!! This is an order!!"

"Yes!! Eagle King!" The commander's heart turned cold as he scurried away.

Hong!! Hong!!

With 2 large flashes, all of a sudden, the entire area where the 4th Battalion and the Wolf Fang Battalion was engaged in battle was suddenly bombarded by heavy artillery, causing buildings to be decimated, debris shooting everywhere. The resulting shockwave travelled outwards forcefully, as a number of holes from the impact revealed themselves.

The terrifying artillery attack rained down a few times on the area, causing destruction. Not a single structure above 3m remained.

"The Wolf Fang Battalion is just so-so. Regardless of how powerful their individual capabilities are, there's no way they could withstand the heavy fire." Chen Sheng Yong looked at the region that was decimated and flattened as he laughed coldly: "5th Battalion!! Launch your assault!!"

If it wasn't for the fact that Chen Sheng Yong had limited ammunition for his artillery, he would have long blasted the entire place, totalling it entirely.

Exchanging a battalion of his elite soldiers for Wuyan Hong's elite Wolf Fang Battalion, to Chen Sheng Yong, it was an exchange that was worth it.

The 5th Battalion had low morale after witnessing Chen Sheng Yong's cruel method that did not differentiate between friend or foe, however, they still charged onwards into Lang Son City.

6 of them carefully treaded their way into Lang Son City.

All of a sudden, from the wreckage and debris, 6 sharp steel beams shot out explosively, piercing their bodies, nailing them to the ground.

From within the debris, a 3m-tall man that was covered entirely in steel, looking like a robot jumped out. He did not even turn to look as he retreated back towards the inner parts of Lang Son City.

This man was precisely Wuyan Hong. After that earlier volley of artillery, only he survived. If he hadn't activate his Second Order Metal Manipulation skill earlier, and to control a huge sheet of steel to protect himself, forming thick layers of armor, he might have lost his life in that blast.

"Damn Chen Sheng Yong! He actually disregarded the lives of our fellow Vietnamese!! You're ruthless!! Too vicious!!" As he ran, his heart was filled with intense rage and he cursed Chen Sheng Yong inwardly.

Chen Sheng Yong had relied on that crazy volley of artillery to wipe out his entire Wolf Fang Battalion. There were 6 Evolvers within the battalion, but before they could even unleash their abilities and prowess, they were blasted into nothing by that round of heavy fire, and it truly infuriated Wuyan Hong.

At the same time, that experience was the closest Wuyan Hong had come to death, and he became extremely cautious, not willing to charge out by himself to deal with Chen Sheng Yong or his troops.

With the Wolf Fang Battalion decimated, and Wuyan Hong fleeing, the rest of the soldiers saw their god-like figure actually running away pathetically, and their world seemed to crumble. The moment the 5th Battalion of the Eagle King's forces charged in, the resistance was almost negligible.

If the leader charged forth as the vanguard, there were pros and cons. The pros were that it could raise the morale of the troop, but likewise, should anything happen, or the leader was forced back,

the blow to the soldiers' morale will be detrimental.

Wuyan Hong and the Wolf Fang Battalion had always charged into all battles in the past, seemingly undefeatable. They had become like legends amongst the ordinary soldiers. Now that they have fallen, the fighting will of the soldiers had almost disappeared, as many started to retreat.

"Lang Son City will soon be mine!!!" Chen Sheng Yong heard the good news and favourable reports, his heart leaping with joy.

Once he gained Lang Son City, his prestige would soar, and he would become the overlord of a huge faction of survivors.

Right at this time, a military officer came running in with a pale face, reporting: "Eagle King!! There's an armed forces currently advancing towards us!!"

Chen Sheng Yong's eyes flashed with shock, as he gritted his teeth and asked: "What? How many are there? Which faction is this?"

The military officer replied: "They're from the Kingdom of God!!! They have about 2,000 soldiers, and their equipment are all top-notch. There are tanks, mortars and even assault helicopters!!"

Chen Sheng Yong's expression immediately turned steely as he cursed out loud: "Fucking Kingdom of God!! Didn't they go to the coastal side!! Why did they appear here!! What the hell were you guys up to!! How come you didn't discover this sooner?!"

The information that Wuyan Hong's base had lack of power was given by the Kingdom of God. On one hand, it helped fuel Chen Sheng Yong's ambition, on the other, the Kingdom of God could focus their attention on the coastal factions.

In fact, there was a prior agreement between both parties, where one would control Lang Son, the other the coastal side, and both parties would support each other. Chen Sheng Yong had never thought that the Kingdom of God would choose this moment to

stab a knife in his back, furthermore, at such a time where both Wuyan Hong and he had lost most of their forces, causing him to have no chance to retaliate at all.

The officer was pale faced: "What do we do? Eagle King!!"

Chen Sheng Yong's face turn steely as he ordered: "What else can we do! Immediately retreat!! Convey my orders! Retreat now!!"

"Wait just a moment! You can't retreat!!" At this moment, a voice rang from outside, as a blond hair, blue-eyed man stepped into the command centre.

"How are you, Your Majesty Eagle King? I'm your good friend, Zito! I'm pleased to meet you here." Zito smiled warmly at Chen Sheng Yong.

Chen Sheng Yong had an ugly expression as he asked briskly: "Your Excellency Zito! What is the meaning of this? Wasn't there an agreement between us, that Lang Son will be mine, and the coastal areas will be yours?"

The man in charge of the negotiations between the Kingdom of God and Chen Sheng Yong was precisely this guy called Zito. Chen Sheng Yong knew clearly the might of the Kingdom of God, and the fact was that, he relied on them for the firepower to blast Wuyan Hong's faction so many times today.

Zito's face broke into a crafty smile: "Your Majesty. We're not going back on our word. Lang Son is truly yours. However, our Vietnamese Division of the Kingdom of God wishes for you to join us, becoming a part of us. That way, we can better support your activities here in Vietnam. Regarding the coastal sides, after we take down Lang Son City together, we can work together to bring those other factions down as well."

Chen Sheng Yong mulled a while, before replying slowly: "What if I disagree?"

Zito's smile turned grim as he mocked with a underlying threat:

"Your Majesty, our 2nd Army is already at Th~~??~~i Nguy~~??~~n City awaiting orders, protecting your borders, in case some other factions have their eyes on you. However, if you're not willing to join us, and become our friend! Then I'm afraid, some nasty things will happen!"

Chapter 477: Cooperation!

Zito's words were a blatant threat. If Chen Sheng Yong wasn't willing to submit, then their 1st and 2nd Battalion will immediately launch a simultaneous assault to rip the Eagle King's forces out by the roots.

Chen Sheng Yong had kept 3 battalions back at his establishments, but of those 3, only one could be considered an elite force. The rest were new recruits, and held melee weapons. They were simply not a match for the soldiers from the Kingdom of God, who were well-equipped.

Chen Sheng Yong's face turned ashen, as he clenched his fists tightly. The fury in his heart was surging, and he badly wanted to pummel the guy in front of him right now. If he joined the Kingdom of God, his establishment would still be swallowed up by them anyway. These foreigners were not trustworthy people.

Chen Sheng Yong mulled for a long while, before replying softly: "Fine, I'll do it!"

Zito's face revealed a strange smile, as he opened up a box and handed to Chen Sheng Yong: "Congratulations on making the right choice. This is a Divine Pill that we manufactured. As long as you consume it, you can become a core member of ours."

Chen Sheng Yong's face fell as he stared at Zito, spitting out: "You don't trust me?"

He was naturally clear about what the so-called 'Divine Pill' was. In truth, it was something that the Kingdom of God had processed using the mutant plant life and some strange mutant beasts as research. This was one of the measures used by the Kingdom of God to control any foreign powers. 'Those who aren't our kin are sure to be of a different heart' this sentence, the Europeans were extremely familiar as well.

The Kingdom of God would use such methods to force the control of the leader of any forces outside of their people. If there wasn't an antidote given each month, the leader would die of the effects of poisoning.

Zito maintained that respectful 'smile', saying: "Oh no! We trust the Eagle King. However, with this Divine Pill, our cooperation would be even more smooth-sailing!"

Chen Sheng Yong's face drained of colour as he fell silent. The moment he consumed this pill, his life was basically doomed to be in the hands of the Kingdom of God, there would be no way to escape their clutches again.

Right at this time, a military officer came bursting into the room in high spirits, reporting: "Eagle King!! Your Majesty!! Wuyan Hong's forces from afar had returned!! They're currently engaging the 1st Battalion of the Kingdom of God's Vietnam Branch in an intense battle!"

"What! Haha! That's great!! Hearing the news, Chen Sheng Yong's face regained some colour, as he chuckled at Zito: "Your Excellency! Did you hear that? Now Wuyan Hong's forces are fighting it out with your 1st Battalion, if I were to join forces with him now, what do you think?"

Zito's face that had always been polite now looked positively ugly, although he still smiled and said: "Your Majesty! You wouldn't do that! We are your friends! I hope that you can work with our forces to eliminate Wuyan Hong's troops! After that, we can split Lang Son City equally!"

Now that the situation was not favourable to the Kingdom of God, Zito immediately changed his tune and threw his earlier threats out the window, opting for another tactic.

Cheng Sheng Yong eyed Zito coolly and ordered: "Mr Zito!! I will take your proposal into consideration! For now, please leave! Send him out!"

2 of the soldiers immediately escorted Zito out.

One of the intelligence officers immediately asked Chen Sheng Yong: "What do we do now, Eagle King?"

Chen Sheng Yong had a steely expression as he ordered: "Convey my command, all troops are to pull out of Lang Son City, and construct defense fortifications!"

As he gave the order, he wept internally. It was just that one step, he almost had Lang Son City in his hands. Now, his best options were to gather his troops to defend his location, and await the development of the situation.

=====

"Damn it!! Yue Zhong that fucking yellow monkey! As expected, all those Chinese monkeys are not trustworthy!!" The moment Zito left Chen Sheng Yong's place, his face was contorted with fury. He was not stupid, and had immediately come to the conclusion that Yue Zhong had not seen the plan through, allowing Zhao Yuan Shuang's forces to make it back in the nick of time.

Of course, Zito and the rest would not think that what they were about to do to Chen Sheng Yong was the same, totally cutting any form of retreat for him.

On the frontlines, Zhao Yuan Shuang's voice rang out, motivating the soldiers: "Charge!! Kill all those foreign pigs!! They are invaders that had caused much misery for our race and ancestors! Once they get into Lang Son City, our wives, sons and daughters would become their slaves!! Kill the invaders!!"

"Kill the invaders!!"

"Kill all those white-skinned pigs!! For the glory of our Vietnam!!"

"For the glory of our Vietnam!!"

With Zhao Yuan Shuang's inflammatory words, those elite soldiers were riled up, and under the command of their officers,

they begun to launch their assault, wave after wave.

Such a troop was not only the elites of Wuyan Hong, at the same time, they were fanatics that had been brainwashed. Their fighting spirit and will was indomitable, adding to their strict military training, together with their experience, they were truly a formidable force.

Under the cover of the self-propelled rockets, tanks rolled towards the location of the Kingdom of God's forces. There were Vietnam soldiers wielding rifles without fear of deaths that marched on beside the tanks.

Within the camp of the Kingdom of God's forces, the commander, Alex, watched the incoming wave of enemies and chuckled coldly: "What a bunch of morons! They actually dare to contend with us in terms of firepower?! They're really stupid!! Blackhawk One, move out!"

With that order, 20 assault helicopters flew out from the camp, making their way towards the Vietnam army.

At the same time, from within the camp, 36 40-barrel rocket launchers began firing without stop at the battlefield.

24 other 122 self-propelled artillery also fire upon the area where the tanks were, blasting the entire region continuously.

In just a few seconds, the Vietnam troops found themselves blanketed by heavy fire.

With that fearsome display of might, of the 20 tanks that Zhao Yuan Shuang sent out, 12 were instantly decimated.

The remaining 8 tanks did not have the time to exhibit their prowess, when the 24 assault helicopters in the air locked on their targets, releasing a line of anti-tank bullets, destroying 6 of them and blasting them into pieces.

The last 2 tanks immediately tried to retreat, one of them unfortunately latched on by an anti-tank rocket that came blasting

it. The other managed to successfully escape into the forest.

In just 20 short minutes, Zhao Yuan Shuang's armored forces that had been invincible on the battlefield was thoroughly annihilated.

This was a one-sided battle, the might of the Kingdom of God was simply too overpowering, and these were the trump cards of Alex. Many talents congregated at the Kingdom of God, and they could casually summon 24 assault helicopters to decimate their enemies. Whereas for Wuyan Hong, he had at most 8 of them, and his manpower was only sufficient to operate only 2 of them. Without the manpower, even if they have the equipment, they could not operate it.

Just as Alex was smiling smugly, a bright flare occurred in the distance, as a 12.7mm huge sniper round shot down one of the helicopters, causing it to explode.

At that instant, it burst into a ball of flames, dropping to the ground.

Beside Zhao Yuan Shuang, one of the experts of the Sky Wolf Battalion glared at the remaining 23 assault helicopters hatefully, before retreating back within the forest. It was precisely him who had fired that shot, which caused an assault helicopter to explode. An ordinary round would not have been capable of doing such a thing.

After collapsing the advance of Zhao Yuan Shuang, 40 tanks came rolling out from the Kingdom of God's base, forming a terrifying fleet of metal backed by elite soldiers charging beside them. The entire force made their way towards Zhao Yuan Shuang and his troops.

"Retreat into the forest!!" Zhao Yuan Shuang watched the incoming metal fleet, and called out in a solemn tone. They would not be able to control the flow of the battle through a full-on clash, and could only rely on guerilla warfare within the woods.

At that time during the Vietnam War, the Vietnamese were simply no match for the American troops. They had managed to win due to a few factors, namely the support of 2 huge countries, as well as the internal strife of the American troops. Furthermore, the Vietnamese had relied on their knowledge of the terrain to slowly wear down the American forces.

With his order, the troops immediately broke off into formation, transforming into 6 different sections, before escaping further into the woods. These parts of Vietnam was their homeground, where hills, and dense woods played a beneficial part to them.

As Zhao Yuan Shuang's forces escaped into the woods, the tanks from the Kingdom of God would find it hard to display their might. However, the 23 assault helicopters flew over the forest, firing incendiary rounds.

As the rounds landed on the lush green forest, they exploded into flames, and started to consume the trees and everything in the vicinity. Even though it was in the middle of winter, there were still large patches of grass and trees that began burning. Many of the Vietnamese soldiers were instantly enveloped and burnt alive.

Another sniper-bullet that was amplified by the [Strengthen Bullets] skill landed on one of the assault helicopters, causing it to burst into a ball of flames, and drop from the skies.

Chapter 478: Might of The Forces of Kingdom Of God

After 2 assault helicopters were shot down, the remaining 22 helicopters became more cautious, increasing their altitude. They continued to fire down incendiary rounds and explosives, turning the forest into a sea of fire.

Although Zhao Yuan Shuang had intended to bring his troops to escape into the forest, they were still wiped out by the 22 assault helicopters.

Chen Shen Yong watched the Kingdom of God's forces easily annihilating Zhao Yuan Shuang's forces from afar, and he was filled with shock: "So strong!! They're too terrifying!! The forces of the Kingdom of God is seriously too overbearing!!"

After all, the amount of resources that the Kingdom of God had access to was something not even Chen Sheng Yong nor Wuyan Hong could hope to touch. The Kingdom of God had the latest technology in all of Europe, and had already started to consolidate their influence and control over the entire globe. Even the branch in Vietnam was already terrifying. They were a modern army, backed with the support of satellites and top-of-the-range logistics, and not some random bunch of people wielding melee weapons that didn't even know the basics of warfare.

Even though it was blunt and ugly to the ears, Yue Zhong was also just a strong bumpkin, the amount of resources he had could not compare against the Kingdom of God.

Chen Sheng Yong watched as the 1st Battalion of the Kingdom of God slaughtered the Vietnamese soldiers with ease, and the unease in his heart grew. His troops were not weak, but they were slightly inferior to Zhao Yuan Shuang's forces. If he were in Zhao Yuan Shuang's shoes, they would have likely been forced to the woods as well.

Just as his expression continued to turn paler by the second, a military officer came up to him and said: "Eagle King!! Wuyan Hong had sent an envoy to seek an audience!"

Chen Sheng Yong's eyes flashed with surprise: "Let him in."

One of the soldiers escorted the person to Chen Sheng Yong.

"Wuyan Hong!!" Upon seeing the man, Chen Sheng Yong blurted out and drew back a few steps.

The 3 Evolvers and 2 Enhancers who were above Level 40 that were Chen Sheng Yong's personal guards immediately stepped in front of Chen Sheng Yong and eyed the man in front of them dangerously.

The man who had established the Great Vietnam Empire and had referred to himself as Emperor, a nationalistic supremacist and a warlord, Wuyan Hong.

Wuyan Hong smirked at Chen Sheng Yong: "It's me. I'm here to discuss cooperating!"

Chen Sheng Yong recovered from his shock, taking another two steps back before asking Wuyan Hong indifferently: "You're able to let it go?"

This time, Chen Sheng Yong had really stabbed Wuyan Hong, the Wolf Fang Battalion destroyed, and Wuyan Hong himself almost lost his life. Such a grievance, it was hard for Chen Sheng Yong to believe that Wuyan Hong could put it down.

Wuyan Hong replied directly: "I can't let it go!!"

His pupils narrowed as he looked at Chen Sheng Yong and continued: "However, even if I can't let it go, I have to do so today! If we continue to clash! The white pigs will be the ones to benefit! I will definitely not allow our Vietnam to fall into the hands of those white pigs. Chen Sheng Yong, this time, please join forces with me! No! Take it that I'm begging you, let's kill those white pigs together!"

Wuyan Hong's eyes flashed with a ferocious light as he promised: "As long as you cooperate with me! After this battle, I'm willing to share a battalion's worth of equipment and 40,000 people with you!! I'd rather you become the overlord of our Vietnam, than seeing those shameless white pigs taking control here!"

Chen Sheng Yong heard the sincerity in Wuyan Hong's words, his eyes flashing with a strange gaze, and he mulled silently a while, before replying: "Fine!! Wuyan Hong, you're a true hero. I'm willing to join forces with you, and eradicate those invaders."

Wuyan Hong revealed a smile: "Thank you!!"

Everybody had many sides to them. Wuyan Hong was a sadistic and cruel racist, and was lustful to boot, viewing the Chinese with contempt and hatred, but he was without a doubt a nationalistic man and he was extremely charming to his people.

After coming to terms, both sides sent their armies to attack the Kingdom of God from the back.

On one corner of the battlefield, 4,000 Chinese survivors with tattered clothings, soulless eyes, and bodies full of scars gathered together.

The Chinese survivors in Lang Son City did not number many, and these 4,000 survivors were basically captured from Wuyan Hong's conquests around the region. He had wanted his Vietnamese people to become the top of the food chain, and hence he had intended for the Chinese to become slaves to serve his people.

Wuyan Hong glared at the 4,000 Chinese survivors and ordered coldly: "I'm Wuyan Hong! I'm ordering you guys to charge ahead! Kill those white pigs! For each white pig killed, I'll grant that person his freedom. If you don't charge, I'll kill your wives, children, and parents! Issue them their weapons!"

With the order given, the Vietnamese soldiers came over, and

issued a wooden bat to each Chinese survivor.

Wuyan Hong did not trust the Chinese survivors and hence, he wouldn't give them any decent weapons. Not even a single hacking knife.

"Charge!! Those who don't will die!!" Wuyan Hong then hollered at those Chinese survivors.

Under the threat of those black guns, the Chinese survivors could only launch their assault towards the base camp of the Kingdom of God helplessly.

The Kingdom of God had incredible firepower, and the moment the 4,000 survivors charge forwards, they were met with a rain of bullets, causing them to be torn apart.

Many of those in front were instantly felled or injured, and the battlefield was strewn with corpses and fresh blood. The courage of the rest were dashed, as they begun to retreat in horror and fear.

"Charge!! Those who retreat will be shot dead!!" One Vietnamese officer shouted.

From the Vietnamese site, likewise, a rain of bullets were fired upon the Chinese survivors, killing a number of them.

On the battlefield, regardless of which side, the Chinese survivors were caught in the crossfire, becoming corpses. Be it the Vietnamese army or the Kingdom of God, they could not trust the Chinese survivors, nor were they willing to accept their surrender.

"Bunch of bastards!" From afar, Yue Zhong observed the battlefield through the scope of his Falcon Sniper quietly, although his fury was growing.

Yue Zhong watched his countrymen falling one by one in their own blood, and kept his Falcon Sniper. He closed his eyes as he slumped against a tree, not bearing to watch on.

It was not time yet for Yue Zhong to make his move, and he could

only watch helplessly as the 4,000 Chinese survivors were slaughtered by the crossfire.

"Even for the bigger picture, this 4,000 figure is still a huge number!" Yue Zhong laid under the tree as he muttered bitterly.

=====

"Damn Vietnamese monkeys!! They can't be trusted!!" Alex was betrayed by the cooperation of Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong, and was enraged at this point.

The Kingdom of God's troops was a mechanized force, and they were about to establish a form of defence line, but with the actions of Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong, they still lost a number of men.

Alex quickly adjusted his tactics, recalling the 40 tanks, this time concentrating the assault towards Lang Song city. The fearsome artillery was also aimed towards that direction.

This time, Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong had a thorough understanding of the terrifying might of the forces from the Kingdom of God, and they quickly pulled their troops back to Lang Son City.

On the other side, Zhao Yuan Shuang continued to organize little skirmishes against the troops of the Kingdom of God.

Alex had no choice but to deploy some of the experts to take on the forces of Zhao Yuan Shuang, both sides suffering great losses.

Having adjusted their strategy, Alex deployed the armored forces and launched an assault on Lang Son City.

Amidst that dense volley of fire, parts of Lang Son City were slowly taken.

Still, the Vietnamese soldiers were incredibly tenacious, in order to defend against the invaders, even women and children joined in the battle.

At the same time, Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong racked their brains to send in their combined forces and experts, slowly whittling the strength of the Kingdom of God.

Tanks were well suited in wide open areas, but in narrow spaces, they would face a disadvantage. Because of that, Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong had shrewdly abandoned fighting out in the open, instead bringing the fight to their home grounds, where the terrain was cruel to the tanks.

The intense battle continued on all the way till night, before both sides took a breather.

Both parties had suffered great losses, the Vietnamese Army having lost about 2,000 people, while the casualties of the survivors numbered in the 10,000s. The Kingdom of God likewise had a casualties count of 300 people, 6 assault helicopters, 7 tanks, 10 IFVs, and 20 machine gun mounted vehicles.

"These Vietnamese monkeys do have some fight in them!!" Alex was outraged at the result, because the deaths of the men on their side had been from their elite soldiers. In the whole of Vietnam, the Kingdom of God only had 3,000 members from the elite force. In this battle, he had activated 2,000 of them to decimate 11,000 people, (of which 4,000 were the Chinese survivors) killing 6,000 enemies at the cost of his own 300 soldiers was a huge loss.

"Raid!! Raid!!" All of a sudden, there were alarms blaring all over the base camp of the Kingdom of God, as a number of Vietnamese experts came under the cover of the night to launch a sneak attack.

Hong!! Hong!!

The dozens of Vietnamese experts had just crossed the steel fence, when a number of pressure-triggered mines exploded, directly claiming the lives of 3 of the Vietnamese experts.

A flare shot into the sky, illuminating the entire area. Countless firepower began raining down on the area, killing 7 other

Vietnamese experts instantly.

The remaining experts tried to retreat swiftly, unfortunately, there were another 2 who lost their lives.

Chapter 479: Tragic Battle!

On this night, the Vietnamese Army had organized 8 sneak raids, and managed to kill 60 of the Kingdom of God soldiers. However, their own side suffered a loss of 100 soldiers, and 21 Enhancers above level 20.

With the harassment of the Vietnamese Army, the Kingdom of God didn't get a good night's rest.

Early the next morning, the Kingdom of God resumed its relentless assault on Lang Son City.

With the continuous volley of artillery fire, the metal fleet of the Kingdom of God began to push further into Lang Son City.

Although Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong had been backed into a corner, they were still putting up a strong resistance, as a huge number of Vietnamese youths were activated, and drafted into the frontline troops, acting as cannon fodder.

With the incitement of the 2 leaders, the Vietnamese youths came to see the Kingdom of God as invaders and were full of hostility, although they had weak combat capabilities, they charged on bravely against the Kingdom of God.

However, the harsh reality of life was displayed everywhere, that in battle, just pure courage would not win battles. The hot-blooded youths found themselves laying in their own blood not long after charging onto the battlefield.

At the same time, not all the Vietnamese were unafraid of death. With the constant rain of fire blasting down on the city, a number of the Vietnamese survivors were frightened out of their wits, and tried to escape from the heat of the battlefield.

Under the pressure of the Kingdom of God's advance, the casualties of Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong's troops were rising. Of course, their utmost efforts still gave a whole lot of

trouble for Alex.

In just another day, the elite forces of the Kingdom of God had lost another 300 people, at the same time, 6 tanks and 5 assault helicopters were destroyed. As for the Vietnamese Army, they had lost 5,000 people. Most of the deaths were the Vietnamese youths that had just been drafted in. They did not possess much in the way of fighting capabilities. However, they were great cannon fodder, and attracted the firepower from the Kingdom of God.

Upon receiving the report of the battle, Alex became agitated: "Damn it! This Vietnamese monkeys are truly persistent. They do have some small ability after all."

In these 2 whole days of battle, Alex had decimated close to 10,000 Vietnamese people, but he still had not conquered Lang Son City. The casualties on his side were numbering 700, close to half of his original troops. He began to harbor the thought of retreating, after all, he was left with only 1,300 troops.

An intense battle that had lasted 2 days, with his losses reaching 30%, this caused the morale of the soldiers of the Kingdom of God to drop as well. They were human after all, and offence always took more of a toll as compared to defence.

However, it was hard for Alex to get off the proverbial tiger by now, if he didn't manage to eliminate Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong, then after they recover their strength, the Kingdom of God would have an additional headache.

The Kingdom of God had a reach that spanned the entire globe, with the best soldiers, the most advanced technology as well as intelligence. However, they had their shortcomings as well. Their most important establishment was in Europe, and hence, the bulk of their power was consolidated there. In this apocalyptic world, at this point, it would be too much to send more reinforcements to the other areas of the world.

Furthermore, since they're mainly overseas, to build up a force

that was trustworthy took time. This time, they had activated their 1st Battalion of the Vietnam branch to act. If they were to fail, then the situation would spiral out of control, which may even mean losing their hold over this part of the world.

Vice-versa, if the Kingdom of God could take over Lang Son as well as Th~~??~~i Nguy~~??~~n, then it was equivalent to them having established a stable foothold in this area. From here, they could keep watch over Guang Xi, at the same time, slowly swallow up the whole of Vietnam.

Alex eyed Lang Son City from where he was, his eyes flashing with a resolute gaze: "We must hang on for one more day! They should be at the end of their ropes already. I cannot afford to retreat, there can only be victory! Victory!!"

In Lang Son City, Chen Sheng Yong eyed Wuyan Hong beside him and asked solemnly: "How is it? Old Wu, are you able to hang on?"

Wuyan Hong was currently riddled with many new scars and as well as many new injuries. His entire demeanor looked sluggish. In the earlier battle, he had single-handedly decimated 80 soldiers of the Kingdom of God, destroyed 3 tanks, and his measures were ruthless and decisive. However, he had suffered the brunt of a few explosives, and a huge cannon had actually landed near him. If it wasn't for his metal armor protecting him, he would have become a corpse.

Wuyan Hong's eyes flashed with a savage light as he replied: "Yeah!! Those white pigs want my life?! Not so easy!!"

Chen Sheng Yong directly continued: "Old Wu! How many more troops can you send out? My troops are about to be exterminated!"

Wuyan Hong eyed Chen Sheng Yong coolly and replied: "I'll get someone to send 2,000 men to you!"

Wuyan Hong knew that Chen Sheng Yong still had a battalion of

elites that he would not send out no matter what. They were his core and final trump card. He would definitely not deploy them unless absolutely necessary.

As for the other troops of Chen Sheng Yong, they did put up an incredibly tough fight, hence Wuyan Hong was willing to hand over some troops.

There were still 130,000 survivors in Lang Son City. If Wuyan Hong were to disregard everything and deploy all he got, he could still pull out a huge 80,000-men army. However, this army would be a motley crew of people using melee weapons. With a huge establishment of manpower, Wuyan Hong was able to generously pass 2,000 soldiers over to Chen Sheng Yong.

Chen Sheng Yong had a look of hesitation, before he suggested: "Old Wu! Why not, we retreat first?"

The intense fighting over these past 2 days had really opened Chen Sheng Yong's eyes to the might of the Kingdom of God. 6 of his elite battalions had fought hard, but they were already down to one battalion. Of course, this was also partly due to having lost 3 battalions to Wuyan Hong earlier.

Even with Chen Sheng Yong and Wuyan Hong joining forces against the Kingdom of God, they still suffered heavy casualties. Chen Sheng Yong was extremely clear that Wuyan Hong was left with only 1 elite battalion within lang Son. The rest were just new recruits without much experience.

If it wasn't for the new recruits being brainwashed to be nationalistic heroes, and their fighting will to be that strong, Chen Sheng Yong and Wuyan Hong would have long been crushed.

Wuyan Hong's eyes flashed as he replied loudly: "No way!! We have to defend here! Even if we have to risk it all and send every soldier to their doom, we will definitely not let them have Lang Son City. Our Vietnamese people would rather die than become their slaves!!"

Chen Sheng Yong's eyes flashed with a strange light: "Ok! I'll fight alongside you till the end!"

=====

On this night, Wuyan Hong brought his men and launched a night raid once more, killing another 32 soldiers.

However, over 80 Vietnamese recruits and 15 Enhancers over Level 20 had been sacrificed to attract the firepower of the Kingdom of God.

Wuyan Hong's nightly raids left Alex simmering with rage, and early the next morning, the Kingdom of God unleashed a terrifying onslaught on the city of Lang Son.

A barrage of heavy fire rained down on Lang Son city, and this time, the Kingdom of God did not care if the ordinary citizens got hurt or killed, wherever there were people, they would concentrate their fire there.

The assault helicopters in the air rained bullets down continuously, as a huge number of Vietnamese survivors would either be blasted or torn to shreds.

Those soldiers from the Kingdom of God launching their assault would also kill any living thing that crossed their path without mercy. Be it the men or women, elderly or children, as long as there were people, they would gun them down ruthlessly.

Alex was adamant on taking down Lang Son City this time, and his troops must occupy the city by the end of today.

Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong brought their men as they resisted with their utmost efforts, as many hot-blooded Vietnamese youths were sent to the battlefield, becoming cannon fodder and ultimately, a bunch of corpses.

At that part of the battlefield, Wuyan Hong was covered with a 10cm thick steel armor, charging through the battlefield like Iron Man. With each fist that he threw out, a soldier would lose his

head.

4 soldiers surrounded him, their hands wielding assault rifles as they fired wildly at Wuyan Hong. A large number of the bullets just bounced off the armor.

Wuyan Hong eyed the 4 soldiers, and waved his hands. From behind them, sharp steel beams burst out of their places in the structure, penetrating their skulls and killing them instantly.

He panted slightly after killing these 4 soldiers at an instant, if he hadn't expended his energy for his ability, the situation would have been tough to handle.

Just as he was panting for breath, a huge sense of crisis welled up, and he hurriedly dodged to the side.

Peng!!

Following the sound of a gunshot, Wuyan Hong found a large sniper bullet hitting him squarely on the shoulders, causing the metal armor to be blasted apart, at the same time, shattering his left shoulder bone.

"They're finally making their move!!" Wuyan Hong's face turned pale as he seemed to have come to an understanding.

After his shoulder was disabled, 2 Enhancers came charging at him, one having transformed into a werewolf, the other into a wereleopard.

On the other side, there was a Spirit-based expert that activated a Spirit attack towards Wuyan Hong.

From afar, inside a huge building, a blond-hair man eyed Wuyan Hong coldly as he took out an RPG and aimed.

Chapter 480: Lang Son City Falls!

One expert immediately casted his Second Order [Gravity Manipulation] from afar, and in that instant, Wuyan Hong's body was instantly enveloped by a force that was 8-times that of the usual gravity. His speed became sluggish, and every step required a lot of his energy.

Fortunately, the layer of metal protecting him was under his own control, otherwise, he would have been crushed into meat paste by the weight and added gravity.

In order to deal with this ultimate expert from the Vietnam Army, Alex had deployed 6 Enhancers above level 40. He had even gotten 2 Level 50 experts to join forces with the rest to deal with Wuyan Hong.

Once they killed Wuyan Hong, the resistance in Lang Son City would weaken by at least 30%.

As the self-proclaimed Emperor of the Great Vietnamese Empire, Wuyan Hong was truly powerful, the total number of elites of the Kingdom of God that had died at his hands numbered in the 200s. This was a terrifying number. After all, the total strength of the 1st Battalion of the Kingdom of God was only 2,000 people. That was to say, Wuyan Hong alone had decimated 10% of their strength.

"Want to kill me?! You'll have to pay a painful price!! White pigs!!" Wuyan Hong's eyes flashed with a vicious glint.

The Spirit attack assaulted Wuyan Hong, bursting with a flash of white light.

The werewolf Enhancer charged towards Wuyan Hong, his claws stretched out aiming for his head. Although Wuyan Hong had metal protecting his head as well, the sharp claws of that werewolf could easily rip through the metal like paper.

"Go to hell!" Wuyan Hong's eyes had a severe look, and he did not

dodge nor evade, instead charging at the werewolf. The claws of the werewolf tore the metal off Wuyan Hong's face, causing 5 deep gashes.

Wuyan Hong's fist came swinging viciously on the chest of the werewolf, and a sharp metal blade tore through the werewolf. He then twisted the blade, before pulling it upwards, slicing the werewolf in two, splattering blood everywhere.

The were-leopard shot forwards like a spectre to Wuyan Hong's side. However, Wuyan Hong's fist swung towards the spot as though he foresaw the attack, and his single punch caused the Enhancer's head to explode.

After killing that were-leopard, Wuyan Hong shot a look towards the Spirit-based Enhancer, waving his hands, as 20 pieces of compressed metal bearings each weighing over a 100kg shot towards the Enhancer. In an instant, the Enhancer was violently assaulted by those metal balls, mangling his body and killing him.

At this time, the RPG-wielding expert from the building pulled the trigger, as a rocket shot towards Wuyan Hong. That expert had the [Trajectory Manipulation] ability, and any round fired by him would find its target no matter what. Countless experts had died at his RPG.

Wuyan Hong's eyes flashed with a strange light, controlling metal armor to fly away from his body, forming a shield right in front of him.

The rocket flew and blasted on the shield, causing a huge hole in the metal layer, but not harming Wuyan Hong in the slightest.

Wuyan Hong eyed the RPG-wielding expert, his gaze turning cold. He immediately activated his ability, and a steel beam from the building twisted out from its place, shooting towards the expert.

That RPG-wielding expert was also a veteran, and he had long

since reacted by dodging to one side.

Peng!!

Just as Wuyan Hong was focused on controlling the sharp steel beam to kill the RPG expert, the sniper from afar with the [Bullet Strengthening] ability fired a round at Wuyan Hong.

Wuyan Hong was sent flying back about 7 to 8 metres, the ribcage bones on his chest entirely shattered to pieces. He spat out a mouthful of blood as he slumped to the floor.

Wuyan Hong was truly overbearing in his strength, but he had been through continuous, intense fights. His Stamina and Spirit had almost been expended fully, and thus, under the joint efforts of 6 experts, dealing with 3 was the maximum he could do before he was overwhelmed.

Seeing that Wuyan Hong was down, the expert with the [Gravity Manipulation] charged straight for him. He was a close combat specialist, but he lacked those skills specific for close combat.

With a thought, Wuyan Hong controlled another layer of metal to swiftly cover his body, and through his control, the suit of armor moved, bringing him away.

Without the werewolf or were-leopard harassing him, Wuyan Hong soon escaped from that area and retreated back within Lang Son City.

Currently, the Vietnamese Army within Lang Son City could be considered to be giving their 120%. With Wuyan Hong pulling out of the battle, the situation became even more dire.

Forced into a corner, Chen Sheng Yong had no choice but to deploy the elites in his command.

On the other side, Wuyan Hong also activated his last elite battalion, sending them into battle.

With the final 2 elite battalions of the Vietnamese Army joining

the fray, the soldiers of the Kingdom of God found themselves in trouble again.

However, with the relentless onslaught of heavy artillery the final 2 elite battalions were wiped out after 2 hours.

With the final 2 elite battalions collapsing, the entire Lang Son City was thrown into chaos, as a huge number of Vietnamese survivors began to escape from the city, towards the forest.

Outside Lang Son City, there were all sorts of zombies and Mutant Beasts wandering around. The Vietnamese survivors knew this well. However, compared to those zombies and Mutant Beasts, the Vietnamese survivors feared the Kingdom of God.

After the intense battles these past 3 days, Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong were considered to be defeated by the Kingdom of God, their troops entirely wiped out. However, they did manage to deal a heavy blow to the Kingdom of God, whose own casualties numbered in the 1,100. Not only that, 23 tanks, 60 machine gun mounted vehicles, 30 IFVs and 10 assault helicopters were destroyed as well.

The soldiers of the Kingdom of God weren't decent people, having charged into Lang Son City and seeing the fleeing survivors, their eyes turned red at the thought of their fallen comrades. They began to kill those Vietnamese survivors without discrimination, and a number of them even grabbed some of the prettier Vietnamese ladies, taking off their pants and raping them on the spot.

There wasn't any major laws governing these branches of the Kingdom of God. Being in foreign countries, they didn't have to bear any consequences of harming women. It must be known that even before the apocalypse, troops would also pillage and rape during wars. Even female troopers were not spared from some dodgy events going on in their own bases.

The whole Lang Son City turned into a scene from hell, with

blood and fire everywhere. Vietnamese survivors were running everywhere, while the savage laughters of the Europeans rang out, mixed with the sobbing of the Vietnamese women.

The victor would always decide the fate of the loser. When Wuyan Hong was slaughtering the Chinese, the Chinese were crying, while the Vietnamese laughed. Now the Europeans had obtained victory, the ones crying were the Vietnamese.

Amidst the carnage, Alex sauntered into Lang Son under the protection of his troops.

One of the intelligence officer saw a soldier directly stripping a Vietnamese woman of her clothes and begin raping her. His eyebrows furrowed as he spoke: "Commander! Please give the order to round up those bastards! Their behaviour now is too atrocious!"

In war, not everyone would lose their basic humanity, some would maintain some form of conscience.

Alex glanced at that officer, smiling in a tolerant manner: "The guys have been through a tough few months. The stress they've endured is not small, they should relax abit. These are just a few yellow-skinned monkeys, being able to help our boys de-stress should be their honour."

If those soldiers had laid hands on other Aryans, Alex would not have hesitated to execute them on the spot, carrying out martial law. However, since these were Vietnamese women, Alex didn't care. To him, they were equivalent to monkeys, and he would not be enraged over the rape of a monkey.

The intelligence officer seemed to have more to say, but upon noticing the dirty looks the rest were sending him, he shut his mouth.

After conquering a city, most invaders would pillage and rape. During the 8-Nation Alliance response to the Boxer Rebellion,

there were many such cases as well.

If the intelligence officer continued to shoot his mouth off, he might not live to see another day - he was after all not a pure Aryan.

"Move out!!" Yue Zhong had been hiding in a forest, and he gave the order to launch an assault after confirming that the Kingdom of God had sent a battalion to protect the artillery team towards Lang Son.

In an instant, 5 battalions shot forwards, a 2,500-strong army launched an attack on the soldiers of the Kingdom of God.

The commander of the artillery team, Dan Dong, was currently grumbling: "Damn it!! We set out too late!! Those good-looking Vietnamese women are bound to be taken by those assholes!!"

In this foreign country, where everything was prohibited in war, Dan Dong was looking forward to tasting having power over someone else's life, not to mention that he hadn't had a woman for nearly 3 weeks.

"Enemy raid!! Enemy raid!!"

All of a sudden, alarms went off, and Dan Dong's face fell. He came to the frontlines and saw the troops of Yue Zhong swarming towards them.

Dan Dong looked at the huge troop of soldiers and his face became extremely pale as he cursed out: "Fuck!! Who are these people? How the hell is there an armed force here? What the fuck is the intelligence department doing? How come no one caught sight of such a huge movement???"

Chapter 481: The Fruits Of Victory Change Hands

In order to support the Vietnamese Branch to carry out their objectives, the Kingdom of God had arranged for their satellites to concentrate on Vietnam.

Yue Zhong knew that they had satellites in their control, that was why he had deployed troops carefully from Tian Xin, borrowing the cover of the night to slowly creep towards the forest.

This time, Yue Zhong's raid had truly come out of the blue, and although Dan Dong tried his best to organize his troops in a bid to resist, it was futile. His troops had already left their previous location, and had been through 2 days of intense fighting. Surrounded by the troops of Yue Zhong which were 5-times their numbers, after just defending for 30 minutes, their simple defences were broken through, and the entire force collapsed.

"Damn bastards! Those useless pricks from intelligence!!" Dan Dong watched as his troops were torn apart by those soldiers from all directions utilizing all sorts of abilities, and his face became grim as he ordered: "Surrender! We surrender!"

A white flag rose from that camp of the Kingdom of God, representing that the battalion had lost all intent to resist, and were surrendering.

At this time, there were about 150 soldiers left. The Europeans were different from the Asians. Over at that side, when the battle wasn't in their favour, they would surrender automatically. Of course, it wasn't that their fighting will was weak, instead they had high fighting will and combat strength, it was just that they were more accepting of loss as compared to the Asians.

Yue Zhong used a force of 5 battalions, 2,500 men to overcome 400 soldiers of the Kingdom of God. They managed to kill over

200, but at the cost of about 100+ of his own men. It could be seen that the Kingdom of God was truly strong.

Yue Zhong quickly ordered his men to round up the soldiers of the Kingdom of God, before organizing his troops to begin the second assault towards Lang Son City.

By this time, the Kingdom of God soldiers of the 1st Battalion were either chasing down the Vietnamese survivors or raping women. The moment Yue Zhong and his forces came storming through, they instantly cut down these unsuspecting soldiers, slicing straight through the heart of their forces.

"How did it come to this? Damned yellow monkeys!! Fucking Yue Zhong!!" Within Lang Son City, Alex saw the events unfolding and cursed out loudly.

One of the intelligence officers immediately came up to advise: "Commander, please retreat. If you don't, we're going to be exterminated!"

The entire Lang Son City was blanketed by sounds of firing again. This time, it was the Kingdom of God soldiers who surrendered, or were executed on the spot. These soldiers were elites, but without their bearings and orders, they could not withstand the onslaught of Yue Zhong's forces.

The Kingdom of God was not lacking experts, but under the siege of enemies 5 times their size, those who saw their chance escaped, the rest who were slower were immediately killed.

Alex gritted his teeth and cursed: "Retreat!! Damn yellow monkeys!! I'll remember this!! I will not let you go, Yue Zhong!!!"

Under Alex's orders, the remaining Kingdom of God soldiers began to escape in various directions.

This time, it was the enraged Vietnamese that made a move. Many of them turned around to kill those retreating soldiers of the Kingdom of God, and those that came across Yue Zhong's troops

would surrender, otherwise they were immediately overcome and executed as well.

Those soldiers from of Kingdom of God tried their best to escape, in the end, it was only Alex and about 20 experts who managed to break out.

Alex was the commander of the Vietnam Branch of the Kingdom of God, and he was an Agility-based Evolver in his own right. That was how he managed to break out.

Yue Zhong forcefully wiped out the remainder of the troops of the Kingdom of God, before continuing his advance towards the inner centre of Lang Son City.

As of now, most of the troops in Lang Son City, be it Vietnamese or the Europeans, were nearly annihilated. However, Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong had managed to hold out, bringing 2,600 soldiers and withdrawing to a secretive location that was surrounded by some defences.

Around the location there were a few walls and holes for guns, arranged in a complicated defensive formation. The best way to overcome these defences would be to just blast the entire area into nothing.

After Yue Zhong brought his men to attack Lang Son City, he did not immediately charge at the secretive location. Instead, he deployed his men to block off any possible escape routes, and to clean up the remainder of the Great Vietnamese Empire soldiers within the city.

The Vietnamese people in Lang Son City were currently in extremely bad moods, their hatred for the Kingdom of God and Yue Zhong's forces were similarly high. To them, there was no difference between the troops, they were all invaders. Hence, the resistance within the city was still strong.

Yue Zhong was absolutely merciless towards the Vietnamese who

had acted against him, and deployed his troops to unleash a killing spree. Any Vietnamese youths that jumped out passionately to defend were instantly executed on the spot, shocking the other Vietnamese people.

Under the threat of the countless firing and cannons, the entire Lang Son City soon quietened down, as most of the Vietnamese survivors that were rounded up awaited judgement in fear, uncertain of their fate at Yue Zhong's hands.

Yue Zhong directly implemented military rule to run and control Lang Son City.

All Vietnamese survivors were under curfew and were strictly to stay within their own rooms. If there were any Vietnamese seen roaming outside, the army was given authority to execute offenders on the spot. Under such a rule, all forms of contact between the Vietnamese survivors were cut off, and they could only wait fearfully for further orders in their own homes.

Dan Dong was brought forwards by a soldier to Yue Zhong's sight, and the moment he saw Yue Zhong, he opened his mouth: "I want the treatment rightfully due to captives!! I'm a commanding officer! I have the right to humane treatment and respect according to the Geneva Convention!"

According to the Convention, Dan Dong would be considered a prisoner-of-war, and would not be subjected to ill treatment. Furthermore, China always had the practice of treating her captives fairly. However, Yue Zhong was someone who killed captives without blinking depending on his mood, hence Dan Dong would not necessarily get what he wants. The prisoners-of-war would usually be treated slightly worse than the Scum Battalion. At least the people in the Scum Battalion could get to eat their fill, whereas prisoners would have to live on a meagre amount everyday.

Dan Dong had just eaten one meal of that miserable gruel, and his

digestive system had rejected it almost instantly. Thinking about his future, his heart turned cold.

Yue Zhong eyed Dan Dong indifferently and said: "Bring your men and submit to me, work for me. I can feed you and clothe you, and you'll have the respect you deserve."

These soldiers of the Kingdom of God were proficient in all sorts of modern weaponry, and were men of talents that Yue Zhong sorely needed.

Dan Dong had an incredulous look as he said: "Mr. Yue Zhong. We're just your captives, and we have no intention of working for you. Our Kingdom of God is willing to pay a sum to buy our freedom, what do you think?"

Yue Zhong did not bat an eyelid: "Then you guys can continue to rot in the prisoners' camp. This is the treatment of the prisoners here. Wait till your Kingdom of God amasses enough funds to start negotiating, then we'll talk. Oh and, we don't keep idlers here. Even captives have to work. You must be prepared."

Dan Dong heard those words and his mind became numb. The food was already unbearable, and they could not eat their fill. They would still have to work? Their bodies would quickly deteriorate! In this current world, that would mean certain death!

Dan Dong swiftly made his choice as he respectfully saluted Yue Zhong: "I'm willing to lead my men to submit to you!"

Yue Zhong showed a satisfied look as he gave an order: "Very good. Bring your troops and go blast that Lin Yang District." That was where Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong were currently holed up in.

This time, Yue Zhong had mobilized a number of his powerful Enhancers, but he didn't bring any artillery personnel. Their breaching capabilities were weak. The moment Dan Dong brought his men to join Yue Zhong, they filled up that weak spot in Yue

Zhong's troops.

Right as Yue Zhong was about to give the order to fire, a military officer came running up to him: "Leader! Chen Sheng Yong sent someone to seek an audience."

Yue Zhong was surprised: "Oh! Let him in!"

A 32-33 year old man with an ordinary build and looks came up to Yue Zhong and began fawning upon him: "How do you do, Leader Yue Zhong!! I Li Ming Zong, am pleased to make your acquaintance."

Yue Zhong eyed Li Ming Zong and immediately got down to business: "What words does Chen Sheng Yong have for me?"

This time, Yue Zhong had basically control of the entire situation. The entire Lang Son City was in his hands, and he wasn't in the mood to play games with this Li Ming Zong who was obviously not a decision maker.

Li Ming Zong discarded all his prepared bullshit and immediately replied: "The Eagle King is willing to join you, and listen to your commands. He will also support your conquests over here as well as in Th❖❖i Nguy❖❖n!"

Yue Zhong immediately became more attentive.

This time, the total death count of the Vietnamese survivors were in the 40,000s. However, there were still about 110,000 survivors. Yue Zhong was clear that Th❖❖i Nguy❖❖n would have a huge number of survivors as well.

If Chen Sheng Yong who was a local really threw in with Yue Zhong, then Yue Zhong would have a better means of controlling these Vietnamese survivors.

Yue Zhong continued without skipping a beat: "What are his conditions?"

Li Ming Zong hesitated a while, before looking straight at Yue

Zhong and spoke in Chinese: "The Eagle King hopes that you can show your great mercy, and not kill too many innocent Vietnamese."

Wuyan Hong had been a racist and supremacist and slaughtered numerous Chinese. Yue Zhong wasn't some saint himself. In Luo Cun Village, he had retaliated by killing the 4,000 Vietnamese survivors. With Lang Son City and its nationalistic inhabitants landing in the hands of Yue Zhong, Chen Sheng Yong was afraid that Yue Zhong would act up in anger, and raze the entire city to the ground.

Chapter 482: In-fighting!

With the cruel conditions of war, slaughtering ordinary civilians was still common in modern times, often, there would be news of civilians suffering as a result of war. In the most recent history of China, there was the Nanking Massacre, or "Rape of Nanking" as more commonly known.

Chen Sheng Yong was worried that in his anger, Yue Zhong might just massacre the entire city. Although Chen Sheng Yong wasn't any saint himself, he could not bear to watch over a hundred thousand of his countrymen being slaughtered.

Yue Zhong pondered silently before replying: "All those scum whose hands have been covered in the blood of the Chinese, I will definitely not spare! Those who didn't participate, fine, I can leave them with their lives. This is my bottom line. Go back and tell Chen Sheng Yong. Also, if he serves me wholeheartedly, I can grant him a commander position. Go back!"

If Chen Sheng Yong truly submitted to Yue Zhong, he would gain the opportunity to lead the hundred thousands of Vietnamese survivors alongside Yue Zhong. Granting him a position wasn't difficult. An army could be big or small, it could consist of 900 or over a 1,000. They could be granted with melee weapons, or state of the art modern equipment.

As long as Chen Sheng Yong joined Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong had his means to control him.

Li Ming Zong replied with respect: "Yes!!"

Just as Li Ming Zong was about to leave the room, Yue Zhong's cold voice came from behind: "One more thing. I want Wuyan Hong's head as proof of Chen Sheng Yong's surrender. If he can't do it, his capabilities are too weak. Then I would only give him a weaker position. I'm giving him a day's time to consider, if he doesn't bring his troops, then don't blame me for not being nice."

Li Ming Zong replied: "Understood!"

Dan Dong frowned and asked: "Leader! Do you still need me to lead the troops over to that district?"

Yue Zhong replied calmly: "Go make your preparations. Await my orders."

Chen Sheng Yong's words were still not trustworthy. Yue Zhong had already set his plans in place, the moment any issues occurred on Chen Sheng Yong's side, he would then use force to wipe out every single last one of the Vietnamese Army.

=====

Within a basement in Lin Yang District.

Chen Sheng Yong was frowning as he asked Li Ming Zong: "He really said that?"

"Yes! Eagle King!" Li Ming Zong responded.

Inside the basement, there were only the 2 of them.

Chen Sheng Yong heard Li Ming Zong's words, and his brows furrowed even deeper, as he shut his eyes.

Li Ming Zong saw that and suggested: "Eagle King! Why don't we just bring our men and join Yue Zhong. Becoming a vice-commander is already not too bad."

Wuyan Hong might be seen as a beast and scum to foreigners, but to a large number of the Vietnamese survivors in Lang Son City, he was their spiritual leader and hero.

Li Ming Zong could instantly tell that Chen Sheng Yong was reluctant to kill Wuyan Hong. Because the moment he did that, he would be branded as a traitor and cursed for it.

Chen Sheng Yong mulled for a long while, before opening his eyes and eyed Li Ming Zong, saying: "Go get Wuyan Hong to come over."

"Yes!" Li Ming Zong became alarmed, but he still saluted respectfully.

"No!! I think, I should go and see him!" Chen Sheng Yong hesitated before standing up and walking out with huge strides.

Chen Sheng Yong brought two soldiers as they came to the room that Wuyan Hong was residing in.

At this time, Wuyan Hong was lying in bed, while there were 4 Level 30 Enhancers standing quietly, guarding him.

Wuyan Hong's ribcage had shattered, but he had taken a number of blood essences before, and his Vitality wasn't too weak, and had managed to hang on with his constitution.

Wuyan Hong saw Chen Sheng Yong walking over and his brows arched, eyeing the soldiers behind Chen Sheng Yong and asked: "Old Chen, what's the situation?"

"Stand down!" Chen Sheng Yong gave the order to his guards.

The 2 soldiers immediately left the room.

Chen Sheng Yong eyed Wuyan Hong, before looking at the 4 experts beside his bed.

Wuyan Hong turned his gaze towards his guards and gave an order indifferently: "You guys stand down as well!"

With that, the other 4 guards also immediately left.

Chen Sheng Yong came over to Wuyan Hong's side, his face full of concern and worry: "How's your body? Can you hold on?"

These past 3 days, Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong had fought hard side by side, and both had grown to respect and care for each other. Wuyan Hong was thus not at odds with Chen Sheng Yong coming too close.

Wuyan Hong's face fell as he replied slowly: "My condition isn't too good!! I'm afraid that I won't be able to participate in any intense fighting for the next 2 months."

Chen Sheng Yong hesitated a while before saying: "Old Wu!! I have something I would like to say."

Wuyan Hong replied: "I know you have something on your mind! What is it?"

"My apologies! I'll borrow your head!" Chen Sheng Yong's eyes flash with an apologetic look, as his right hand shot forwards with lightning speed, piercing Wuyan Hong's neck.

Before Wuyan Hong could even react, his head was already sliced off from the sudden attack by Chen Sheng Yong.

Blood sprayed everywhere as his decapitated head rolled to the floor, his face still wearing a smile. He had never imagined, just a mere second ago, Chen Sheng Yong, who he had thought was a close friend, would kill him just like that.

He, who had rose to power, and lorded over Lang Son City, the ruler of over 150,000 survivors, was just killed.

Chen Sheng Yong bowed towards Wuyan Hong's corpse with an aggrieved expression: "I'm sorry!! Old Wu, I need to give our Vietnamese people a way out. Although this was unfair to you, I have no choice."

After which, Chen Sheng Yong then took off all of Wuyan Hong's equipment, and kept them in a box.

After finishing this, Chen Sheng Yong took huge strides as he walked out.

The moment he went out, his blade went for one of the guards standing outside with lightning speed.

The guard had no way of reacting before his life was taken away.

The 2 experts who had followed Chen Sheng Yong earlier acted out at the same time. One of them suddenly grabbed the neck of one of Wuyan Hong's subordinates, twisting it viciously. Another took out a sharp dagger and sliced the throat of another guard.

The remaining expert had no time to react, when Chen Sheng Yong already used his blade to slice off his head.

"Do it!!" After killing those 4 experts under Wuyan Hong, he pulled out a walkie-talkie and coldly barked out.

With Chen Sheng Yong's orders, his men began launching a frenzied assault on Wuyan Hong's remaining forces.

As they didn't expect an attack from within, the troops of Wuyan Hong suffered greatly, as a number of the higher-ranking officials were taken out in a short time. Coupled with the fact that their leader Wuyan Hong had been killed, they were plunged into chaos.

Chen Sheng Yong knew that the remaining troops of Wuyan Hong were extreme nationalists as well, and the moment any of them were allowed to escape, it would be a source of threat to him. Hence, he hardened his heart and got his men to take care of all of them. He was truly deciding to cast his lot in with Yue Zhong.

News of the internal strife within Lin Yang District soon made it out.

"They've started to fight amongst themselves!!" Bai Xiao Sheng held up a pair of binoculars as he eyed the events unfolding in Lin Yang District, gloating over their misfortune.

"Dogs biting each other." Gan Tao eyed the direction, before turning around to ask Yue Zhong in seriousness: "Leader! Are you really going to let Chen Sheng Yong join us?"

Gan Tao had lost many good brothers to the Vietnamese, and he was filled with hatred towards the Vietnamese. When he heard that Yue Zhong wanted to recruit Chen Sheng Yong, he could not hold it in.

Yue Zhong replied: "Of course! As long as he accomplishes what I've told him to."

Gan Tao was not satisfied as he pressed on: "Leader! He's Vietnamese! Our Chinese comrades have been killed by these

Vietnamese here, don't you want to wreak vengeance?"

With these words, many of the officers looked towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's faction had been built on rescuing many Chinese survivors from the hands of the Vietnamese, and these survivors were his most loyal supporters. Many of the military officers had risen from the ranks of these rescued survivors.

Yue Zhong maintained a resolute position: "Of course! Those who had acted against our fellow Chinese people, I would not let a single one go."

Hearing his promise, the waves of unrest in the hearts of these officers subsided. Yue Zhong had led them on successive victories, and they were filled with respect and veneration for this man. He had never reneged on his promises, and they trusted him wholeheartedly.

Pan Jin Yong came up to Yue Zhong and asked: "Leader, shall we go lend a hand?"

At this time, the 2 factions of the Vietnamese army were fighting it out, and even if Yue Zhong were to send his troops in without using artillery, he would be able to take it down easily.

Yue Zhong looked in the direction of Lin Yang District and spoke mildly: "No need!"

After Pan Jin Yong dismissed himself, he mulled over and understood that the crux was Yue Zhong hoping to see both sides suffering great losses.

Within Lin Yang District, after the intense battle continued for another few hours, in the end, it was Chen Sheng Yong that obtained victory since his side was prepared.

There were 2,600 Vietnamese soldiers at first, but now, there were only 1,300+ left.

Under Chen Sheng Yong's lead, those soldiers immediately came up to Yue Zhong to surrender. In the end, all the Vietnamese equipment and weapons fell to Yue Zhong's hands.

"Leader! This is Wuyan Hong's head!" Chen Sheng Yong pulled out the box and presented it to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong opened up the box and took a look, discovering that savage and ugly face of Wuyan Hong, still wearing a smile, after which he casually closed the box and said indifferently: "Well done!"

Chapter 483: Cleaning Up

Yue Zhong eyed Chen Sheng Yong coolly and said: "You can be the Commander of the 3rd Battalion here in Lang Son for now."

Only then, did the nervous Chen Sheng Yong heaved a sigh of relief. He was like a lamb awaiting slaughter, afraid that Yue Zhong would go back on his words. If Yue Zhong wanted to execute him, he wouldn't even have the chance to hear Yue Zhong giving any dogshit position, much less resist.

Yue Zhong kept his stare on Chen Sheng Yong, handing him a bomb on a platter: "I want the names of all those who had participated in slaughtering and humiliating the Chinese here in Lang Son. You'd better get this matter done properly."

Under Yue Zhong's command, the number of people who understood Vietnamese were not little, however, Yue Zhong had given such a dirty task to Chen Sheng Yong. The moment he did this, he would offend too many Vietnamese. This would allow Yue Zhong to utilize him with less worry.

Chen Sheng Yong's face turned ashen, but he maintained a resolute expression as he replied: "Leader, rest assured, I'll definitely carry this out to the best of my abilities, and not betray your expectations."

"That's good!" Yue Zhong directly replied, "I'll arrange for Gan Tao to cooperate with you."

Chen Sheng Yong did not falter: "Yes!"

Yue Zhong saw that this man had agreed so readily, and he could not help but frown, as a sense of unease rose in his heart.

This Chen Sheng Yong was too accepting of his orders, not giving Yue Zhong a bone to bite on. With regards to this Vietnamese that had just surrendered, Yue Zhong could not trust him at all, but without a suitable excuse, he could not use anything against this

man nor his troops.

Under Yue Zhong's orders, Chen Sheng Yong and Gan Tao then began to scour the entire city, commencing the operation.

In a small and simple house.

A woman was looking at her man with fear on her face: "Those Chinese are investigating the events that day. What do we do? Ah Yun!"

The tanned and short man had an irritation: "What're you afraid of? It's not like it's just us."

At this time, the door to the house was suddenly slammed down, as 4 Vietnamese barged in, their faces without expressions, as they aimed their guns at the short man and spoke: "Zhang Zi Yun. Li Qing. Come with us. Otherwise, we're authorized to execute you on the spot."

Seeing those 4 men, Zhang Zi Yun and Li Qing's faces turned extremely pale.

Threatened by those 4 Vietnamese, the 2 of them were brought out of the house.

Under the combined efforts of Chen Sheng Yong and Gan Tao, over 3,600 Vietnamese that had participated in the slaughter of Chinese were captured, on top of that, another 4,000+ Vietnamese that had engaged in actions that humiliated the Chinese were rounded up. These people did not kill, but had raped, hit and humiliated the Chinese, excessively at that.

After capturing a total of more than 7,000 people, the entire Lang Son City was plunged in fear and uncertainty. Not long after, a Lei Jing Jie directly came to look for Yue Zhong.

Lei Jing Jie was the founder of the association that helped the Chinese. He couldn't stand Wuyan Hong's actions, and he was a moral man who sympathized with the Chinese. However, he was still a Vietnamese. The moment he saw Yue Zhong rounding up

7,000+ Vietnamese, he couldn't sit quietly by, and directly went to look for him. In the living room of a lavish villa, Yue Zhong welcomed Lei Jing Jie.

Beside Lei Jing Jie, there was a 16-17 year old girl, with a head full of lush thick hair, skin as fair as snow, and a voluptuous figure. In addition, her looks were extremely exquisite.

Lei Jing Jie observed Yue Zhong carefully for a while, before smiling gently and said: "How do you do, Leader Yue Zhong. I'm Lei Jing Jie. It's my honour and privilege, that you have taken time out of your busy schedule to meet me. This is Lao Shuang, the daughter of an old friend of mine, Lao De Li. She has always admired your heroics and valiant actions."

Yue Zhong, a hero? This was pure bullshit. The number of Vietnamese that had died at Yue Zhong's hands numbered above 7,000. To any Vietnamese, Yue Zhong was a devil amongst devils. However, even so, Lei Jing Jie could only put on a false front, and not dare to provoke him.

After all, Yue Zhong was infamous, if he were to be provoked, in his fury, the entire Lang Son City population might be razed to the ground.

Even the Vietnamese survivors over at Th~~??~~i Nguy~~??~~n might not be spared.

The fact that 4,000 corpses were used to display his ruthlessness told any Vietnamese that Yue Zhong was not a merciful ruler.

Lao Shuang had an innocent look as she asked Yue Zhong with reverence, "How do you do! I'm Lao Shuang. Yue Zhong, I've heard about you. You're really powerful, you must be a Second Order expert right?"

The so-called Second Order experts were people who possessed any Second Order skills. Under normal circumstances, only Enhancers above Level 50 would possess such skills. At the same

time, not all Level 50 Enhancers would come to possess them. If there was a lack of the necessary prerequisite skill, even if they managed to reach Level 50, they could only enhance the skill, but not push it to the Second Order stage.

That was why the 'Ou Ming Ver.1' was so precious. It could allow any Level 30 Enhancer to instantly gain an upgrade in skill.

"En!" Yue Zhong glanced at that beautiful and alluring Lao Shuang, before turning his gaze towards Lei Jing Jie and spoke: "Mr Lei, what brings you here?"

Lei Jing Jie hesitated a while before chuckling bitterly: "Leader Yue Zhong! I hope that you will have mercy on those people, and let them have a chance to redeem themselves. They're just a bunch of ignorant people who had been riled up by Wuyan Hong, please give them a second chance."

When Yue Zhong heard that, his killing intent surged forth: "Impossible!! I will not let them off. You want me to give them a chance?! When they were slaughtering the Chinese, did they stop to consider that as well? They have to die!"

Yue Zhong was not unreasonable to the point that he rounded up all the innocent Vietnamese as well.

Regarding his moniker floating outside, he simply did not care. People termed him as a tyrant, precisely because he did things decisively and harshly.

Lei Jing Jie became silent, before trying to persuade him: "If it's like this, the number of deaths would be too much. Leader Yue Zhong, in this apocalyptic world, humans are a great and important resource. If you kill so many, it would not be beneficial to your development."

Yue Zhong replied with a cold tone that seem to signal the end of discussion: "They have to die! This will not change!"

Of course he knew that killing too many would not be benefit

him, but he had to kill all those Vietnamese that had engaged in slaughter of the Chinese. This was his bottom line. Even if the development was to become tougher by ten times in the future, he would not waver in his decision. In fact, if things come to a bad point, he wasn't closed off to killing the entire city and just relocating back home to develop. After all, this wasn't his homeland.

Lei Jing Jie sighed, his heart full of bitterness. He could see that Yue Zhong was adamant on killing those racist murderers. This caused him to be filled with misery. No matter how much he could not stand those murderers, they were still his fellow countrymen.

Yue Zhong extended an olive branch after rejecting Lei Jing Jie: "Lei Jing Jie, I would like to invite you to become the vice-mayor of Lang Son City."

Lei Jing Jie's brows arched slightly, before he directly rejected: "Leader Yue Zhong, I appreciate your goodwill. Unfortunately, I have no intentions of becoming an official in the near future."

Lei Jing Jie was extremely particular about his reputation. If he were to join Yue Zhong's government at this time, he would be labelled as a traitor amongst the survivors.

Yue Zhong did not continue pressing when he was rejected, instead, both parties exchanged pleasantries before Lei Jing Jie stood up to leave.

The bewitching young woman Lao Shuang followed Lei Jing Jie obediently, although she shot a few furtive glances towards Yue Zhong as she was leaving.

The next day, the 3,600+ survivors that had participated in the killing of Chinese survivors were all brought to a huge area, and after Yue Zhong announced their crimes to the rest of Lang Son City who were watching, he began executing them batch by batch, dying the ground red with fresh blood.

"Demon!!"

"He's too scary!! He definitely is the devil incarnate!!"

"He truly is a dictator!!"

Seeing the 3,600 survivors being executed in cold blood, the entire Lang Son City was shocked silly. From then on, the name of 'Tyrant Yue Zhong' could strike fear and cause even kids to stop crying.

As for the 4,000 others that had participated in other activities not amounting to murder, they were sentenced to the Scum Battalion, and they were immediately made to bury the bodies of their executed fellow countrymen. The scent of fresh blood could attract the attention of Mutant Beasts, and Yue Zhong did not wish to engage in consecutive battles.

After taking care of those 3,600 Vietnamese murderers, Yue Zhong then deployed the troops to move towards Th~~??~~i Nguy~~??~~n.

There were 3 battalions of Chen Sheng Yong stationed there, and they did not put up any resistance. Chen Sheng Yong obediently summoned them and the survivors of Th~~??~~i Nguy~~??~~n to submit to Yue Zhong.

Although Th~~??~~i Nguy~~??~~n housed another 3 battalions of Chen Sheng Yong, other than one of them, the other 2 were using just plain melee weapons. They were simply not a match for Yue Zhong's elite forces. That was why Chen Sheng Yong had obediently handed his troops over.

Chen Sheng Yong had his lucky stars to count as well, because there wasn't a widespread genocide committed against the Chinese in Th~~??~~i Nguy~~??~~n. However, there were a few who did in fact murder Chinese people in the past. Chen Sheng Yong henced rounded them up, and executed them, before the anti-Chinese waves and notions died down.

Conquering both Lang Son and Th[?][?]i Nguy[?][?]n, Yue Zhong swiftly deployed another trustworthy subordinate from Guang Xi over to assemble a cabinet and manage the 2 cities. He wanted to secure his position and foothold in these 2 places.

Chapter 484: Cang Ya!

Of the Vietnam cabinet that Yue Zhong established, Chen Yao was appointed to be the mayor of Lang Son City, while Fan Tong Xuan became Thai Nguyen's mayor. The rest of the cabinet was formed out of his other trusted subordinates from China as well as some other Vietnamese survivors that he had rescued in the past.

As for the military, it went through a total overhaul. In this apocalyptic world, those with troops had power. While it was true that a single strong expert could cause the tide of a battle to change, even someone as insanely strong as Yue Zhong would die if he went against the Kingdom of God forces singlehandedly.

There were plenty of experts out there, not just Yue Zhong alone. He was not afraid of taking on anyone of them alone. However, if 7 Second Order experts were to join forces against him, he would not stand a chance.

For the army, Yue Zhong brought 5 battalions from the reserve at Guilin City. He merged them with the 2 elite battalions under Gan Tao and Pan Jin Yong, before appointing the entire troop as the 1st and 2nd Infantry Battalion of Lang Son City. The 1st came under Gan Tao, while Pan Jin Yong commanded the 2nd. The commander of the 3rd Infantry Battalion was Chen Sheng Yong.

The bulk of the modern warfare equipment like tanks and IFVs were parked with the 1st, having priority over the 2nd and 3rd.

At the same time, only a small elite group in the 3rd Battalion was Chen Sheng Yong's men, while the rest were Yue Zhong's loyal subordinates. The majority of the commanders were also his men. Their troops had high combat ability amongst the Vietnamese, it was just that they were commanded by mostly Yue Zhong's men.

That was to say, Chen Shen Yong truly only had command over his own elite troops. Of course, once he had proven himself, the rest would come under his control.

After reorganizing, Yue Zhong once again set them all to training. Especially the troops of Gan Tao, who received instruction on how to operate the advanced weaponry under those soldiers from the Kingdom of God. Once they were proficient, they would be an additional effective measure against the zombies and Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong recovered a huge amount of rations in both cities that had been collected and hoarded by Wuyan Hong and Chen Sheng Yong. The total amount was enough to feed 200,000 people for another 5 years.

At the same time, there was an unexpected gain. Yue Zhong obtained a few small-scale factories, while they could not produce the heavier rounds for artillery, they could produce the smaller rounds and some smaller cannons. With enough materials and workers, and if the factories were to enter full-scale production, they could produce 150,000 rounds and a few thousand rockets per month.

When Yue Zhong reopened the factories, he immediately recruited manpower to resume work. With those factories, he could replenish his ammo count, and there would be additional combat power in the future battles.

He came to those small factories and observed the work, before quietly making a decision: "The next target will be Yan Zhou. Regardless of the price, I have to take it down."

Yan Zhou was a huge industrial city within the Guang Xi region, and there were all sorts of industries there, as well as the largest military factory in the whole of Guang Xi. If he could conquer it, his establishments would gain a heavenly leap in terms of production and combat ability as well.

Not just the normal bullets, even larger and heavier rounds could be produced.

By that time, with his million-strong human resources, and the

modernized weapons, the entire combat strength would increase by at least 10 times.

However, the population at Yan Zhou numbered at least 3 million, after the onset of the apocalypse, there would be at least over 2 million zombies. It would be tough if he were to head over there now with his current military might. The crucial thing was that he didn't have enough ammunition. Eradicating the 2 million zombies was still a far-off dream.

Yue Zhong left the factory and thought of the alluring Chen Yao and had a sudden passionate thought: "Should I go visit her?"

He had just taken a few steps when a sudden surge of danger arose in his heart. He swiftly turned to look towards a field a distance away, and discovered a middle aged man, with a face and body riddled with scars. He was short, but his muscles were defined and tough. He walked towards Yue Zhong.

Eyeing Yue Zhong, he spoke in Chinese, with a hoarse voice full of arrogance: "You're Yue Zhong?"

Yue Zhong looked at him coolly and replied: "That's me! Who're you?"

"Great!! Since you're so co-operative, I'll let you know, just whose hands you'll be dying at today! I'm Cang Ya, and I'm here to kill you! This time next year will be your death anniversary!"

He laughed coldly, before he shot towards Yue Zhong with a speed surpassing a Type 2 Lightning, brandishing a huge black blade.

"Agility Evolver?" Witnessing that speed, Yue Zhong could not help but evaluate, as his pupils contracted and he casted the [Art of Fear] ability. A huge Spirit attack was launched at Cang Ya.

Unfortunately, when the attack landed on Cang Ya, it didn't affect him, nor was his speed decreased. Instead, he continued towards Yue Zhong, slashing him viciously.

At the same time, Yue Zhong pulled out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade, parrying the incoming blow.

Immediately, a frightening strength was transmitted through the clash, causing Yue Zhong to be sent back 3 to 4 steps.

"You're an Agility and Strength dual-attribute Evolver?" Yue Zhong's expression fell slightly, his Stinger appearing in his left hand, and he fired 6 shots at Cang Ya.

Cang Ya laughed confidently, dodging swiftly, evading all 6 shots. He suddenly rushed in front of Yue Zhong with a deadly slash: "I'll let you die with no regrets! I'm a Strength, Agility and Spirit triple-attribute Evolver! Yue Zhong, you're dead for sure!"

Cang Ya was one of those geniuses amongst geniuses in Vietnam. After the apocalypse, he had quickly awakened as an Evolver, and his mind was only set on increasing his strength. He had stayed in the jungles and mountains for a long period of time, slaughtering Mutant Beasts to level up. Under those crazy training conditions, he had reached a terrifying Level 63. The majority of Mutant Beasts he had killed were Type 2, and he daren't provoke the Type 3s.

Yue Zhong did not falter as he activated his [Gravity Manipulation], causing a two-fold gravitational force to weigh down on Cang Ya. It slowed him down, giving Yue Zhong ample time to deflect the incoming blow.

Cang Ya's eyes flashed with a cold, mocking glint, just as the 2 weapons were about to clash again, he activated a Level 3 Wind-Splitting Blade. His Black Wind Blade came screaming down at twice the speed, turning into a beam of light that veered around Yue Zhong's weapon, slashing towards his body.

Cang Ya's original speed was already crazy, with the support of that skill, his blade seemed to reach Yue Zhong's body instantaneously.

Suddenly, a bright light radiated outwards, as a white shield appeared, repelling the fatal blow from Cang Ya.

At the next instant, a pillar of flame shot towards the sky, threatening to envelop Cang Ya.

That pillar of Devil Flame was incredibly destructive, burning even a Type 2 Mutant Beast, not to mention Cang Ya and his flesh and blood.

Cang Ya's expression finally turned to one of horror as he activated his Second Order [Hurricane Manipulation], causing a hurricane to appear around him amidst screaming winds. It formed a huge wall and protected him.

As the Devil Flame landed on the barrier of wind, it was immediately deflected and blown away.

Under the cover his hurricane wall, Cang Ya looked at Yue Zhong and called out coldly: "Forcing me to use my trump card. Seems like you're truly capable. Kill yourself! If you do so, I can leave you with an intact corpse."

"Based on your words?" Yue Zhong replied with a cold laugh of his own, pulling out an rpg and aiming at Cang Ya, he immediately fired.

Cang Ya placed his hands behind his back, chuckling: "It's useless!! The moment I activate this skill, I'm invincible."

With a flash, the rocket shot towards Cang Ya.

The rocket flew to within a metre of Cang Ya and exploded, causing a huge shockwave to blast outwards, destroying the wall of defence.

Yue Zhong saw the rocket not damaging Cang Ya in the slightest and his heart sank, knowing that he had finally met a fearsome foe. He did not give up, instead letting out a long howl towards the skies.

Hearing Yue Zhong's howl, the experts that were in charge of defensive work immediately began rushing over.

"Calling for backup eh?! Shameless!! But, it's useless, you're still going to die." Cang Ya heard that howl and his face fell, if he were surrounded, he would only be able to escape pathetically.

Cang Ya was filled with a powerful killing intent towards Yue Zhong, and he waved his hand, causing a huge blade of wind to be formed out from the hurricane swirling around him.

With that Second Order skill, instantly, over a hundred blades of wind surrounded Yue Zhong, sealing any possible routes of escape, before slashing towards him.

Yue Zhong forcefully endured the blows using the White Shield, employing his [Shadow Steps] as he charged towards some buildings a distance away, at the same time, he pulled out his .05 and fired at Cang Ya while running.

Cang Ya was floating in the sky within the eye of the storm, and as Yue Zhong dodged the majority of the blades, there were a few that still assaulted the white shield.

After enduring for 4 seconds, the white shield suddenly disintegrated, and Yue Zhong seized the opportunity to duck behind a building.

Chapter 485: Surrounded

As Yue Zhong dodged into one of the buildings, all of a sudden, a shadow came shooting towards him with a dagger aimed at his chest noiselessly.

The person had an extremely strange ability to hide his presence, and Yue Zhong expended all his strength to leap to the side, as the dagger flashed by with a trail of black, slicing the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide on him.

If Yue Zhong had been a moment slower, he would have become a corpse.

He dodged to the side, a chilly gleam in his eyes, and he pulled out the Crocodile Sawtooth Blade by his waist and slashed at the shadow.

Just as he was about to slice the owner of the shadow in two, a cold feeling crept up in his heart, and he immediately withdrew and leapt to the side again.

Following the sound of a gunshot, a huge hole appeared at the location Yue Zhong was at just a second ago.

"Strengthen Bullet!! An expert sniper! Seems like many people are aiming for me!"

Yue Zhong had just backed into a corner, when he noticed 10 men dressed entirely in black running over.

The moment they caught sight of Yue Zhong, they pulled out their guns and began firing as they ran.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed fiercely, as he flipped his hands and 2 .05 submachine gun appeared in his hands. He raised them and began firing back at those men.

In just that exchange, 3 of the men in black were instantly taken out with shots to their heads, and the remaining 7 suffered bullet

hits on their bodies, but they were wearing Type 2 Mutant Beast covering. When the rounds hit them, they would stumble backwards, but the bullets deflected off.

Yue Zhong had instantly put down 3 men, when a huge 3m-tall were-bear charged out from a room, his body covered entirely in fur, and pounced at Yue Zhong.

The huge were-bear used his palm to strike downwards with a terrifying strength, which could flatten even a small-scale car. At the same time, its fur and hide was thick, and not even rifle bullets could penetrate them easily.

Atop a building, there was a Vietnamese expert who had transformed into his Forest Ranger form. He was short and ugly, and his hair dyed blond. He held up a huge Bronze Bow and aimed at Yue Zhong.

Cang Ya, who was covered with the hurricane, flew up in mid-air and observed Yue Zhong coldly, before waving his hand and condensing numerous blades of wind, slicing towards Yue Zhong.

Cang Ya's Second Order [Hurricane Manipulation] was truly terrifying, even an armored vehicle might not be able to withstand those sharp wind blades.

Surrounded by so many attacks, Yue Zhong was forced into a dangerous corner. Although he had already released a signal, it would still take another 2 minutes for his subordinates to rush over. In a battle between experts, 2 minutes were more than enough to decide life and death.

A huge sense of peril rose up in Yue Zhong's heart and he knew that this could possibly be where he might die.

His eyes flashed coldly, as a green light appeared behind him, revealing the Type 2 Green Jiao-Snake. It uncoiled and spat out a poisonous mist at the 7 men in black.

Blanketed by that poisonous fog, 4 of the men dressed in black

immediately dissolved into a pool of blood and flesh. As for the other 3, they were Agility-based Enhancers, and their faces fell before retreating swiftly, barely escaping the radius.

With the appearance of the Green Jiao-Snake, it blocked the wind blades as well as the line of sight of the Forest Ranger.

The wind blades assaulted the body of the Type 2 Green Jiao-Snake Spirit, immediately causing numerous wounds.

The Forest Ranger held his breath in, adjusting his bow, which shone with a thick green glow. At the next moment, he released an arrow that shot towards the Green Jiao-Snake like a cannon, exploding on its body, resulting in a huge gaping wound. The impact was almost enough to tear the Green Jiao-Snake in two.

Yue Zhong seized the opportunity to turn his attention to the were-bear, unleashing his [Art of Fear], as a huge Spirit force enveloped the mind of the were-bear.

The were-bear was a Level 46 Strength-based Enhancer, and while his Spirit wasn't particularly strong, usually after transforming, he would gain a heightened defence. However, against that terrifying [Art of Fear], he could not put up a resistance.

The were-bear was instantly plunged into a nightmarish hallucination, his entire body frozen in fear. Yue Zhong casually slashed, and decapitated the enemy.

After killing him, a huge wind blade managed to slash the Type 2 Green Jiao-Snake from behind, causing it to be dispelled.

At the same time, from a small alley, a short Vietnamese expert suddenly appeared, and casted his Second Order [Gravity Manipulation] on Yue Zhong.

Instantly, Yue Zhong felt an eight-fold pressure weighing down on him, if it wasn't for the fact that he had 9-times the Strength of a normal person, he might have found it impossible to move.

However, he still felt the effects, and his speed that was originally 20 times that of a person was slowed to only 3 times, every action requiring at least 8 times the Stamina.

Above Yue Zhong's head, a nether hole appeared, and a sharp bone spike shot out from within, aiming for the expert with the [Gravity Manipulation].

The Vietnamese expert with the Second Order [Gravity Manipulation] felt his heart turn cold, and immediately dispelled the gravity on Yue Zhong, using it on himself. He leapt with all his strength, and shot like an arrow towards another building, dodging the bone spike by a hair's breadth.

[Gravity Manipulation] was an effective close-combat offensive control skill, but it could not do anything for defence.

The moment Yue Zhong felt the eight-fold gravity disengage, he swiftly pulled out his Stinger and aimed at the Vietnamese expert who had just retreated.

On the other side, the Forest Ranger had already cocked his bow swiftly and was aiming at Yue Zhong.

A strong sense of perception flooded Yue Zhong's mind, if he were to kill that expert with the Second Order [Gravity Manipulation], he was sure to suffer as well.

This was the strong point of a joint-attack, if one person's strength was not enough, by relying on a few people together, even weaker experts could take out an expert.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a brutal light, and he maintained his aim, before firing.

With that gunshot, the Vietnamese expert with the Second Order [Gravity Manipulation] skill was instantly killed with his head exploding apart.

"What a ruthless fellow!"

The Forest Ranger thought to himself as his eyes shined with a cold gleam, and he released his arrow imbued with the [Strengthen Arrow] skill as it shot towards Yue Zhong explosively with a green trail.

The arrow came shooting through the air with a terrifying speed and power, its might was equivalent to a cannon, which can pierce even the armor of an IFV. Its speed was something even Yue Zhong could not dodge.

As the explosive arrow was about to pierce Yue Zhong, the Bronze Spiritual Bell flew out, and a green protective layer immediately enveloped Yue Zhong.

The explosive arrow immediately exploded loudly when it came in contact with the green barrier, causing ripples on the barrier, as the radiance of the barrier dimmed greatly.

Yue Zhong snorted coldly and aimed at the Forest Ranger.

The Forest Ranger who was a Level 56 Vietnamese expert was instantly filled with an icy cold fear.

A Stinger round shot towards the brain of the Forest Ranger.

A huge earthen wall suddenly rose in front of the Forest Ranger, blocking the trajectory of the Stinger bullet, which exploded upon impact with the wall, causing a small hole.

When Yue Zhong saw this, he did not bother with them as he jumped towards an alley. No matter how strong he was, facing such a coordinated attack from all sides would cause him to die.

"Li Duo! Many thanks!" The Forest Ranger, Wang Li, seemed to have gotten his soul back and he immediately thanked the expert beside him. It was precisely that skill that saved him, otherwise he would be halfway to the afterlife.

Yue Zhong's speed had vastly surpassed Wang Li's imagination, just now, he had known it was impossible to dodge.

Li Duo nodded slightly as his face turned to another direction, full of worry, as an intense gunfight sounded from there.

A large number of troops under Yue Zhong were currently rushing over, and the moment these assassins were surrounded, no matter how strong they were, they would die.

As Yue Zhong stepped into the alley, from behind him, a shadow shot out noiselessly and slashed at him.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with an icy light, as he instantly activated his [Gravity Manipulation] and [Art of Fear], under those 2 simultaneous skills, the shadow froze in mid air. From behind Yue Zhong, a bone spike shot out, piercing that assassin's head and nailing him to the wall!

Chapter 486: Intense Battle!

After killing that assassin, a sense of danger arose yet again, and he leapt immediately to the side.

On the other side, Cang Ya had also flown over, waving his hand towards Yue Zhong, as numerous wind blades were conjured and shot towards him.

White Bones' demonic fiery eyes danced, and it raised its huge axe, while countless bones combined in front of it to form a huge shield. When the numerous wind blades landed on the shield, they caused part of the bones to shatter and splinter off, leaving behind many scars.

White Bones forcefully defended against Cang Ya's assault, while Yue Zhong's pupils contracted, and he looked towards the direction of the sniper. That enemy with the [Strengthen Bullet] skill was a huge threat to him.

To any expert, a sniper with the [Strengthen Bullet] skill was a deadly foe. Although a Type 3 Mutant Beast hide could withstand the piercing bullets, the explosive impact could kill a person from the inside, if not injured greatly.

Yue Zhong looked over, and notice a glint of reflection about 2km atop a building.

"A sniper is still damn irritating." He lightly sighed, before pulling out a walkie-talkie and ordered: "There's a sniper on the Ming City Building. Eliminate him."

No matter how insanely overpowered he was, Yue Zhong had no way of dealing with the enemy at a distance of 2km with his Stinger. Unless he could pull out his Falcon Sniper. However, there was no time to have an exchange right now.

Some distance away, Bai Xiao Sheng kept his walkie-talkie and immediately barked some orders: "There's an enemy on Ming City

Building. Kill him!"

12 Enhancers over Level 30 immediately made their way towards the building and surrounded it.

When he saw Yue Zhong pull out the walkie-talkie, the sniper had an uneasy feeling. He had immediately kept his sniper into his case and went through an escape tunnel. He then hurriedly changed his disguise and melded into the human crowd, attempting to walk out.

One of the Enhancers immediately reported to Kou Ming, the leader of the team: "Head! It's him!"

Kou Ming nodded slightly, and motioned for his subordinates to surround the sniper.

When the sniper saw this, his eyes widened in alarm but he asked innocently: "What're you guys doing?"

The sniper had been an assassin before the apocalypse, and he was well-versed in disguise and acting innocent, using his ploys and tricks to confuse the enemy. Usually, ordinary policemen would ask him a few simple questions and let him go easily. Most policemen would not even give him more than a single look, because he looked too normal.

Kou Ming did not seem to care as he pulled out a blade and stepped forward to slash the sniper.

The remaining experts also pulled out their weapons viciously, slashing towards the sniper.

"They're murdering people!" The sniper's face fell as he screamed out, before 6 or 7 Tang Replica Swords sliced him into 7 or 8 parts.

Seeing this cruel scene, everyone in the building stared in horror, before running back to their own homes in fear.

Back at Cang Ya's side, after his wind blades were blocked by White Bones, he became more anxious. To him, time was precious,

if they did not manage to exterminate Yue Zhong quickly, the rest of his men would be in more danger.

"Damn bastard!! Die!" Cang Ya looked at White Bones defending Yue Zhong, and his face fell before he expended a huge amount of Spirit and Stamina to congeal a huge wind blade that slashed towards White Bones.

That enormous and powerful wind blade immediately sliced the bone shield apart, before slicing White Bones in half as well.

Yue Zhong had darted out the alley by then.

"Cang Ya!! We need to retreat!!" Just as Cang Ya was about to give chase, Wang Li shouted loudly.

Cang Ya gritted his teeth and he spat back: "If you want to go, just go! I won't give up until I kill the bastard Yue Zhong!!"

The total number of Vietnamese that had died at Yue Zhong's orders were over 20,000 and Cang Ya was filled with intense hatred towards Yue Zhong.

Wang Li replied loudly: "Cang Ya, don't be rash! If we're all wiped out here, no one will be able to help us seek revenge for our fallen comrades!"

Cang Ya was really a genius among geniuses in Vietnam, being a triple-attribute Evolver. At the same time, he had a Second Order skill, and was at the very least one of the top 3 experts in Vietnam. Wang Li did not want to lose such a heavyweight here.

Li Duo immediately shot forwards and chipped in: "Cang Ya, let's go! Our men are almost gone!"

On the other side, the originally intense gunfight was starting to die down, a sign of the battle coming to an end.

This meant that all the subordinates of the assassins have been wiped out.

Li Duo watched as his troops were swiftly taken care of by Yue

Zhong's subordinates, and his heart was also filled with shock.

"Alright!!" Cang Ya hesitated a while before agreeing to retreat.

"Disperse!"

With that order, the remaining 5 experts immediately leapt out from that area, trying to make a break for it.

"Cang Ya, if you have the guts, don't flee, didn't you say that today will be my death? Seems like you only know how to talk, what a trash! Look at how I'll slaughter your men! Trash!"

When Yue Zhong saw the experts rushing away, he immediately jumped out to scorn Cang Ya, at the same time casting his [Art of Fear] on one of the Agility-based Enhancers.

Blanketed by that oppressive Spirit Attack, the Enhancer was frozen in place from the hallucinations, as Yue Zhong casually took out a gun to put a bullet in his head.

"Yue Zhong! The one who will be running is you!! No matter what, no one will save you today!! I'll definitely kill you!" When Cang Ya heard Yue Zhong's words, and witnessed his comrade dying, he instantly became enraged, and charged towards Yue Zhong in a gust of wind.

Cang Ya had always been fawned upon when he became a triple-attribute Evolver, causing his ego to grow inflated. Now that he was ridiculed by Yue Zhong, he immediately lashed out.

Wang Li laughed bitterly, while asking Li Duo beside him: "What do we do now?"

Li Duo sunk in his thoughts, his eyes flashing with resolution. He gritted his teeth as his killing intent surged: "I'll bring 3 men to block the reinforcements. You go bring the remaining to deal with Yue Zhong."

Blocking the reinforcements was a suicidal mission, Wang Li casted a long look at Li Duo, before saluting and said: "I'll leave it

to you then."

Wang Li eyed the remaining experts and barked: "Come with me! As long as we can kill Yue Zhong, you are the heroes of Vietnam!"

After that, he immediately rushed towards the direction of Cang Ya, with the other 3 following closely behind.

Yue Zhong activated the [Bone Encompassing Armor], causing White Bones to transform into a bone carapace. In midair, Cang Ya was currently surrounded by his hurricane armor, and he was waving his hands, causing countless wind blades to shoot towards Yue Zhong.

Under the relentless assault, sand blew and the winds howled, as the bone carapace was subjected to countless slashes.

Although Yue Zhong tried his best to dodge, there were a few that still landed. Fortunately, they were blocked by the thick, hard layer of bone carapace. Scars were beginning to appear on the layer of bone.

Yue Zhong had to activate his [Shadow Steps] as he tried to escape in a pathetic manner, retreating towards a forest. With the cover of the trees, the wind blades of Cang Ya would be less effective.

Cang Ya thus deactivated his hurricane armor, landed on the ground, and immediately gave chase.

Wang Li followed right behind with the other 3 experts.

When Wang Li and the other 3 had just entered the forest, a gust of wind rushed past them, and the heads of the 3 experts shot towards the skies, with blood gushing out.

Before that gust of wind had reached Wang Li, he had transformed into his Forest Ranger form, forcefully dodging with his increase in speed.

A sharp claw brushed past his body, tearing a huge chunk of

meat.

"Type 3 Mutant Beast! How is this possible? How can he subdue one?" Wang Li scrambled up with despair and fear in his eyes!

Lightning eyed Wang Li coldly, before lunging at him, disappearing from his sight.

While Wang Li's speed was increased in his Forest Ranger form, and the rest of his attributes enhanced as well, it could not match the Type 3 Lightning, and in 10 seconds, he was already sliced in two by Lightning's claws.

On the other side, Yue Zhong had ran for about a dozen metres, when he suddenly swivelled around, and activating his Devil Flames. A huge ball of fire shot towards Cang Ya.

"Humph! Your fire trap is too weak! Disperse!" Cang Ya eyed the incoming blazing flame and snorted coldly, as his hurricane armor appeared again, blowing apart the Devil Flames.

Just as that tornado of flames had dispersed, a long Devil Flame Spear that had been formed pierced through the eye of the tornado, shooting towards Cang Ya.

He looked at the incoming projectile and his expression changed in fright, as a white-coloured shield shone out of his body, blocking the blow.

Yue Zhong saw that and his pupils narrowed, congealing another Devil Flame Spear, lunging it towards Cang Ya: "Defence Light Shield! This fellow truly has some treasures!"

Chapter 487: Harvest

Cang Ya's face fell as he pointed at Yue Zhong, and a powerful lance was formed from the screaming winds, before it shot towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's own spear brushed past Cang Ya's move, as each of the spears slammed into their respective opponents' defences.

Cang Ya's shield dimmed instantly, losing its energy.

Yue Zhong's Bronze Spiritual Bell also suffered from the impact, its barrier fading.

Be it Yue Zhong's Devil Flame Spear or Cang Ya's Wind Spear, they were both skills that possessed the might of a cannon. Defences like the Bronze Spiritual Bell or Defense Light Shield would at most be able to defend twice against such might.

Yue Zhong pointed in the air again, as another Devil Flame Spear appeared, and it tore through the air as Yue Zhong shot it towards Cang Ya.

This time, Cang Ya's face was really pale as he quickly generated a shield made of the hurricane to block in front of him.

The Devil Flame Spear slammed into the shield made of wind and immediately exploded, causing the shield to shudder.

At the same time, 10 sharp bone spikes shot out from Yue Zhong, aiming for Cang Ya.

The black long blade in Cang Ya's hands immediately danced about, displaying a flurry of shadows in its wake as it deflected the 10 sharp bone spikes.

Just as the 10 bone spikes were dealt with, Yue Zhong once again conjured up another Devil Flame Spear to lunge it at Cang Ya.

Cang Ya's already pale face from the huge expenditure of Spirit and Stamina lost all colour. He forcefully conjured another shield

made out of wind to defend against that 3rd Devil Flame Spear.

This time however, against the brunt force, the shield immediately collapsed.

Cang Ya, who had been acting high and mighty earlier, spat out a mouthful of blood, his expression pathetic. He had overdrawn too much of his Spirit, and even though he had the Spirit attribute, he could not keep up with the expenditure.

Facing Cang Ya, Yue Zhong was similarly looking weak, there were even 2 deep gashes on his face caused by the wind blades, and they were so deep that one could see his bones.

"Hehe!! Yue Zhong, seems like your Spirit is also out. I'm a Triple-Attribute Evolver, on what grounds can you fight me? Even if my Spirit is depleted, today will still be your death day!" Cang Ya laughed savagely, and flashed forwards towards Yue Zhong.

At this time, both of them had already depleted their Spirit, and victory rested in the outcome of a close-combat fight. In which, Cang Ya had the advantage being a Strength and Agility Evolver as well.

Yue Zhong looked at Cang Ya pouncing towards him like a leopard, and his eyes narrowed. He pointed out with his right finger, as a flame ball and ice shard appeared out of thin air and blasted towards Cang Ya.

Yue Zhong had just raised his hands, when Cang Ya dodged lightly to the side like a spectre, as those 2 abilities brushed past his body.

As a triple-attribute Evolver, Cang Ya's speed was faster than Yue Zhong by about 20%, the moment he reached Yue Zhong's side, he slashed out with his blade, causing many shadows to trail behind. The attack assaulted Yue Zhong like a mighty wave.

With a thought of his mind, 10 sharp bone spikes burst out from Yue Zhong's back, aiming straight for Cang Ya.

Cang Ya relied on his terrifying speed to parry the attacks, as his blade flashed about, destroying the incoming spikes one by one. Finally, his last strike was aimed towards Yue Zhong's waist from his left side.

Cang Ya was not some blade specialist, but his speed was incredibly fast, adding on to his obscene strength, currently no one could compare against him.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a chilly light, as he used his left hand to block that blow, while at the same time activating his [Gravity Manipulation]. His right hand also wielded his own blade to slash towards Cang Ya's left side.

"You want to take me down with you? Fool!! Watch me cripple you first!" Cang Ya's eyes flashed with a vicious glint, and he swung down savagely.

With the nearing 18-times Strength of Cang Ya, the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide on Yue Zhong's left arm was immediately sliced through, and the radiant protection as well as the Level 4 Protective Armor was split apart, leaving a huge gash, as fresh blood flowed.

A huge surge of winds blew around Cang Ya, and Yue Zhong was sent knocked back 6 to 7 metres, before Yue Zhong himself could slice beyond the first layer of defence with his Crocodile Saw Tooth Blade.

He rolled with the momentum, causing his blood to splatter all over the ground. At the same time, a transparent spider silk shot out from the ring on his left hand, hidden beneath the blood.

"Powerful!!" He sucked in a deep breath, staring fixedly at Cang Ya. This man in front of him was truly the strongest enemy he had ever met.

Cang Ya was not only a triple-attribute Evolver, but one that had been through countless battles and experience. If there was a

weakness, it would be that he was conceited.

Without waiting for Yue Zhong to catch his breath, Cang Ya shot forwards like a cannonball, the Wind Blade in his hands causing blade waves to be emitted, forming a pressure as he approached.

Using a single hand to parry Cang Ya's assaults was really exhausting.

With every blow, Yue Zhong would be sent knocked back a few metres before he could steady himself.

Cang Ya unleashed 15 consecutive attacks, and Yue Zhong was forced back constantly, suffering a few slashes, his blood flowing down. Even holding the Crocodile Saw Tooth Blade was becoming difficult.

"Go to hell!! Yue Zhong!!" Cang Ya instantly sent out 2 slashes, as one broke apart Yue Zhong's defence, and another threatened to slice Yue Zhong's head.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, and the bone spike in his hand stuck out.

At the same time, the transparent spider silk laying below Cang Ya's feet was tightened, and began to tangle around Cang Ya. He was after all an expert with countless experience. Facing this, his heart sank, and he twisted his body in a bid to crouch low.

Yue Zhong shot forward at this time to lash out with a vicious kick towards Cang Ya's head, and with his 9 times Strength, if Cang Ya's Endurance was not above 50 points, that single kick could have caused his head to be removed.

Yue Zhong's kick was swift and vicious, upon smashing onto Cang Ya's facing, it broke his nose and several of his teeth. At the same time, a sharp spike shot out from beneath Yue Zhong's foot and pierced Cang Ya's head. He was finally dead.

Yue Zhong kicked out forcefully, kicking Cang Ya's corpse aside. After confirming that the head with an additional hole was not

moving anymore, he then heaved a sigh of relief.

After taking a breath, he began searching Cang Ya's corpse.

As a Triple Attribute Evolver, Cang Ya had plenty of good items with him. There was a Type 3 Mutant Beast nuclei, 12 Type 2 nuclei, 7 Type 2 Mutant Beast blood essences, a Level 3 Protective Armor, a Level 4 Treasure Black Wind Blade, a Level 5 Defense Light Shield, a pair of Level 4 Steel Arm Guards, a pair of Level 5 Wind Speed Boots, a Level 4 Falcon Sniper, and a piece of Level 5 precious stone.

"Level 4 Black Wind Blade: a sharp precious blade, it could, with effort, slice through any treasure below Level 3."

"Level 4 Steel Arm Guards: Arm Guards with incredible defence, Strength +8 upon equipping. Can withstand most assaults from most Level 4 Treasures."

"Level 5 Wind Speed Boots: Upon equipping, Agility +15. Comes with the ability: Increase Speed. Skill Description: Upon usage, Agility increases by 10, for a time period of 30 seconds. Cooldown time 24 hours."

"Level 5 Treasure: Precious Stone. This is a precious stone that has magic powers. Embedding it in equipment could enhance additional attributes or extra skills."

Experts like Cang Ya were equivalent to mobile storages, once they are killed, one would gain a huge haul of items.

After sweeping up all of Cang Ya's equipment, he then walked out of the forest.

A soldier called Fei Xiong came up to Yue Zhong and reported: "Leader! All the assassins have been taken care of!"

Yue Zhong's face turned icy as he barked: "How did you do your job? How can you allow these people to just barge in?"

Fei Xiong was one of the Chinese survivors that Yue Zhong

rescued from the hands of the Vietnamese. He had followed Yue Zhong on his crusades and was a Level 32 Enhancer. Due to his caution and bravery in fighting, Yue Zhong had appointed him as the captain of the guards.

This time Fei Xiong had unintentionally allowed over 40 people to infiltrate Lang Son City to attempt an assassination on Yue Zhong, which caused him to be infuriated. If it wasn't for his Strength and skills, this time he might have really died at the enemy's hands.

As he was reprimanded by Yue Zhong, Fei Xiong felt his back drenched with perspiration. He thought to the dire consequences if Yue Zhong had really been assassinated, and could not help but feel a surge of fear.

Fei Xiong directly raised his head to look at Yue Zhong and braced himself: "Leader, it was truly an oversight of mine! I'm willing to shoulder any and all punishments. Even if you want to send me to the Scum Battalion, I would not complain nor frown. However, I want to say something. The fact that they managed to enter Lang Son City, I think that someone is helping them from the inside, otherwise they would not have infiltrated us so easily."

Yue Zhong glanced at this man who was forthright and had a good attitude, and his anger subsided. He pondered for a moment before saying: "Fei Xiong! The position of the captain of the guards will be taken away from you. I plan to establish a small organization responsible for collecting information and cleaning up of traitorous spies - Hawkeye. You shall help me assemble the team, as for personnel and funding, I shall provide it. The first task of Hawkeye would be to look into Lang Son City and Thai Nguyen."

"Yes! Leader!" Fei Xiong did not hesitate and accepted the new appointment with gratitude. He saluted Yue Zhong. He had already made the mental preparations to be sent to the Scum Battalion to kill zombies for a chance to redeem himself. Who knew that he would suddenly become the leader of a new special

force, and he was extremely grateful to Yue Zhong.

****Dedition: I wonder if YZ would survive having half his head chopped off.

Chapter 488: Immigration!

The moment Hawkeye was established, Yue Zhong arranged for a large number of experts and resources assigned to this department.

An intelligence department was necessary in all countries. Yue Zhong had decided to establish one after this incident.

After Hawkeye was established, Yue Zhong deployed other men to investigate the origins of those Vietnamese assassins. However, they were faced with cold treatment instead of retaliation from the Vietnamese survivors. In other words, they were not using force, but still showing their resistance through silence and lack of cooperation.

Of course, for the sake of a decent meal, those Vietnamese survivors worked extremely hard at the factories, manufacturing all sorts of items. Although they hated the Chinese, in the face of cannons and blades, no one dared to act. They kept their dissent in their hearts.

The firepower and weapons could annihilate them, but the little pimples of dissent were hard to eradicate.

Currently, on top of a bed, Yue Zhong, Xin Jia Rou, Mu Xiang Ling, Ming Jia Jia and Ning Yu Xin were lying on the bed. They were half laying on that huge bed, watching a Plasma HD TV hanging on the wall. There was a video from prior to the apocalypse being played.

Inside this room, the heater was functioning, providing warmth to those who had retreated from the elements. In contrast to the cold weather outside, there was no better luxury than being in the room right now.

Yue Zhong placed his hands under the blanket cover, massaging Ning Yu Xin's beautiful legs absentmindedly, as he sighed: "If we're not a single country, it's truly hard to win over the hearts of the

people." *1

In Guilin City, there were dissatisfied people as well, but they were not as worrisome as the situation in Lang Son City and Thai Nguyen City. If the 200,000 survivors were to revolt in these 2 cities, the consequences would be dire. Furthermore, Yue Zhong was not willing to put down every single one of these 200,000 Vietnamese survivors.

As Yue Zhong continued to massage, Ning Yu Xin began to blush, she was already extremely sensitive to physical contact before, after being taken by Yue Zhong, she became even more sensitive.

Mu Xiang Ling was currently laying in Yue Zhong's lap like a little kitten, as she heard Yue Zhong's sigh, she chuckled: "How is this hard? I've got a solution."

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened as he asked: "What's your plan?"

Now, many of the youngsters were extremely mature for their age, even though Mu Xiang Ling was a loli, she was extremely smart.

Mu Xiang Ling replied lazily: "The Americans conquered America in the past by killing most of the aborigines they found at the time. Once all the natives are wiped out, then won't the people left be your own?"

Although her words seemed lazy, it revealed a strong killing intent. She had grown up in the alleys, and experienced all sorts of warmth and coldness, the various emotions and indifferences. Other than the people that she valued, she didn't really care about the deaths of anyone.

Ming Jia Jia stared at Mu Xiang Ling and shot back: "What kind of idea is this? If we go according to your suggestion, then wouldn't Yue-gege have to raze the entire Lang Son City and Thai Nguyen City to the ground? Then what did we fight so hard to conquer them for?"

Yue Zhong pinched Mu Xiang Ling's cheek and rejected the idea: "This idea is no good."

Wiping out the Vietnamese survivors in Lang Son City and Thai Nguyen was the worst idea. Not only would Yue Zhong lose a sizeable amount of human resources, Chen Sheng Yong's troops would retaliate, at the same time, he had plenty of Vietnamese experts as well as Chinese subordinates on good terms with the Vietnamese. It would cause unrest amongst them as well.

If Yue Zhong held all of China in his hands, then it wouldn't be an issue. However, he was just a small warlord in the grand scheme, still seeking to gain control over China. If he executed such a diabolical plan, he would then have to retreat back to within China.

Mu Xiang Ling eyed Ming Jia Jia, before putting her whole head on Yue Zhong's thighs and closed her eyes, speaking comfortably: "Then change it. We can convert the majority of the Vietnamese to slaves, then reappointing a selected few as ordinary citizens. Throw a few bones out, make them fight amongst themselves. Let them have some internal friction. We'll stand to gain anyway. They can only rely on us, and whoever we lean on will win, how will they dare to criticize us? Furthermore, we can make use of the ordinary status as an incentive for the rest to work hard to escape slavery."

When Yue Zhong heard this, his mind raced. This idea was not too bad. Splitting them and setting them against each other, it was a tactic that the westerners did in the past. It was simple, yet effective. As long as there was a carrot on the stick, one would betray even relatives and friends. *2

As for who to designate as slaves, Yue Zhong had thought of choosing those he had defeated. He had no desire to touch the ordinary survivors yet.

He pinched Mu Xiang Ling's cheeks and continued to ask: "What

else?"

Mu Xiang Ling put on a smug grin as she replied: "Immigration!! Move the Vietnamese survivors in both cities to Guilin City. Then move the majority of Guilin City's people to Lang Son City and Thai Nguyen City. Like this, the Vietnamese people will be the minority regardless of where they are, and we can better assimilate them. This method would be good if the number of people is not too high. If it were prior to the apocalypse, it would have been impossible. I guess it's only in such a situation where this might actually work."

When Yue Zhong heard that, he immediately sunk into his thoughts. It was as what she had said, the pressure of moving a number of people was a lot easier now.

In this apocalyptic world, as long as there was the promise of food and a living, most survivors were willing to throw away their identities and belongings to move to someplace else. After all, there was also the threat of weapons.

If it had been before the world's end, using such military force to threaten people might have incurred the wrath of the people or even set off a mass panic.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a hint of admiration, as he hugged Mu Xiang Ling, and kissed her forehead, praising: "Xiang Ling, you're really smart! This is your present!"

"Lolicon! Pervert!" Mu Xiang Ling struggled while chuckling.

Yue Zhong immediately glared at her and pressed her down, hitting her bottom playfully: "You little rascal, if I don't hit you, you think you can climb over me."

"Keke!! Alright alright!! I won't do it anymore!! Ha ha!! I won't dare to anymore!! Please stop!! Keke!!" Mu Xiang Ling giggled uncontrollably as she was being pressed down.

Yue Zhong followed her suggestion and began moving the

Vietnamese survivors batch by batch into China. At the same time, the Chinese survivors from within China were assigned to Thai Nguyen City and Lang Son City.

With the influx of Chinese survivors, the Vietnamese became the minority in both cities and the situation gradually became stable.

Yue Zhong saw that the situation had become better and brought Xin Jia Rou and 30 other experts with over Level 40 in enhancement as they left Thai Nguyen and made for Hanoi.

Towards Hanoi, Yue Zhong obtained 2 armories, and he had to bring men to check it out. Although he had a number of soldiers, it was not easy to deploy troops in the current weather. He had to make sure of the location before he could mobilize troops.

"The snow is so pretty!" At a huge wide open area, Mu Xiang Ling was running about, dressed in red cotton, her hair in ponytails. It was like a scene of a fairy playing on earth.

Mu Xiang Ling had stayed in Guang Xi for most of her life, and had never seen so much snow before. She was extremely excited about the vast area of soft, white snow.

Ming Jia Jia looked at the fairy-like Mu Xiang Ling and muttered under her breath: "Childish!"

As a loli herself, Ming Jia Jia was constantly on guard against Mu Xiang Ling stealing Yue Zhong's affection and trust from her.

Yue Zhong also stepped out of the vehicle and watched Mu Xiang Ling, chuckling.

Xin Jia Rou and Ning Yu Xin both came out to stand beside Yue Zhong.

The 30 experts surrounded the area to protect Yue Zhong and the rest.

Peng! Peng!!

Right at this time, there was a sudden burst of gunfire. From the

sounds of it, the gunfight was coming closer towards them, obviously a sign that there were people running towards their location.

Yue Zhong frowned and barked: "All of you stand guard properly here! I'll go take a look! Xin Jia Rou, come with me!"

After which, Yue Zhong immediately made for the direction of the gunfight.

Xin Jia Rou followed closely behind. By now, she was a Level 33 Evolver, and was the only Agility-based Evolver under Yue Zhong's command that possessed 2 Second Order skills. One of them was the [Divine Speed] that awoke innately, the other was the Second Order [Agility Solidification] that was enhanced by Ou Ming Ver. 1. If it wasn't for the fact that her Level was low, she would easily be the fastest expert under Yue Zhong.

The 30 experts exchanged looks, one of them chuckling bitterly: "Leader always steals our jobs!"

Another replied while laughing: "Hehe! Well, we can't help it. Our main task is still to protect the mayor and the rest."

Yue Zhong's ability was the strongest, and he was recognized as number one amongst his subordinates. At the same time, they knew that he loved to be on the frontlines.

In a forested area, a few armed militants were chasing 6 men and 2 women.

The leader who was skinny and dressed in military garb shouted out: "Bai Yan! Hand me the Miss! If you give her to me, I'll let the rest of you leave here safely!"

Chapter 489: Nangong Bing Yun

A burly-looking man was wielding his gun as he shouted out: "Ruan Wen Tong!! Your entire family have been taken care of by Boss! You actually betrayed him, now you won't even let his only daughter off! Are you still human?!"

Ruan Wen Tong laughed insidiously: "Heh heh!" "Every man for himself, and the devil take the hindmost!"*1

That chick is too much of a threat alive, I'll definitely not allow her to live. Bai Yan, if you're smart, you'll hand her over to me. After I'm done with her, I'll let you have a taste!"

Bai Yan rejected furiously: "Impossible! I, Bai Yan, will never do such an ungrateful thing!"

Ruan Wen Tong chuckled coldly: "Too bad then. If you were willing to join me, I'd have been willing to share my women. Since you've no sense, let me send you on your way as well."

Both sides continued to shout at each other while engaging in an intense gunfight.

Bai Yan's marksmanship was incredible, with his gun, he could easily take down a militant with 2 bullets. Under his shooting, many of the militants would fall to the ground.

The rest became cautious, not daring to charge, only shooting Bai Yan from afar.

Ruan Wen Tong gnashed out furiously: "Fuck!! Charge! Those who manage to kill Bai Yan, I'll reward with 2 beautiful women, 30 jin of rice, 10 jin of flour. Those who dare to cower, watch me execute you on the spot!"

Under Ruan Wen Tong's threat, the morale of the militants soared, as they charged out from behind their covers and made to surround Bai Yan and the rest.

In this apocalyptic world, there were no shortages of ruffians who did not fear death, with enough rewards, they would become crazy.

No matter how good Bai Yan's marksmanship was, he could not take down an entire squad of militants, his subordinates beside him were also shot down one by one.

Yue Zhong had brought Xin Jia Rou as they appeared from one side and he coldly barked: "Stop!"

When the militants caught sight of Yue Zhong and the ravishing beauty Xin Jia Rou beside him, their eyes lit up. Her demeanor looked gentle and frail, and her looks absolutely stunning. She wore the green military uniform which gave her a valiant aura, it was truly breathtaking. The militants had seen a number of beauties before, but compared to Xin Jia Rou, whose looks were truly out of the world, they were considered to be truly ignorant.

When Ruan Wen Tong saw them, his eyes flashed with a perverse light, as he exclaimed excitedly in Vietnamese: "Grab them!! That woman must be captured alive!! The men can be killed!"

In this world, beautiful women were also a sort of resource. They could be used to carry out all sorts of desires, or to treat as gifts to subordinates. They could even be traded for other daily necessities.

4 men stepped out from the militants and made their way towards Yue Zhong and his party.

From the other side, Bai Yan's brows furrowed as he warned loudly in Chinese: "Brother, be careful, they're not decent men. They want to capture you!! Quick, escape!!"

One of the militants pointed at Yue Zhong with his gun and barked out in Vietnamese: "Chinese dog, raise your hands!! Otherwise, your father, I will gun you down!"

Another militant stared at Xin Jia Rou ravenously, as he said: "Zhao Ji! That Chinese chick is sure beautiful! Once we capture

her, will we be able to have a good time as well?"

Yet another piped in, chuckling: "Such top-quality goods, how will Boss let us have a part?"

The 3 of them continued to leer, while their remaining comrade had already been overcome by his lust and reached out for Xin Jia Rou's chest area.

After the apocalypse, plenty of such matters like killing openly, committing arson, robbing and raping, were all widespread. Hoping to take some small advantage was a common mentality of these militants.

Yue Zhong eyed the militants and his brows furrowed slightly, before ordering coldly: "No need for words. Too much trouble. Jia Rou, leave 5 alive, the rest - kill!"

"Yes, Master!"

Xin Jia Rou who had been standing quietly by Yue Zhong's side immediately flashed forwards, lunging at the 4 militants like a leopard.

With the flash of a blade, the 4 militants were instantly sliced up in many parts, fresh blood and innards all splattering to the ground.

After casually making short work of those 4, Xin Jia Rou turned her attention to the rest of the militants and charged.

Seeing how fast Xin Jia Rou had killed their comrades, the rest were stunned for a moment, before quickly adjusting their aim to fire madly at her.

Xin Jia Rou's current speed before activating any skill had already reached 16 times that of a normal person. Most ordinary people would not even be able to catch up with her movements. Each time she shot past a militant, the militant's head would be lopped off. One by one, they were decapitated as blood sprayed every which direction, while their bodies slumped to the ground.

After killing 12 militants in a row, the remaining 23 militants felt that things had gone to hell, and they began to escape in all directions. After all, this bunch was just a motley crew of people, after more than 30% of their troop has died, it was enough to send them retreating in fear.

Ruan Wen Tong saw how easily his men had fallen at Xin Jia Rou's hands and his own heartbeat raced with fear, as he tried to escape as well. "High-level Enhancer!!! Why would there be one here?!"

Ruan Wen Tong knew how terrifying these experts were, and the fact was that his men were just slaughtered in front of him. He dared not to be arrogant and could only run.

At this moment, the remaining 10 experts had reached, and without having to unleash any abilities, they easily chased the remaining militants down. They slaughtered them, leaving only 5 alive.

Ruan Wen Tong immediately raised his hands, shouting in Chinese: "I surrender! Don't kill me! I surrender!"

Bai Xiao Sheng brought the 5 remaining militants in front of Yue Zhong and drawled: "Just these trash, there's no fun in killing them."

Bai Yan and his group had also been escorted towards Yue Zhong.

By now, his group was down to 2 men and 1 woman.

Yue Zhong looked towards Bai Yan's group and discovered that other than Bai Yan, there was a 25 or 26 year old young man of medium overall build, but his muscles were all incredibly defined, like a bodybuilder.

Both Bai Yan and this thick eyebrowed young man were guarding this 21 or 22 year old young beauty. She had a thick head of black hair, goose egg-shaped face, thick lips and rosy cheeks. Her figure was explosively stunning, her skin fair, and her eyes had a resolute

strength to them.

Bai Yan came up to Yue Zhong with a face of gratitude and spoke: "I am Bai Yan! This is Wang Tong and this here is my family miss, Nangong Bing Yun. Sir, thank you very much for lending us a hand."

Yue Zhong glanced at their party before turning around to look at Ruan Wen Tong. He then pulled out a Desert Eagle, aiming it at one of the militants, saying: "What are your backgrounds! Tell me, if you tell me the truth, I can leave you with your life. Otherwise... Well, this will be your example!"

Following the gunshot, the militant's head was instantly blasted apart, as blood and brain matter splattered to the ground.

Seeing how ruthless and merciless Yue Zhong was, Bai Yan and Wang Tong flinched, and had an uneasy feeling in their hearts. This man in front of them obviously had no regard for other lives, and now that they themselves were in his hands, if they weren't careful, they might easily face the same fate.

Ruan Wen Tong had gone weak in the knees and he hurriedly blabbered: "I'll speak!! I'll speak!"*2

Right at this moment, Nangong Bing Yun came up beside Yue Zhong, with a slight fragrance wafting from her, she looked at him with her huge round eyes: "There's no need to trouble him! I'll tell you! May I ask, how should I address you, sir?"

Yue Zhong looked at Nangong Bing Yun and replied coolly: "I am Yue Zhong."

"Yue Zhong!! This guy's Yue Zhong!!"

Hearing him report his name, everyone present sucked in a breath of cold air, their gazes towards him filled with additional fear.

'Tyrant Yue Zhong'. That name had spread like wildfire following the fall of Wuyan Hong. Be it at Hanoi, Cao B?ng, Lang

Son, Thai Nguyen or even H?i Ph?ng, almost all factions knew of his name. This was the person that had ordered the slaughter of 100,000 Vietnamese in his anger.

Seeing how merciless he had been when executing the militant, coupled with the many guards, they were even more convinced of his identity.

Nangong Bing Yun scrutinized the man in front of her and burst out laughing: "So you're that Yue Zhong that defeated Butcher Wuyan Hong, and exterminated 100,000 Vietnamese? Seems different from what the rumors say."

"I did not kill 100,000 Vietnamese for the sake of it. At most, it had been a few thousand beasts who deserved it." He chuckled indifferently and continued: "How do they describe me in the rumors?"

Nangong Bingyun laughed lightly: "They say you're 8 ft tall, 8 ft wide, you have long green fangs, your looks are akin to a hideous demon. Everyday you will bed 3,000 women, and no women is not to your liking. From the ages of 9 all the way to 60, you never let any off. Also, you like to drink and bathe in human blood."

She continued smiling as she looked at the 2 lolis beside Yue Zhong, and gazed back at him with a teasing look: "It seems that most of it is false, although some parts may be true?" *3

Chapter 490: Green Town!

Yue Zhong frowned and replied: "I want to know your backgrounds."

"Fine!" Nangong Bing Yun flashed a teasing smile at Yue Zhong, before revealing their story.

Nangong Bing Yun was the daughter of the leader of a medium-sized consortium. When the apocalypse happened, she had been together with her father, looking at a project.

After the apocalypse, Nangong Bing Yun's father had been extremely able, quickly organizing survival tactics with the guards under his employment, to the point of establishing a small survivor camp of 200 people. There were a mix of Chinese and Vietnamese, and they stayed together, waiting for the disaster to pass over.

However, while Nangong Bing Yun's father had the charisma and capability to lead, his personnel ability had been too weak. Amongst his troop, there were no Enhancers as well. Hence, recently, they had been eyed by some larger factions.

In this apocalyptic world, big fishes swallowing smaller fishes was a common occurrence. Yue Zhong himself had wiped out a few smaller factions, all because those smaller factions had the people and resources he needed.

Bai Yan and Wang Tong had been security guards that received the Nangong family's favour. Bai Yan was also a retired soldier from the special forces. Wang Tong was an expert groomed specially by the Nangong family. The few of them had protected Nangong Bing Yun as they made their escape.

Ruan Wen Tong was a person of mixed Chinese and Vietnamese descent, and he had been groomed by Nangong Bing Yun's father to lead the Vietnamese soldiers. However, Nangong Bing Yun's

father had never expected Ruan Wen Tong to stab him in the back, and not only did he turn over intel to the bigger faction, he had personally led the Vietnamese survivors to take the life of Nangong Bing Yun's father.

Yue Zhong continued his line of questioning: "How many of them are there? How many are soldiers? How many Enhancers? What about weapons? Are there any heavy weapons, or armored vehicles? What about the specific combat strength?"

Nangong Bing Yun frowned, as she mulled in thought, before replying slowly: "They have a base, there should be about 2,000 of them. I think the actual number of soldiers are about 300. They don't have many guns, and the equipment that Ruan Wen Tong has should be provided by them. They had some grenades and rockets, and one machine gun-mounted vehicle. The specific combat strength... I'm not too sure, but I know they have someone who is impervious to bullets and knives, any bullet that hits him would ricochet off. He has a strange strength as well, carrying a huge mace of over 2m in length. He could easily flatten a Hummer in a swing."

When Yue Zhong heard her detailed explanation, he thought quietly: "So it's like this, the armory must have been opened by them."

The base was situated closely to the armory that Yue Zhong found, and it was most likely that they had obtained their weapons and equipment from the armory. Otherwise, there was no way a subpar soldier like Ruan Wen Tong would possess decent equipment.

"Set off!" Yue Zhong then gave the order.

Green Town was a relatively rural town, before the apocalypse, it had been more prosperous, due to its rich coal resource.

After the apocalypse, this town had ended up in the hands of Ceng Zhi. He was a miner in the past, who became an Enhancer.

After that, he had the fortune to evolve into an Evolver, and after countless battles, he reached Level 41. He ruled over 2,000 survivors in the small town, and in the vicinity, whenever his name was mentioned, the other factions would be wary. After all, he had 300 armed subordinates, and he was strong personally.

"This is Green Town?" Yue Zhong came to Green Town, and a look of contempt flashed in his eyes.

The defences of Green Town was extremely simple. They had just erected a simple wooden fence around the town as a means to keep out the zombies. At the same time, near the entrance, there weren't any mounted guns nor watchtowers, only 8 militants sat as they played cards.

It wasn't even comparable to any base of Wuyan Hong.

Yue Zhong ordered indifferently: "Kill them!"

Ming Jia Jia pointed towards those militants, and 4 Shadow Wolves appeared noiselessly from their shadows, leaping out and lunging at their throats. After killing 4 of them, they pounced on the remaining 4, ripping their throats out.

In just 5 seconds, 8 militants laid dead on the floor.

"Strong!!" Bai Yan and Wang Tong saw how Ming Jia Jia had raised her hands and immediately wiped out 8 militants and were stunned. They had no idea that this little loli who looked spirited in her uniform was able to take out 8 grown men without batting an eyelid.

If Bai Yan were to utilize his methods as an ex-special forces, he would at most be able to take down 3, and the aftermath of dealing with the remaining 5 would have been troublesome.

Nangong Bing Yun stared fixedly at Ming Jia Jia, her eyes gleaming with a strange light. She had faced the reality of having her perfect lifestyle torn apart, and was hungry for power. If it weren't for her father being weak, they would not have been taken

advantage of,

After dealing with those 8 militants at the town entrance, Yue Zhong walked brazenly into the town.

The rest of the experts followed closely behind.

Even with Yue Zhong causing such a commotion and sauntering in, the soldiers took a long while to gather and face him.

In such situations, Bai Xiao Sheng and Xin Jia Rou were able to display their strengths as Agility-Type Evolvers. The militants in the town had just gathered, and with the flash of blades, those soldiers had their heads lopped off.

The soldiers in this Green Town could not compare with Wuyan Hong's forces at all, and to Bai Xiao Sheng and Xin Jia Rou, it was no challenge at all.

"Strong!! These people are all strong!!" Ruan Wen Tong watched how miserably the militants were wiped out by Yue Zhong's subordinates, and immediately snuffed out all other ideas, and led Yue Zhong on docilely.

Yue Zhong and his men proceeded like nobody's business, all the way till they reached the place where the current leader, Ceng Zhi, stayed.

Following a furious bellow, a 1.73m tall man took huge strides as he exited his compound. He had tanned skin, his bulging muscles rippling with strength, his expression savage. He had shaved his head bald, and wore an expensive branded set of clothes that did not match his size, while he was decked in countless gold chains. He roared: "Who dares to come and cause trouble here?! Are you tired of living?"

Ceng Zhi had been extremely poor prior to the apocalypse, and after that, he had amassed all sorts of gold to wear on himself. It gave him a comfortable and secure feeling.

Yue Zhong directly pulled out his Desert Eagle and shot at Ceng

Zhi with a lightning-quick motion.

The Desert Eagle round landed right between Ceng Zhi's brows, but instantly, his body was covered with a gold aura. After emitting a loud sound, the bullet ricocheted away.

This was the passive ability [Steel Body] that was enhanced thrice. It gave the person a layer of steel, become extremely tough. The stronger the Endurance, the stronger the skill, the more effective the defence. This skill was similar to White Bones' Strengthen Bones, and with this sort of passive skill, it helped to alleviate the body to an inhumane level.

"Truly capable of blocking bullets." Yue Zhong eyed Ceng Zhi and muttered mildly.

"Attacking me? You're courting death!!" Ceng Zhi was enraged that Yue Zhong had not even spoken once before firing, and he swung his mace up, charging forwards.

"Kneel!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and activated his [Art of Fear], as a strong Spirit attack enveloped Ceng Zhi's mind.

Ceng Zhi had never enhanced his Spirit at all, and under the pressure from Yue Zhong, he was immediately cast into a hallucination.

Under the waves of Spirit attack, Ceng Zhi started bleeding from his orifices, as he crumpled to the floor dead. It marked yet another well-known Evolver that had died at the hands of Yue Zhong.

"It's over!! Boss is dead!!"

"Quick, run!!"

When the soldiers of Green Town clamoured over only to see Ceng Zhi dying of fright in one second, all of them lost all sense of fighting will, and tried to escape.

Bai Xiao Sheng and Xin Jia Rou both led their own teams to chase

down the remaining militants.

"Surrender and you'll be spared!! Surrender and you'll be spared!! Everyone is to stay within your own rooms! If we see you out here, we'll judge you and execute you on the spot!" Ming Jia Jia led a team of her own as they systematically went about to shout at the rest of the town.

After 3 hours, the entire town came under control, and Yue Zhong gained a total of 180 captives, as well as the rest of the survivors within their own homes that dare not step out of line.

Ceng Zhi really opened up the armory. While he didn't have anything like a tank, nor an assault helicopter, he had an infantry company's worth of ammunition, rockets and the like.

After bringing the town under control, Yue Zhong went into the villa Ceng Zhi was staying in.

Nangong Bing Yun followed closely behind, watching his back with a complicated gaze: "Just like this? He just took control so simply."

Not long ago, Nangong Bing Yun's father had his establishment swallowed up by Green Town. At that time, she had felt that Green Town was a fearsome power that they would stand no chance of winning. However, that fearsome power was so easily annihilated by Yue Zhong and a few of his men. They didn't even suffer any casualties. This opened her eyes to Yue Zhong's true might and power.

*[Dedition]: I wonder when everything will change again.

Chapter 491: Night Raid

The moment Yue Zhong entered Ceng Zhi's villa, he saw 8 beautiful Vietnamese women dressed in maid uniforms, standing in 2 neat rows, welcoming him.

As the 8 Vietnamese women looked at Yue Zhong, their eyes flashed with a hint of fear. To them, their master had changed from one man to another, and furthermore, this man was a Chinese. There was already a language barrier right at the get go.

At this time, an attractive lady with a mature charm dressed in a purple nightgown with the bust area slightly revealed walked up to Yue Zhong. She was 1.74m tall, her figure sexy and alluring. She had long, slender legs, and a hint of perfume followed her as she smiled at Yue Zhong, using English to ask: "Hi! I'm Sally Pollock. What's your name?"

Hearing this name, Nangong Bing Yun who was standing beside Yue Zhong gasped in shock: "Sally Pollock!"

Yue Zhong asked curiously: "Is she famous?"

Nangong Bing Yun was speechless as she looked back at Yue Zhong: "Sally Pollock is a huge star in Hollywood! 7 years ago, she had dominated the screens. Although her presence now was not like 7 years ago, she's still an A-list celebrity. Recently, she acted in the movie [Earthquake] which was shown in the country, and the box office revenue was more than 200 million yuan!"

"Oh!" When Yue Zhong heard that, he didn't have much of a reaction. He wasn't one to chase celebrities and gossip news in the first place, being someone extremely pragmatic. He had always been busying himself with studying and working to foot his own tuition fees, his living expenditures, as well as saving for the future. As for movies, other than a few blockbusters, he had never been that excited over the industry.

At this time, Sally asked in a Yue Zhong in slightly broken Chinese: "Hello, Chinese boy, can you tell me your name?"

Yue Zhong looked at Sally and asked slowly: "I'm Yue Zhong! You understand Chinese?"

Sally held out her jade-like hands as she smiled at Yue Zhong: "I've always been interested in China, as it has such a rich history with its 5,000 years of culture as well. I've always been planning to spend some time to properly understand China and its mysteries."

Although her words were like that, in truth, they were all lies. She was a person that knew how to get along with anybody, and with her experience, since knowing that Yue Zhong was a Chinese, she would naturally be full of praises for China. In fact, all she knew about China was that it was a place for money to circulate.

"You'll get a chance to in the future." Sally's words caused Yue Zhong to have a favourable impression of her, as he extended his hand to shake hers lightly, and he replied mildly.

As he let go, there was a hint of disappointment in Sally's eyes. She could feel that there was none of the interest that most men had towards her, in Yue Zhong's gaze. In this apocalyptic world, her beauty, body and fame were her weapons, in order to live a better life. She had used her skills to control Ceng Zhi's heart, just to live like a princess.

Sally had confidence in her own looks and figure, and numerous men had fallen at her feet. When she saw Yue Zhong's lack of interest, it caused her to be unsatisfied.

Yue Zhong eyed the 8 maids and asked mildly: "Is there anyone here who speaks Chinese?"

All of them became pale, as one hesitated a while before stepping up, using some halting Chinese to reply: "Master Yue Zhong, I know a little Chinese."

As Green Town was quite near Hanoi, the number of Vietnamese

who knew Chinese were not little.

Yue Zhong asked: "What's your name?"

The servant replied: "I'm Zhang Cai Lian!"

Yue Zhong directly appointed: "From today on, you're their supervisor."

Zhang Cai Lian was pleasantly surprised: "Thank you Sir!! Thank you Sir!!"

The other 7 saw her excitement and joy, and were immediately envious. They did not know why she was suddenly so elated, but it was definitely a good thing. At this moment, they regretted not knowing Chinese.

Yue Zhong then turned to eye Sally, speaking mildly: "Miss Sally, we don't welcome idlers here. Seeing that you've respect and curiosity towards the Chinese culture, I can give you 2 choices. The first, is to leave of your own accord, I can give you 7 days of rations and water. The second option is to work at the Culture Centre, to help us train up singers, dancers and actors."

Sally was incredibly gorgeous, that was true, and was even an A-list celebrity in Hollywood. However, Yue Zhong was not interested in all these. He had plenty of good-looking women by his side, and Sally wasn't really his type.

Sally's brows arched as she gave a meaningful look: "Is it ok if I stay by your side to wait on you? Even being a servant is not an issue for me. I'm willing to do anything for you."

To her, her body was precious, and she wasn't willing to work. Even more so, she could not bear the idea of drifting in the wild. There were zombies and mutant beasts everywhere. With her lack of power, she would definitely die. She wanted to stay by his side, and make use of her charms to thoroughly control him.

Yue Zhong flat out rejected her, as he replied in a cold tone: "No!"

Sally's eyes flashed with a strange glint, as she forced a smile and made her choice: "In that case, I choose to work at the Culture Centre."

"En!" Yue Zhong looked towards Ming Jia Jia.

"Come with me!" Ming Jia Jia eyed Sally coldly, before leading her out.

Yue Zhong then went and sat himself down on the sofa. Zhang Cai Lian quickly went to brew 2 cups of tea and placed them in front of Yue Zhong and Nangong Bing Yun. She then muttered a few words to one of the pretty Vietnamese maids and they proceeded to kneel in front of Yue Zhong, massaging his legs carefully.

Ceng Zhi liked looking as these beautiful young ladies waited on him gently. Zhang Cai Lian had decided to wait on Yue Zhong like the way she used to for Ceng Zhi.

Yue Zhong looked straight at Nangong Bing Yun and asked: "What're your future plans?"

Nangong Bing Yun looked back at him with a sweet smile: "Leader Yue Zhong, I wish to bring men to join you and support your cause. I can speak Vietnamese, English, Thai, and Japanese. Furthermore, I have taken on responsibilities as part of a consortium over at Guangxi once. I think, I should be well qualified to assist you."

Nangong Bing Yun was not just a flower vase. Although she had gotten to where she was due to her family's connections, she truly had the capabilities, and was well-versed in 4 different languages. It goes to show that she was truly intelligent.

These scions of the higher class of society were usually born with better conditions, and the moment there was someone extraordinary that emerge from them, they would also possess a different level of outlook and vision than most others.

Yue Zhong mulled over for awhile, before asking: "I'll assign 200 Vietnamese to you, will you be able to control them?"

Her eyes held a level of confidence in herself: "Not a problem."

Yue Zhong was also infected by her level of self-confidence, and he directly replied: "Good! Then I shall assign 200 men to you!"

His hands were currently full, and trying to control all the Vietnamese was extremely difficult. The moment things went slightly awry, they would immediately retaliate. It gave him a major headache. After all, he was Chinese, and it was hard for him to gain their recognition.

Nangong Bing Yun then took the initiative to ask Yue Zhong to send someone to monitor her: "That's great! I hope that you can send some people to direct me as well."

Yue Zhong agreed: "Yes!"

After gaining his consent, Nangong Bing Yun quickly left the villa, she wanted to get to work to obtain the strength from Yue Zhong.

On the surface, the situation of the town looked like it had stabilized, and with the flow of time, night gradually came.

In the dark of the night, a number of black shadows crept towards Green Town.

Very soon, there were over a hundred black silhouettes, and they gathered together, making their way towards the direction of Green Town with the cover of the night.

At the entrance of Green Town, there were 8 Vietnamese soldiers patrolling. Although there were 8 of them, they had only 1 gun, with only 3 bullets. The rest were wielding sabers. Yue Zhong could not trust these soldiers that had just submitted.

As the 100 black silhouettes got closer to Green Town noiselessly, at a distance of about 20m, one of them stepped on a patch of

earth.

Following a huge explosion, the man was directly blown to bits by the landmine buried underneath.

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

Green Town started blaring with alarms, and the Vietnamese soldiers who were at the entrance began hiding behind covers amidst their fear and anxiety.

Seeing that their situation had been unraveled, a man wielding a huge black mace shouted out: "Kill the Chinese dogs!! All those Vietnamese males with heart, charge with me!! Kill the invaders!! For our wives, and kids! Not to suffer at the hands of the invaders!! Everybody, charge with me to kill these Chinese dogs!!"

With the effect of the [Soundwave Transmission], the whole Green Town heard the enraged roars of the man.

When that male had finished shouting, he quickly brought his bunch of warriors as they charged in towards Green Town.

"Let me come with you to kill the Chinese dogs!" One of the Vietnamese soldiers immediately rushed towards the leader of the assailants.

"Me too!"

"Kill the Chinese dogs!!"

With their emotions riled up, the 8 Vietnamese soldiers at the entrance turned traitor and charged in as well.

Chapter 492: Total Suppression!

A number of flares were suddenly shot into the sky, illuminating the entrance of Green Town.

Many concealed defence points began to spew out bullets, as 3 12.7mm heavy machine guns rattled and fired wildly at the militants launching the raid.

Under that terrifying spray of bullets, in just a short span of time, more than 20 of the militants were ripped to shreds, their bodies a mangled mess.

Watching their comrades dying such horrible deaths, the rest of the militants turned pale, and quickly sought for cover.

At the same time, the words of the mace-wielding man had a huge effect in the town, as a number of Vietnamese survivors that had submitted to Yue Zhong for fear of their lives, began to band together as they charged towards the centre of town, intending to wipe out Yue Zhong and his people.

Yue Zhong and the rest were Chinese, and did not have the support of the Vietnamese. With just a little incitement and provocation, the Vietnamese began to rally and riot, joining the chaos caused by the militants.

Just as the survivors within the city began to rebel, Nangong Bing Yun and Xin Jia Rou led 200 soldiers they charged into the centre.

Nangong Bing Yun looked at the 200 Vietnamese soldiers before ordering coldly: "Attack! Kill all of them! Kill them, and their women and rations are yours! From now on, you guys will also be treated as the same status as the Chinese. If not, your families will join you in death!"

"Kill!"

"I'm sorry!! Forgive me!!"

With that ruthless order, the 200 Vietnamese soldiers charged helplessly at the rebelling survivors, and began to hack and slash.

Xin Jia Rou appraised the beautiful and charismatic Nangong Bing Yun with a chill in her heart: "This woman is not simple."

Nangong Bing Yun had selected those 200 Vietnamese men because they had families. The lives of their relatives were in her control. Hence, when she gave the order, they had no choice but to slaughter their own countrymen.

Today, the moment they committed this, they had no chance of turning back, and in the future, they would have to rely on Yue Zhong's power, fulfilling their roles as slaughterers.

The majority of the rebels were ordinary people and all they had were vegetable knives. They had no way of contending against the soldiers with actual weapons. Both sides engaged in an all-out slaughter, and very soon, the rioters lost their will, and were killed by the soldiers.

In the clash, many of the soldiers were also injured by these rioters, and they became even more enraged, just killing, and all sense of shame and guilt were thrown out the door, becoming like wild animals as they slaughtered their countrymen.

At the entrance of Green Town, the 3 defence points kept the militants at bay, suppressing them. The 3 heavy machine guns were like death gods, as they continued to fire, the militants did not dare to take rash actions.

"Charge!!" The mace-wielding leader bellowed out in rage.

The remaining militants charged out again in a second wave, and they lost another 6 or 7 men before they began to scramble yet again.

They were just a bunch of courageous fools. Amongst them, there were a few Enhancers, however, they were just average, and had not trained to the point where they could ignore bullets.

High-levelled Enhancers were not aplenty like cabbages. The reason why factions like the Kingdom of God and the Great Empire of Vietnam had such numbers of Enhancers was because they had a large number of humans and resources to train up such experts.

In the outside world, an Enhancer that had reached Level 30 could become the leader of a small establishment. If his or her luck was good, they could even become the leader of a middle-sized faction.

Yue Zhong came to the entrance and saw those militants. He muttered with disinterest: "So weak, yet you dare challenge me?"

The militants were absolutely clueless in their tactics, and were at most comparable to new recruits that had just undergone some days of training with Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong gave an order to White Bones: "White Bones! Get them, leave 5 alive."

White Bones' eyes radiated with fire, as it immediately charged towards those militants.

In just a few blinks, White Bones had charged through the militants, its bone blades dancing, causing a whirlwind of carnage and blood. Not a single militant was able to defend against it.

"Too scary!!! Retreat! Everybody retreat!!" The leader saw how White Bones was slaughtering his subordinates like chickens and dogs, and his heart turned cold as he quickly shouted towards his men.

At the same time, he turned around to escape towards the darkness. This man, Cen Ya, finally recognized that Yue Zhong was not a target to mess around with.

A night raid was a common tactic that the weak used against the strong. From history, many night raids had achieved shocking results. When Cen Ya heard that Green Town had switched owners, he had assembled his subordinates at the first moment,

hoping to eradicate the Chinese who had yet to reinforce their rule, and take over the town.

At first, with the 100+ subordinates of his, plus launching a night raid, in addition to the help that he would receive from the Vietnamese within the town, he had an 80% confidence of success. However, the one factor he failed to consider was that Yue Zhong was actually incredibly powerful, more than he could imagine. He had also overestimated the strength of his own troops. The 3 heavy machine guns were enough to totally suppress them, after all, they were death-fearing humans, not zombies.

Bai Xiao Sheng saw that the militants were about to retreat and he got restless, bringing his 10 subordinates and rushed off into the night: "Let me have some fun as well!!"

In the dark of the night, Cen Ya ran frantically. He had expended all his strength, but close behind him, White Bones was like a demon that chased without tiring, its eyes flashing with a cold light.

"He's too overbearing!!" Cen Ya's eyes flashed with a mad light as he activated his skill [Explosive Strength], and turned around suddenly to face off against White Bones, swinging his mace viciously.

White Bones' speed was vastly superior to Cen Ya, and in just a short step, it had disappeared from its original location.

When Cen Ya's attack met air, he was filled with shock. Suddenly, a sharp bone spike shot out behind him, piercing his body and nailing him to the ground.

Cen Ya felt the sharp pain and immediately screamed out in Chinese: "Don't kill me!! I surrender!! I surrender!!"

Cen Ya would often boast about himself as a true warrior and man, but he was a coward at heart. Hence, the moment he felt the threat of death, he chose to surrender. He wanted to survive no

matter what.

White Bones eyed Cen Ya before dragging him towards Yue Zhong. It already possessed the intelligence to tell that this was the ringleader. If it didn't have the enhanced intelligence, it would have instantly decapitated Cen Ya without discerning his status.

Cen Ya had been captured, whereas his subordinates had all been routed and killed or captured alive by Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest.

Yue zhong eyed Cen Ya coolly and asked: "Who are you?"

Cen Ya replied with his back full of cold sweat: "I'm the leader of Wood Village, Cen Ya. We have 700 survivors in the village, and I'm their leader."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with killing intent as he continued: "I'm Yue Zhong. What value do you have that can justify not killing you?"

Cen Ya instantly felt like his entire world froze over, his face pale and his body trembling uncontrollably. Tyrant Yue Zhong was the devil that was famous for slaughtering over 100,000 Vietnamese survivors in the rumors, and he had finally come face to face with him.

Cen Ya instantly threw all pride and face out the window as he knelt and begged: "I know the locations and details of the factions around this region! Other than that, I also know information about the largest faction near Hanoi, the Vietnam Prosperous Development Committee. I'm willing to divulge all this information, please let me serve you, spare my life!!"

Seeing the image of Cen Ya now, it would cause one to be unable to reconcile the previous image of him hollering for the sake of the country.

Yue Zhong replied mildly: "Alright alright!! Tell me what you know!"

"Yes! Yes!" He heaved a sigh of relief and began to reveal

everything.

The Vietnam Prosperous Development Committee, or VPDC for short, is the largest Vietnamese survivor base near Hanoi, and they control a huge amount of land near the city of Hanoi. They had about 280,000 survivors, and are led by a team of 7 leaders. Every one of these leaders possessed a terrifying amount of strength.

Cen Ya only knew about the superficial details, and had no idea about the intricate stuff. Although he knew the existence of the VPDC, he hadn't planned on bringing his men to join them. After all, he was a leader himself, and he enjoyed his then-lifestyle. The moment he joined the VPDC, his base would definitely be swallowed by them.

In the night, a blue-coloured motorcycle roared through the darkness and appeared in front of a small town.

There were 4 Vietnamese soldiers that immediately barked: "Who goes there!"

4 sharp bone blades whirred as they shot out in an instant, slicing the heads of the 4 Vietnamese soldiers off.

The blue motorbike shot through the town, all the way till it came to a lavish villa.

Yue Zhong leapt down from the motorcycle.

Cen Ya also came down from the motorcycle, his face pale as he stared at Yue Zhong, wide-eyed with fear.

Chapter 493: Envoy Appears!

Yue Zhong kicked out at the door of the villa, sending it flying.

A burly man with 2 long scars on his face and 4 bodyguards in suits appeared before Yue Zhong's eyes.

This middle-aged man with scars was called Li Sheng Li, and was the leader of this small town. He was also a Level 35 Enhancer.

Li Sheng Li looked at Yue Zhong and barked sternly: "Who are you?"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a chilly light, and he immediately pulled out his Stinger firing a single shot at Li Sheng Li's head.

His speed was simply too terrifying! Before Li Sheng Li had the chance to react, his head had already been blown off, as red and white brain matter splattered onto the ground.

The 4 bodyguards by Li Sheng Li's side were also experts, the moment they saw Yue Zhong moving, they had already pulled out their guns.

Suddenly, a huge nether hole appeared in mid-air, and at the next moment, 6 incredibly sharp bone spikes pierced the 4 bodyguards, before twisting. The 4 body guards were instantly sliced into parts, fresh blood pouring everywhere.

Inside the villa, there were many beautiful Vietnamese ladies. When they saw this cruel scene, their hearts were filled with fear, and they cowered, not daring to raise their heads.

Cen Ya walked to the scar-faced man and his eyes were filled with a complicated gaze as he confirmed: "Leader! This man is truly Li Sheng Li, the leader of Ang Yang Town!"

He noted the outcome of Li Sheng Li, his heart beating with fear. If he had continued to resist Yue Zhong, he might have met with the same ending.

Yue Zhong eyed the corpse indifferently and said: "Got it! Go and spread the news of his death!"

Cen Ya did not dare dally as he replied hastily: "Yes!"

Soon, the news of Li Sheng Li's demise spread around the entire town, and the faces of the militants who were assembled in the town froze in terror. They were at a loss. Li Sheng Li was their core and leader, with his death, they truly did not know what to do.

Some of them wanted to avenge him, while others took the opportunity to flee.

When those militants tried to stage a coup in the town, Yue Zhong directly brought White Bones to kill them. Not a single one could withstand a single blow from either Yue Zhong or White Bones. In a short hour, the entire town had been eliminated of any troublemakers.

Early the next morning, Nangong Bing Yun and Xin Jia Rou brought 200 Vietnamese survivors as they arrived at Ang Yang Town.

"So powerful!" The moment they entered the town, Nangong Bing Yun was treated to a sight of corpses lying all around, and was stunned momentarily. She thought she had a grasp of Yue Zhong's capabilities, but each time, he continued to exceed her expectations.

Within the town, other than those corpses, there were militants who surrendered as well as the ordinary Vietnamese survivors.

The militants did not dare to make any rash moves, and those fellows that had tried to escape had all been pierced by White Bones' blades and dragged back before being executed. The bloody scene had filled the hearts of the people present with terror, and they finally understood the true might of this new overlord.

Nangong Bing Yun and Xin Jia Rou came to where Yue Zhong was staying.

Nangong Bing Yun's eyes were filled with a complicated gaze as she saluted him: "Leader!"

Yue Zhong eyed her and ordered mildly: "En! Nangong, go bring men to handle the bodies in town. After that, escort the fellows and the resources in town back to Green Town."

Nangong Bing Yun stood at attention and replied: "Yes!"

Yue Zhong then pointed to Cen Ya and continued: "And this fellow, let me join you guys to go escort his subordinates."

Cen Ya grinned sheepishly at Nangong Bing Yun.

In just one night, he single-handedly collapsed 2 factions. This man was simply too terrifying. Nangong Bing Yun's mind was filled with such thoughts.

However, she was still a capable person, and she led her men as they brought the survivors and resources to Green Town, before bringing Cen Ya to transfer his own establishment over as well.

After gaining over a few thousand people as well as resources, He began to transport everything towards Thai Nguyen City. He had no interest in clashing against the VPDC at the moment.

The VPDC had over 280,000 survivors, and there must be a number of experts there. If Yue Zhong wanted to conquer such a huge faction, he needed to deploy the troops over from Guangxi, and even then, he would at most have a 70% level of confidence.

However, the support and logistics were equally important in modern warfare. The moment the battle started, the expenditure of ammunition would skyrocket. In fact, it would not be beneficial to Yue Zhong's next intended move, which was to take down the industrial city Yan Zhou. Only by obtaining it, would he be able to have a wholesome military, and not fret about expenditure of ammunition.

Yue Zhong had taken down Wuyan Hong purely because Wuyan Hong was filled with ill intent towards the Chinese. Furthermore,

his claws were already reaching into the Guangxi region, and he had no way of tolerating his actions.

Wuyan Hong's aim was also to expand into Guangxi, so that he could take down Yue Zhong, therefore Yue Zhong had no choice but to deal with him harshly.

Outside of Green Town, a jeep was driving over.

"Who are you people?" The 4 soldiers stationed at the entrance of Green Town was immediately on their guard, as they stopped the jeep.

The jeep came to a halt, and 4 people stepped out. There were 2 middle-aged men, as well as a young man and young lady.

The leader was one of the middle-aged men, his hair combed back neatly, and one could tell that he possessed the aura of a government official. He spoke out: "I'm the VPDC's diplomat, Han Wang, we hope to be granted an audience with your leader Yue Zhong. Please relay the message."

"Wait here!" One of the soldiers quickly left.

The young male's face turned dark as he muttered: "What gall. These damn Chinese. This is Vietnam, not your fucking China."

Han Wang frowned and shot the young man a look: "Qian Yi. This is someone else's territory, save it."

"Hmph!" Qian Yi glared back while snorting. It was obvious that he did not place this Han Wang character in his eyes. If it wasn't that Han Wang was still vital to their cause, he would have long since beaten him up.

"Please enter!" Soon, the soldier returned and granted the party entry.

The soldier led Han Wang and his group towards Yue Zhong's office.

"What a pretty woman!" The moment Qian Yi entered the office,

he was captivated by Xin Jia Rou who was standing by Yue Zhong's side. He had toyed with numerous women after the apocalypse began, yet he had never seen a beauty on Xin Jia Rou's level.

Han Wang eyed Yue Zhong and began with a warm greeting: "Hello! I'm Han Wang. You must be Leader Yue Zhong, I am honoured to meet you."

"Yes, it's me Yue Zhong!" Yue Zhong looked straight at Han Wang, and asked directly: "Han Wang, whatever it is you have to say, just say it. I'm really busy at the moment. If there's nothing important, please leave."

Yue Zhong was currently extremely tied up, there were simply too many things he had to handle. Although he had delegated as much responsibility as possible, there were issues in Lang Son City, Guilin City, and Long Hai City that only he had the authority to decide.

Han Wang was caught off-guard by Yue Zhong's straightforward nature, as their custom was to always exchange pleasantries before getting down to business. He never expected Yue Zhong to be so direct.

After hesitating a while, Han Wang chuckled slightly and said: "Our Vietnam and China has been friendly allies since ancient times! The Vietnamese and Chinese are all good friends and brothers. We have joined our forces together to resist against the aggression of imperialism in the past..."

Yue Zhong immediately raised his hand to stop Han Wang: "I want to know your intentions. If you want to continue bullshitting, please leave."

If he gave Han Wang, who was such an experienced diplomat, the time to talk, he would be able to spout nonsense for an entire hour.

"This fellow is not easy to deal with." This thought flashed across Han Wang's mind when he was interrupted by Yue Zhong.

However, he maintained a smile on his face: "Our VPDC hopes that Leader Yue Zhong would be able to provide some support to us on account of our countries' friendship. We're just asking for 100,000 tonnes of rations, 3,000 rifles, 500,000 rounds of ammunition, 10 tanks, and our VPDC will be your strongest ally in the future. The Vietnamese would also forever remember the favour that the Chinese have shown them."

Yue Zhong's tone turned steely: "Not possible. If you want to obtain something from me, you will need to offer something of equal value in exchange. If you want rations, then take out some firepower. If you want firepower, then you need to offer rations or other equivalent items."

In the past, China had been suffering, yet it had still sent resources and aid to Vietnam. In the end, it wasn't long before Vietnam fell out with China.

The statement that the Vietnamese would remember the favour from the Chinese was bullshit in his opinion. Yue Zhong would not be blindsided by Han Wang.

Qian Yi's face twisted, as he stared at Yue Zhong and barked loudly: "Yue Zhong, you're currently standing on Vietnam's turf. You have killed so many Vietnamese, getting you to offer this much is already letting you off easy. This is Vietnam, you want to not give us any fucking face, do you believe that our VPDC will deploy forces to wipe you out?"

Han Wang was alarmed as he quickly berated: "Qian Yi shut up!!"

This was Yue Zhong's territory, and Han Wang looked at Qian Yi, his heart full of regret.

Qian Yi turned to laugh coldly at Han Wang with disrespect: "Han Wang, your father, I, have been tolerating you for a long time. You shut the hell up for your father."

He then turned back to look at Yue Zhong, without fear and full

of recklessness: "Yue Zhong. I know this is your territory. However, your father, I, am the younger brother of the President of the VPDC, Qian Ming Sheng! If you have the guts, kill me! If you dare to kill me, the entire country of Vietnam and all of Vietnam's citizens would be your enemy!"

Chapter 494: A Falling Out

Yue Zhong eyed the cocky Qian Yi and told Xin Jia Rou, "Break one arm."

She received the order, a cold look on her beautiful features, and pulled out a Black Wind Blade, shooting towards Qian Yi.

"I finally forced your hand!" Qian Yi chuckled coldly in his heart and was about to dodge to one side, when suddenly his entire arm was sliced off, blood spraying everywhere.

"Ah!!!! Yue Zhong!!!! You animal! Kill me if you have the guts!! If you don't, today's enmity, I will definitely repay it a hundred fold!!" Qian Yi screamed out in agony and fury, as he ran towards the door.

Qian Yi was an Agility-based Evolver of Level 27, and he had placed all his attribute points to Agility. His speed was considered terrifying but he never expected that the lady standing quietly by Yue Zhong's side was so much faster than him. Her strike had been ruthless as well, slicing off his arm in just one slash with no hesitation.

At this time, the other middle-aged man stepped forward, his eyes glinting dangerously, and activated his Second Order Werewolf Transformation. He instantly shifted into a 2.5m tall monster with sharp claws.

This man was in charge of protecting Qian Yi, at the same time, his other responsibility was to kill Yue Zhong if negotiations fell through. In close quarter combat, the werewolf truly had a huge advantage.

After turning into a Second Order werewolf, the man disappeared from his spot in a flash, and lunged for Yue Zhong.

The pretty young lady by Qian Yi's side also pulled out a dagger, rushing forwards for Yue Zhong in a flash.

Han Wang watched the situation spiral out of control with a dismayed expression and shouted out loudly: "Stop fighting!! Stop fighting!!"

A diplomatic trip actually turning into an assassination attempt, it was the first time Han Wang came across something like this in his life.

In truth, there were 2 camps in the VPDC, with differing attitudes towards Yue Zhong. The dove side wanted to negotiate with Yue Zhong and obtain resources to solve the problem peacefully, while the eagle side had proposed using force to eradicate this potential source of trouble.

After an intense debate, the VPDC had decided to send an envoy to negotiate with Yue Zhong. Other than Han Wang, the rest were given a special mission, which was to kill Yue Zhong the moment they got a chance to.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed as he shot back explosively, at the same time, activating the [Art of Fear] on her. A sudden Spirit blast enveloped the female assassin, causing her to faint instantly.

Yue Zhong's Spirit was incredibly high, if one didn't possess enough Spirit defences or treasures, Agility and Strength Enhancers would find it hard to defend against his [Art of Fear].

At the same moment when Yue Zhong was casting the [Art of Fear], the werewolf assassin had already appeared by his side, both claws streaking towards Yue Zhong with a faint after-image trailing behind.

Yue Zhong activated his [Shadow Steps] and shot to one side.

The werewolf's strike met air, but the sharp claws caused long gashes in the ground.

The eyes of the werewolf Enhancer flashed viciously, seizing the chance that Yue Zhong was retreating, and lashed out with a violent kick.

The speed of the kick was swift, and Yue Zhong was forced to raise his left arm to block. A huge force resulted from the clash, causing him to be sent knocking into a wall.

With the [Shadow Steps], Yue Zhong's speed had long since surpassed a Type 2 Lightning, even then he didn't manage to block the blow from the werewolf. This was because the Second Order werewolf could lash out explosively, and that speed was something that exceeded even Yue Zhong's expectations.

Without losing momentum, the werewolf tapped the ground lightly and shot towards Yue Zhong again.

As the werewolf reached Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong raised his Stinger and fired 6 times consecutively.

While the werewolf was quick, Yue Zhong's speed wasn't to be underestimated as well. Coupled with his marksmanship, which through much practice was equally swift and lethal. The werewolf strived to dodge all of them, but was still shot in the shoulder by one of the bullets, causing a 3mm hole.

His recovery ability was frightening though, as right after it was wounded, the bullet hole stopped bleeding fairly promptly!

The werewolf then leaped forwards about 5 or 6 metres, tolerating the pain and slashed at Yue Zhong viciously.

Yue Zhong instantly retaliated by casting the [Gravity Manipulation], as a two-fold gravitational force pressed down on the werewolf, causing his movements to slip. Yue Zhong then pulled out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade and swung it at the werewolf's body.

If the strike connected, the werewolf would be immediately sliced in half.

Knowing that, the werewolf's eyes flashed with a mad light, as he swung out with a claw, attacking Yue Zhong's body. Suddenly a bright shield appeared in front of Yue Zhong with flash of light,

blocking that hit.

Yue Zhong's strike managed to connect with the werewolf's body.

The reaction of the werewolf was truly top-notch, and it immediately retreated backwards, dodging that fatal blow.

However, that slash from Yue Zhong managed to cause a deep gash on the werewolf's body, as a huge amount of blood began to pour from the wound.

Just as the werewolf wanted to escape, a nether hole appeared in mid-air, and White Bones shot out its maximum of 10 sharp bones spikes at the werewolf.

The werewolf quickly lashed out and blocked the majority of the incoming projectiles. However, one managed to slip past his defences, and pierced his body, nailing him to the ground.

Yue Zhong then directly pulled out the Stinger and calmly aimed at the werewolf.

A huge sense of danger rose in the werewolf's heart and he immediately shouted out without care for his pride: "I surrender!! Don't kill me!! I surrender, I'm willing to submit! Spare me!!"

"This guy sure is something else." Yue Zhong gazed at the werewolf nailed to the ground and his eyebrows raised. He never expected someone this shameless could become a Second Order expert.

He ordered coldly: "Cancel your transformation! Otherwise you can go to hell!"

The werewolf quickly deactivated the transformation, turning back to his middle-aged appearance. He had a look of fear and apprehension towards Yue Zhong.

For those transformation types of abilities, the moment they were canceled, their actual strength would decrease as well. In a short span of time, even if they transformed again, they wouldn't

be able to gain the same attribute boosts like the first time. For this man who had canceled his transformation, Yue Zhong could find any expert over Level 30 to play with him to death.

Xin Jia Rou brought Qian Yi over, who had both his arms removed, and asked: "Master! How do you want to deal with this person?"

Qian Yi stared at Yue Zhong with a venomous look, and threatened: "Yue Zhong! If you have the guts, kill me! The VPDC would definitely not let you off!"

Qian Yi's main motive had been to incite trouble between them and the VPDC. However, he had been too arrogant, and wrongly estimated Yue Zhong's reaction as well as actual strength. Hence, he had ended up in such a situation.

Han Wang's face was pale as he came up to Yue Zhong and pleaded: "Leader Yue Zhong, please, you can't kill him. If you do, the relationship between you and us would be irreparable!! Please, don't kill him!!"

Han Wang was the most diplomatic person within the VPDC, and he didn't wish to see the VPDC and Yue Zhong's faction to have a irreconcilable enmity. If both parties were to fight, the death count would be high.

Yue Zhong eyed the man who can transform into a werewolf and asked: "What's your name?"

The werewolf Enhancer replied honestly: "I'm called Chen Luo!"

Yue Zhong pointed at Qian Yi and spoke coldly: "Chen Luo! Kill him! From now on, you're my man." "Otherwise...."

Chen Luo's eyes flashed coldly, and he hesitated a while, before gritting his teeth and walked towards Qian Yi: "I'm sorry, Young Master Qian. I need to live as well."

Qian Yi looked at him with a look of contempt and spat: "Pei! You damned ingrate! One day, you'll be killed by this Chinese dog, I'll

go first, and wait for you in hell!"

Chen Luo did not dodge and allowed the spit to land on his body, before he reached out with his huge hands and grabbed Qian Yi's neck. He then quickly twisted.

With a loud 'kacha' sound, Qian Yi's neck was broken, and the light in his eyes dimmed.

"It's over!!" Han Wang looked at the dead Qian Yi and his heart fell, knowing that there was no point of return. He looked at Yue Zhong, his face pale, unsure of what was next. Yue Zhong had killed Qian Yi, and naturally would not care if he killed Han Wang as well. Han Wang wanted to live.

Yue Zhong turned to look at Han Wang, saying indifferently: "Han Wang, go home and tell Qian Ming Sheng! I don't want the VPDC as my enemy, but if they want to provoke me, don't blame me for whatever happens then. Go back!"

"I will definitely convey your words!" Han Wang heaved a sigh of relief and turned to leave.

After Han Wang left, Yue Zhong immediately ordered Chen Luo: "Chen Luo! Tell me everything you know about the VPDC."

"Yes! Leader!"

Chen Luo had already betrayed the VPDC, and had no burdens on his heart. He began to reveal all the information he knew about the VPDC to Yue Zhong, allowing him to understand the situation.

There were a total of 7 leaders within the VPDC, the president being Qian Ming Sheng. Other than the president, there were 6 vice-presidents. They were Chen Shu, Yao Li Hua, Fan Shan, Ming Wei He, Mu Xiong and Gui Jing.

Every one of these 7 leaders had at least a 1000 subordinates each under them, and they were all powerful Evolvers in their own right.

Chapter 495: Viscous Undercurrents!

The VPDC was made up of 7 factions that came together as an alliance, and when they joined forces, they had a troop that was over 10,000-strong. In the Hanoi area, the VPDC was basically the strongest establishment.

It was because Qian Yi had such a backing behind him that he became arrogant. He was like this in front of many smaller factions.

However, the VPDC had their own issues as well. They had people but a lack of weapons. Even after joining forces, there were only a total of 2,000 rifles and a few other light weapons.

The VPDC had a total of 200,000 survivors, but they didn't always have this number. It had grown slowly through countless battles and measures. Hanoi had huge armories and infantry camps, but there were over 3 million zombies there. Any troop that had gone to attempt to break in had been wiped out by the zombies.

Other than a lack of weapons, there was the problem of feeding 200,000 people. Hanoi had a huge granary as well, but likewise the problem of zombies was still present. Almost any expert that ventured deep into Hanoi had vanished. A rare few had managed to make it out alive by escaping the moment they saw things beginning to go awry.

Without gaining more resources, the resources of the VPDC were getting tighter, and other than the direct subordinates of the 7 main factions, the rest of the survivors were already in a state of starvation. There were even cases of cannibalism already.

Although many of the experts of the VPDC had been hunting Mutant Beasts in the forests, not all were simple hunting prey. In the process of the hunts, the VPDC had obtained a decent amount of Mutant Beast meat, but they had also lost a number of their

elites. The VPDC had 10 experts for leaders initially, but 3 of them had met with mishap against a Type 3 Mutant Beast, and now they were left with 7 leaders.

Under such circumstances, the VPDC could only continue to expand outwards. Their current enemy was only Yue Zhong. They had no choice. Between Yue Zhong and 3 million zombies, without any proper equipment, the human enemy was easier to deal with.

Furthermore, Yue Zhong had clashed with Wuyan Hong a few times, the VPDC assumed that he must have suffered some setbacks. Therefore, they felt more assured of their advantage.

"Sooner or later, we'll have to fight it out!" After obtaining such information from Chen Luo's mouth, Yue Zhong mulled things over. He immediately transferred another 2 battalions of elite soldiers to be stationed at Thai Nguyen City.

In this winter, a huge deployment had its risk, but guarding a base had its pros. Yue Zhong decided to take things slow, having been always on the move to expand.

Collapsing a small establishment of a few hundred people was easy for Yue Zhong to handle single-handedly. However, it was not possible for him to do so against 200,000.

=====

There was a meeting room in a county called Yuan Feng County, and the atmosphere within the room was extremely tense. There was a smell of gunpowder as well.

A burly man with huge coarse hands stood up to snarl: "I think that we should launch our assault. Wipe out that damned Chinese menace, kill his subordinates, and then chop off his head to be used as our toilet bowl!"

This man with a the crude demeanor was Ming Wei He, and he was the leader of a small triad prior to the apocalypse. His methods were extremely vicious. After the apocalypse set in, he had quickly

gathered a number of subordinates and became a small-time warlord.

Chen Shu became silent before rejecting the suggestion: "No way! The fact that Yue Zhong could swallow Thai Nguyen City and Lang Son City means that his power is not to be underestimated. If we want to take down Thai Nguyen, we will need to deploy a huge number of troops. It would be too risky. We don't even know what he's capable of, or what his trump cards are. If we just charge ahead, the chances of success are obviously too low."

Yao Li Hua's eyes flashed with a cold glint: "Then we're just going to let this slide? Yue Zhong that bastard killed our envoy, if we don't do anything, our subordinates are going to walk! Mu Xiong, what do you make of it?"

Mu Xiong's face revealed a savage expression as he growled: "Yue Zhong has to die! He killed so many of our countrymen, we cannot let such a bastard roam free."

Yue Zhong had unleashed his fury on a number of Vietnamese and the news had spread far and wide. Every single one of the 7 leaders of the VPDC did not see Yue Zhong in a favourable light, there were even a few that were filled with intense hatred.

Gui Jing chipped in coldly: "Yue Zhong dares to kill our VPDC people, he must die! If we're to eliminate him, I'm willing to be the vanguard!"

Mu Xiong also joined in loudly: "If it's fighting Yue Zhong, I'm also willing to be the vanguard!"

Yue Zhong had his reasons for killing those Vietnamese, however, the fact that over 10,000 Vietnamese had died at his hands held true. These Vietnamese hated him to the core, and the moment there was a chance to kill him, they leapt at it.

Qian Ming Sheng eyed everyone coolly, before asking Yao Li Hua: "Yao Li Hua, your thoughts?"

He maintained a deadpan expression: "I feel that we should negotiate properly with him. He managed to win against a prickly foe like Wuyan Hong, just this alone shows that he's not simple. If we forcefully launch an assault, we might not win. There's one more factor, which is the weather. If we were to deploy our troops, and they were to meet a snowstorm, there's the possibility of our entire army being wiped."

Hearing his assessment, the rest of the leaders sunk into their own thoughts. The thing they were most afraid of was for their army to face treacherous elements of nature. It would be a catastrophic blow to the morale.

Because of the strange weather, there had been a number of hailstorms over Vietnam. Each time, there would be numerous Vietnamese survivors that succumbed. The most serious was when a snowstorm during a hunting expedition, causing 300 experts to freeze. Half of them had died. If such a situation were to occur again in the event of their deployment, then before even taking down Yue Zhong, they would be the one to die first.

Qian Ming Sheng revealed a good-natured laugh: "I've solved the issue of the weather. Mr. Anreit, please come in!"

The doors to the meeting room opened, and the diplomatic envoy from the Kingdom of God, Anreit, came walking in with a warm smile, speaking in Vietnamese: "How do you do everyone! I'm the diplomatic relations officer from the Kingdom of God, and I am pleased to meet you."

Seeing the appearance of this envoy from the Kingdom of God, the gazes of the other 6 fell upon Qian Ming Sheng.

He chuckled lightly and said: "The Kingdom of God has given us accurate data about the weather, through their satellites. Furthermore, they have decided to assist us with 2,000 rifles, 30,000 rounds of ammunition, 50 heavy machine guns, 50 cannons, 100 RPGs, and a 1,000 RPG rounds."

"For real?!"

Hearing those words, the other leaders became excited. If the Kingdom of God were to really provide them with the aforementioned equipment, then their combat ability would increase dramatically!

Mu Xiong immediately responded passionately: "President! I want 500 rifles, 10,000 rounds of ammunition, 10 heavy machine guns, 10 cannons, 20 RPGs. My Chang Sheng army will take the vanguard role!"

Gui Jing snorted coldly: "Hmph! Mu Xiong, just you alone and you want 25% of the equipment, your appetite is too big eh!!"

Mu Xiong scolded: "Fuck! If you're willing to be the vanguard, I will definitely not have any issues with you taking those equipment!"

Gui Jing immediately replied: "Fine! My Wan Sheng Army is willing to take on this responsibility! We want 25% of the resources!"

In this world, military might and ration were the most sought after. With regards to men, as long as one had enough rations, it would be easy to recruit a number of people. Gui Jing was not afraid of losing men, as long as his core brothers did not die, he could easily regain the same amount of help.

Ming Wei He's eyes also flashed with an intense glint: "I'm willing to be the vanguard! Give the 25% to me!"

For the sake of the allocation of resources, the leaders of the VPDC soon got embroiled in a heated discussion.

Anreit's face was still wearing a smile as he watched the commotion, although he laughed coldly in his heart: "A bunch of ignorant monkeys. Just a little amount of firepower and it's enough for you to squabble like that. You guys are at most fit to be a pawn of our Kingdom of God."

Yao Li Hua did not participate in the argument, instead he kept silent before asking Anreit: "Mr. Anreit, since the Kingdom of God is actively providing us with aid, what're your conditions?"

Within this meeting hall, only Qian Ming Sheng and Yao Li Hua did not participate in the bid for resources.

Hearing his words, the rest who were still arguing immediately quietened down and looked towards Anreit.

Having undergone many years of development, the Vietnamese had seen their fair share of things. They also knew that the foreigners could not be trusted, and not a single foreign establishment was foolish.

In a world where rations and military resources were treasured items, the Kingdom of God had actually taken the initiative to provide aid. There was definitely a catch.

"Seems like there's a monkey that can think." Anreit gazed at Yao Li Hua and chuckled lightly: "General Yao. Yue Zhong has gone back on his agreement with the Kingdom of God, and has breached our trust, even attacked our people. The enmity between us is deep, and the Kingdom of God shares the same enemy as you."

Anreit continued: "In order to respect the sovereignty of Vietnam, it's not right for the Kingdom of God to deploy our troops just like that. Hence, we can only offer to work together with you guys to wipe out Yue Zhong, who is an invader, and a butcher who has killed thousands of innocent people. Of course, our Kingdom of God has a little request, that is that we seek the protection of the VPDC with regards to our fellow people here in Vietnam. At the same time, we hope to establish a partnership with you guys, where both sides get to trade on equal footing."

Chapter 496: The VPDC Attacks!

Hearing the explanation from Anreit, the leaders present got an understanding.

They had known about Yue Zhong viciously backstabbing the Kingdom of God, causing them to suffer greatly, hence the hatred was understandable. They also thought that the free trade was the true goal of the Kingdom of God.

However, the VPDC did require free trade as well, if they engage in trades with the Kingdom of God, then they could quickly expand in this world.

Hearing Anreit's explanation, the leaders began arguing over the distribution of the resources again. In this world, strength was everything. Qian Ming Sheng could be the president was precisely because he commanded the strongest troops in the VPDC.

Yao Li Hua's eyes brows arched before he frowned and sunk back into silence. He couldn't help feeling that something felt off.

Anreit's face was wearing a smile, but he chuckled coldly in his heart: "Bunch of fools, please die for us first!"

The Kingdom of God kept their word and quickly delivered the promised firepower to the VPDC.

After obtaining the military resources, and distributing them to their respective units, they began to deploy their troops towards Thai Nguyen City.

The VPDC were anxious as the pressure to feed 280,000 was weighing on them. Even supporting their own troops was starting to cause strain. It would at most last for another month. They had 2 choices, one of which was to obtain some form of ration trade with Yue Zhong, the other, to defeat him entirely, and obtain everything of his. Otherwise, Yue Zhong didn't need to act, and they would already start to collapse because of the shortage of

food.

On the road from Hanoi to Thai Nguyen City, 3 soldiers were currently concealed within a forest while observing the road.

One of the soldiers continued watching, pulled out a can of meat and handed it to ferocious-looking soldier: "Captain, do you want some?"

When the captain saw the can of meat, his eyes lit up. He immediately received it and took a piece of meat which stuffed it in his mouth: "Type 2 Mutant Beast Meat! Old Wang, you sure have your ways! So much good stuff!"

The Type 2 Beast Meat cans were manufactured out of the various Type 2 Mutant Beasts. Ordinary survivors seldom get the chance to savour it. The Type 2 Mutant Beast meat could replenish energy, and most ordinary soldiers would find themselves in tiptop condition after eating it.

The captain relished the entire can of meat, and wiped his mouth: "That hit the spot! Look at you! This can of meat is mine! But I'll help you find a lady. Follow the leader in his ways, what will we be short of? I already have 3 Vietnamese women. If you want, I can gift you one, as long as you can take care of her."

Old Wang was instantly interested: "Really?"

The captain replied smugly: "But of course!! In the whole of Lang Son, your father, I, had personally killed 3 Vietnamese bastards! As a reward, the higher-ups have given me 3 Vietnamese women. However, if my salary wasn't high, I really would not be able to take care of them."

In this apocalyptic world, due to conflicts breaking out often, there was an imbalance of men and women. Furthermore, Yue Zhong did not follow any monogamous practices, and allowed men to have many wives.

Old Wang looked at his captain with a look of envy, he also

wished to have a woman to warm his bed.

Another soldier called out in a solemn voice: "Captain, there's a development!!"

"What?" The captain immediately withdrew his joking manner and smug look, becoming tense as he instantly went into alert-mode, surveying the scene.

He saw that a huge army was currently marching towards Thai Nguyen, and he sucked in a breath of cold air: "What an army!"

From the numbers, the army was about 70,000 strong, and to a zombie horde, it wasn't much, but to a human enemy, this was an army to be feared.

The captain retreated from the forest stealthily and reported his findings with a walkie-talkie.

"They actually deployed in such weather, their guts are big!" Yue Zhong sighed upon receiving this news, and immediately began his preparations for retaliation.

The survivors within Thai Nguyen were ushered into their own homes, and simple fortifications were constructed. A number of soldiers stationed at various defence points, and the cannon teams also went on standby, awaiting orders from Yue Zhong.

The entire Thai Nguyen City was riled up in preparation for war, awaiting to bare it's fangs.

The march of the VPDC was extremely slow, only after travelling for an entire day did they finally reached the frontier of Thai Nguyen.

After arriving, Qian Ming Sheng and the other 6 leaders of the VPDC observed Thai Nguyen silently from their command centre.

Mu Xiong's eyes lit up with a burning gaze as he spoke: "President! Let me be the vanguard!!"

"No! Let the foreign battalion go first!!" Qian Ming Sheng shook his head immediately.

Soon, a soldier began rushing towards Thai Nguyen.

"Don't fire!! I'm Chinese!!"

"Save me!! Don't shoot! Don't shoot!!"

"Please!! Don't shoot! I'm Chinese!!"

The foreign battalion was made up of many Chinese who were dressed raggedly, and had people of different age and gender. They wielded huge knives as they ran, and have been forced on this path of desperation. Behind them, there was the Vietnamese troop that threatened to kill them if they dared to stop.

At the same time, there were many VPDC experts mixed in with the foreign battalion. As long as these experts made it into Yue Zhong's base, they would be able to unleash carnage and kill Yue Zhong' soldiers.

Although the VPDC had lack of firepower, they had truly cultivated a few experts under extreme circumstances during hunting, and the number of these experts was not little.

Qian Ming Sheng eyed Thai Nguyen coldly: "I'll watch how you handle this!"

Forcing the people of his enemy's country to attack their own people. This was a common tactic used by Genghis Khan in the past, and it was extremely cruel, yet effective. The moment the kingdom was unwilling to kill these citizens, then those Mongols who were hiding within the crowd would seize the chance to attack the city. Many a stronghold had been brought down like that.

After the apocalypse, society had collapsed, there were no more relationships between countries, so the earth was no more a global society. Instead, it had fractured, and everything was as though it was before the era of navigation. At each corner, for the sake of living space and resources, humans would do anything, and

employ any means to get what they want.

Seeing the Chinese charging over, the Chinese soldiers felt their resolve starting to crumble. These were their countrymen.

Yue Zhong immediately barked out loud: "Those who are Chinese, get down and don't move!"

Beside him, an Enhancer made use of the [Soundwave Transmission] ability to send his words across the battlefield.

"Get down!!"

"Get down!"

"Quick get down!!"

The Chinese soldiers in Thai Nguyen city began hollering out, they knew the next order from their leader.

After hearing those words, some Chinese chose to immediately dive to the ground, some seemed to hesitate, while some continued to run towards Thai Nguyen. The Vietnamese behind them were simply too terrifying.

"Open fire!" Yue Zhong eyed the 2,000 people still running towards the city and barked coldly.

He had already achieved a huge standing amongst his military, and even though many Chinese soldiers could not agree with his orders, they still obeyed, and began firing out lines of fire.

Faced with that devastating line of fire, many of the Chinese survivors that were still running, as well as the Vietnamese experts hidden amongst them were instantly torn in shreds by the rain of bullets.

With the sweeping fire, many of the Chinese survivors began to wake up and quickly dove to the ground, not daring to move at all.

After just a single volley of fire, there was no one alive left standing. The remaining Vietnamese experts had also laid on the ground together with the Chinese survivors, not daring to move.

"What a vicious fellow! He truly deserves his moniker as 'The Tyrant!'" Qian Ming Sheng watched how easily the foreign battalion had collapsed and had a bad premonition. However, the arrow had left the bow, and if the army were to just retreat like that, within 10 days, their own VPDC would be the one to collapse.

"Mu Xiong! Go and launch an assault!" Qian Ming Sheng turned to Mu Xiong and ordered.

"Yes! President!" Mu Xiong replied, a hint of excitement in his eyes.

Soon, a force of over 6,000 people came marching out from the VPDC's camp. They were subordinates of Mu Xiong. He had initially started off with about 1,300 subordinates. However, through his glib tongue and attractive words, he had easily gained another 4,700 men. If it wasn't for the insufficient food, he could even recruit 10,000 without an issue.

He shouted loudly to raise the morale: "Brothers!! That Yue Zhong hiding in Thai Nguyen has killed over 10,000 of our brethren! He's a butcher, and a demon! Now's the time to avenge them! I hereby announce, whoever is the first to breach Thai Nguyen, I will present to him a full set of equipment! Not only that, I will raise that person till Level 30, as well as award 1,000 jin of rice and 5 beauties! His rank will also increase by 3 ranks! On top of all this, he will get 3 days off!"

"Kill!!"

"Kill!!"

"Kill!"

Under Mu Xiong's encouragement, the 5,000 soldiers became feverish and they charged headlong towards Thai Nguyen!!!

Chapter 497: Probing Attack!

The 5,000 strong Vietnamese troop lacked firearms, most were just equipped with hacking knives. There were even some wielding vegetable knives. However, they were already forced by the harsh circumstances, and they could only forge on ahead.

These soldiers wanted training but lacked training, wanted weapons, but lack weapons as well. All they had was their fiery passion and a brutal killing intent towards their enemies.

Yue Zhong watched these incoming Vietnamese troops and ordered coldly: "Open fire!"

The moment those 5,000 soldiers entered the range of Thai Nguyen, countless bullets began firing, and in the rain of bullets, many of them were immediately killed and fell to the ground.

Seeing their comrades dropping like dumplings, many of the warriors instantly lost their composure and fled, wailing in misery and fear.

With the retreat of those soldiers, what left as a 5,000-strong troop returned as a 3,000-odd group, with over a 1,000 casualties lying on the battlefield,

In front of Thai Nguyen, there were Vietnamese soldiers lying on the ground with various degrees of injuries, screaming or moaning.

Mu Xiong came up to Qian Ming Sheng with a look of regret, saying: "President!! I've failed! That Yue Zhong is truly capable!"

In truth, Mu Xiong's actual troops had not been activated yet, those who had died were soldiers he had just recruited. Seeing the strong firepower of Thai Nguyen, Mu Xiong had felt his balls shrink, and did not dare deploy his core strength.

The direct subordinates of the 7 leaders were the core strength. They would not casually send them out. If their troops were wiped

out, then their position would instantly plummet.

Gui Jing remarked sarcastically: "Mu Xiong! How come you didn't send your direct troops? How is this considered a storm? Giving those supplies to you was truly a waste!"

Mu Xiong rolled his eyes and retorted: "Then you can have the resources. Go take your own troops and charge!!"

Qian Ming Sheng frowned and barked: "Stop quarrelling!"

Gui Jing and Mu Xiong immediately quietened down, but they still glared daggers at each other.

Qian Ming Sheng was faced with a headache. The total number of people he brought was 80,000. However, the number that could actually fight was only about 10,000. Those with guns numbered 4,000. It was the first time he was actually commanding such a huge operation. Facing Yue Zhong who had decided to sit defensively inside Thai Nguyen, he could not think of any better ideas.

He hesitated a while, before turning to the military advisor sent by the Kingdom of God, Roman, and asked: "Mr. Roman, do you have any suggestions?"

Roman immediately gave his recommendation: "General Qian, I think that with your combat strength, you should launch a frontal assault with all your troops. At the same time, assemble all the high level Enhancers and form a storm team as the core, which will focus on breaching Thai Nguyen and unleashing their abilities then. Only then, you guys will have a chance of success."

Qian Ming Sheng wasn't a military genius or tactician, after hearing the suggestion, he mulled a while before ordering Mu Xiong: "Mu Xiong! Go bring your direct troops to launch another assault. I will distribute 500 rifles, 70,000 rounds, 20 cannons and 20 RPGs to you."

"Yes!" Mu Xiong gritted his teeth and replied after thinking.

500 rifle-wielding Vietnamese soldiers began edging towards Thai Nguyen carefully.

This time, as they engaged in a gunfight, the Vietnamese soldiers sought for cover before firing from afar. At the same time, a number of cannons began firing at Thai Nguyen.

These Vietnamese did not storm the front, and Yue Zhong's troops were also behind cover in Thai Nguyen as they fired their own weapons.

On the field, there were sounds of explosions and bullets, but neither side had suffered heavy losses.

If it was a fistfight or physical clash, the results would be revealed extremely quickly. However, if they remained in a gunfight for so long, then they would just be expending their ammo wastefully, and the fight would come to a stalemate.

A Vietnamese soldier had just stuck his head out when his brains were instantly blasted apart by a bullet.

When the gunfight had reached a stalemate, Yue Zhong had deployed 15 snipers, and they were like grim reapers, collecting the lives of many unfortunate Vietnamese soldiers.

The moment the 15 snipers entered the fray, the Vietnamese soldiers were totally suppressed, and they didn't dare stick their heads out, choosing instead to fire wildly.

"The efficiency is too low!" Yue Zhong eyed the Vietnam soldiers hiding and frowned, before ordering White Bones: "Go take them down."

Although the Vietnamese soldiers were suppressed and forced to hide, by remaining behind their covers, there was no chance for Yue Zhong's superior firepower to be effective.

Upon receiving that order, White Bones' demonic eyes flashed, and it leapt down the wall, charging towards the soldiers like a tank.

Seeing it approach, many Vietnamese took the risk to stick their heads out and fire at it.

White Bones danced about in the rain of bullets, reaching their location in barely 10 seconds. Its bone blades shot out constantly, piercing numerous soldiers and pinning them to the ground.

As it lunged into the midst of the more than 400 soldiers, it was like a tiger slaughtering lambs.

It leapt up a huge stone, and instantly fired 5 bone spikes out to pierce the heads of the Vietnamese soldiers entrenched behind it.

"Go to hell! Go to hell!"

6 Agility-based Enhancers appeared, as they charged at White Bones while firing wildly. A dense barrage of bullets enveloped it, leaving no way to retreat.

White Bones did not bother to dodge, in fact, as the bullets struck it, they just created loud sparks, ricocheting off. It raised its hand, and another 6 bone spikes shot out, piercing the heads of the Agility-based Enhancers. Fresh blood splattered everywhere.

It then swung forcefully, throwing the corpses of the 6 Enhancers to one side.

After casually taking down 11 Vietnamese soldiers, White Bones disappeared from its location and appeared beside a particular soldier, slicing his throat!

With White Bones rampaging about the Vietnamese soldiers' location, blood sprayed everywhere, not a single soldier was a match against it. Each time its bone blade flashed, a corpse would be left behind.

After killing over a hundred Vietnamese soldiers, they had begun to collapse, and ran away from their cover towards the back.

Yue Zhong's snipers took the chance to gun them down one by one.

White Bones maintained its assault and pursuit for a long time, before retreating.

The VPDC had many experts after all, and even if White Bones was stronger than most of them, it would fall under a joint attack. It already possessed intelligence and could judge the situation for itself.

"Shit!! Shit!! Damn bastard!" Mu Xiong watched his subordinates running back in terror, his eyes bloodshot. He had sent out 500 soldiers, and now, only 278 returned, the rest having perished on the battlefield. This loss was a huge blow to him, and he was filled with fury and regret.

Mu Xiong didn't really care if he lost a thousand or even two thousand ordinary survivors. However those 222 soldiers were elites that he had trained up. With their deaths, his power was diminished by about ?.

The rest of the leaders watched the retreat of Mu Xiong's subordinates quietly, their hearts overwhelmed with a pressure. These soldiers were the elites among the VPDC, but they had barely held out for 2 hours and were sent into collapse. A bad feeling arose in their hearts. Many began to regret, feeling that they should have gone for proper negotiations.

However, after having finally gotten a taste of Yue Zhong's might, while many were feeling regret, not a single one mentioned retreating. They knew that this battle concerned the life and death of the VPDC. The moment they lost, they would collapse on the spot.

Gui Jing frowned and came up to Qian Ming Sheng: "What now President?"

All the leaders of the VPDC looked towards Qian Ming Sheng, awaiting this leader of theirs to give the next order. They might have some form of conflicts amongst one another, but in such a critical juncture, they could only rely on Qian Ming Sheng.

Qian Ming Sheng saluted everywhere, as he ordered solemnly: "Convey my order! Everyone is to make their preparations! The whole army will launch an assault on Thai Nguyen. We can only press forwards, no retreat. They might have strong firepower, but we have powerful Enhancers as well. As long as we get close, it will all be ours! Everyone of you will pass me 30 experts that are over Level 30, I will lead them to breach from the right. This will be our final stand! For the sake of our Vietnam, I'm pleading everybody here!!"

"Yes!"

"Got it!"

"I'll settle it now!"

All the leaders were riled up by his impassioned speech, and responded resoundingly.

Roman's face wore an emotional smile, but he was laughing at them inwardly, "Bunch of ignorant bumpkins. They're not even going to leave any reserve forces. If this charge were to fail, they'll really lose everything. Forget it, they're not military men after all. Having done up to this point, guess I'll give it to them. They do have some capable experts, maybe they can help wear down part of Yue Zhong's strength."

Under Qian Ming Sheng's orders, the 70,000 strong army began to move, and they charged towards Thai Nguyen like a river that broke through a dam, looking extremely desperate to escape its bonds.

Chapter 498: Crushing Defeat of the VPDC!

Yue Zhong eyed the sea of soldiers charging towards Thai Nguyen and he laughed coldly: "The hasty dogs have leapt!"

This sort of swarm tactic during a critical juncture usually spelled the end of that army's position in history.

In the face of the fiery net created by the mass firing of bullets, whoever came would be shot dead. Humans were different from zombies. As long as any part of their bodies were hit, they would lose a huge part of their combat strength.

"Fire!"

With the assault of the 70,000 Vietnamese, Yue Zhong ordered coldly.

At almost the same instant, the numerous defence points began spewing out lines of fire. The barrage of bullets rained onto the battlefield, drawing blood from a massive number of soldiers, who fell like wheat being reaped.

Seeing their comrades die, the originally low morale of the soldiers who were charging began to crumble, and some turned around to retreat.

Mu Xiong's eyes were bloodshot, as he immediately executed his fellow countrymen who retreated: "No escaping!! Charge!! You guys better charge!!! Whoever tries to escape, I'll execute you!! For Vietnam, we must charge!!"

The direct subordinates of the 7 leaders had become some form of enforcement, forcing the newly recruited soldiers to continue their assault towards Thai Nguyen. The newly recruited soldiers were just fulfilling the roles of cannon fodder, drawing away the massive firepower.

Following the cruel sounds of gunfire, some of the soldiers who tried to retreat were killed on the spot.

In front was death, behind was also death. Trapped between two extremes, these Vietnamese were helpless, in the end, driven by desperation, they could only continue forward.

Yue Zhong eyed the last ditch attempt by these Vietnamese soldiers and praised silently: "Fierce!"

The moment the Vietnamese were forced to a breaking point, they would become extremely violent and aggressive. In the past, even though they had the support of China and the Soviet Union in fighting the war in the North, if they didn't have the ability, they would not have been able to survive against the more advanced and powerful American troops. When those Vietnamese had become fierce, even the women and children were fearsome warriors.

However, regardless of courage or bloodlust, flesh and blood were not a match against metal bullets. With the dense barrage of bullets, a large number of the soldiers fell in their own pools of blood.

Although they were brave, these were just ordinary people who had not even received any form of training. With the bullets raining upon them, they could only muster a form of courage to face their death.

"Yi! Are those the elite troops of the VPDC?" Yue Zhong stood atop a vantage point, observing the entire battlefield, when he suddenly saw a group of soldiers charging towards Thai Nguyen, forcefully blocking the lines of fire.

A huge number of bullets fired towards them, only to be forcefully redirected to a side. The troop continued its charge without stopping, not a single one of them suffering an injury.

"Fools! You're too flashy!" Yue Zhong eyed the troops and immediately gave an order to the cannon team that were on standby.

"Open fire!"

The self-propelled rocket launchers that were waiting for orders immediately fired upon command, as a volley of rockets rained towards the group of elites.

"Shit!!" As the rocket fired into the region, Qian Ming Sheng felt a bad premonition arise, and he immediately activated his Second Order Ice Manipulation ability, causing a thick layer of ice to cover his body.

The various experts in the group began to display their abilities, as all sorts of tree walls, barriers, stone slates, wind shields, etc began to appear.

At the next moment, a huge volley of cannons rained down on the group of elites, causing a deafening explosion. The terrifying impact roared out and enveloped the entire space the group was in, destroying everything around it, turning the huge stones that laid about into dust.

There were 4 volleys of rocket fire that rained down, and with the constant roars and impacts, everything in that area was decimated, as the resulting shockwaves rushed outwards, dusts of clouds covering everything.

By the time the dust cloud settled, there was not a single person alive to be seen in that region. Everyone was either dismembered or blasted to unrecognizable pieces.

This group of Enhancers that were above Level 30 were eliminated just like that under the ruthless and merciless volley of rockets, leaving not a single one alive. Before Qian Ming Sheng even had the opportunity to reveal his power, he had already perished.

"Qian Ming Sheng is dead?"

"The president is dead?!"

"The president is dead!!"

When they saw that the Qian Ming Sheng and his troop enveloped by the constant rocket fire, the hearts of the other 6 leaders stopped for a moment. Their subordinates were thrown into chaos.

Yue Zhong grabbed the walkie-talkie and ordered: "1st Armored Battalion, roll out! 2nd Infantry Battalion, attack!"

The huge gates of Thai Nguyen opened, and instantly, an armored force consisting of 20 tanks, 15 IFVs, 40 machine-gun mounted vehicles came roaring out, covered by an army of infantry soldiers as they charged into the battlefield.

The armored force was like a hot knife slicing through butter, as any resistance they met from the Vietnamese soldiers was instantly crushed. They were the kings of the battlefield, as long as it was on a large plain, nothing could withstand their assault.

With the pressure from the armored vehicles, the VPDC soldiers that were already suffering from the low morale began to crumble under the pressure. Many threw away their armor and weapons, as they tried to run away. Even more threw down their weapons and raised their hands to surrender.

Mu Xiong watched the situation unfold, his face ashen as he muttered: "How did it come to this? How did it come to this? We're 70,000 people!! How come we lost?!"

Gui Jing's face was steely: "Quick, let's escape!!! Otherwise, we're all going to become Yue Zhong's captives!"

Yao Li Hua had already brought his troops and ran at the first moment of trouble.

The moment they lost, they crumbled, and the original strong killing intent was replaced by an urgent fear and scramble for life.

Under that chaotic scenario, even though there were a number of Enhancers that had some fight left in them were affected, as they begun to escape pathetically, leaving only a handful of ordinary

soldiers.

Yue Zhong was at first unaware of the magnitude of the situation, hoping to use only one armored battalion and an infantry battalion to charge out, attacking their morale. He never expected that with just a single blow, the entire VPDC fell apart, and he immediately sent out another 2 infantry battalions to round up the captives.

After they chased for almost 10km, Yue Zhong recalled the troops back to Thai Nguyen. In this battle, he had decimated over 10,000 Vietnamese, and captured over 40,000 Vietnamese soldiers. He had suffered about 45 casualties on his own side, and these were a result of the counterattack from the Vietnamese that were being chased.

The training, experience and equipment of the VPDC were vastly outclassed by Yue Zhong's. If Yue Zhong had been the one to attack the VPDC, they might have been able to cause him some damage. However, the moment they decided to launch the assault, it spelled their downfall.

After destroying the VPDC, Yue Zhong's troops began to clean up the battlefield. On the battlefield, all the injured Vietnamese soldiers would be killed by a strike. Even the corpses were not spared, just to be sure.

In this apocalyptic world, rations and medicine were rare resources, Yue Zhong could not afford to waste such precious resources on the enemy. He would only spare his stock for his own people.

The corpses of Yue Zhong's soldiers were then collected together and set on fire, before their ashes were kept. If the situation called for it, they would not be abandoned, otherwise, they had to be treated this way as a form of respect.

As for their enemies, the corpses were given to Lightning and its little brothers as food. The Mutant Beasts had to eat as well after

all.

The 40,000 VPDC soldiers were directly sentenced to become slaves, and had to slog for the city.

After destroying the main force of the VPDC, Yue Zhong began entertaining a thought: "Shall I launch an assault on their main base?"

Yue Zhong pondered awhile before ultimately abandoning that line of thought.

First: Although the VPDC had fallen, he had not fully eliminated them. There was still some remnant force somewhere.

Second: If he wanted to eradicate the entire group, he would have to deploy his troops. The moment the weather turned for the worse, his forces might be wiped by nature.

Third: With the current predicament of the VPDC, there was no need for him to act and they would still collapse on their own.

Fourth: His intention was still to expand towards Guangxi, not Vietnam. With the VPDC acting as a barrier for the 4 million zombies over at Hanoi, it was slightly less of a pressure for him.

On the other side, the remaining 6 leaders had managed to escape to a small town of about 50 li out of Thai Nguyen, before heaving a sigh of relief.

However, the current VPDC had only about 4,000 soldiers left, and they were the direct subordinates of the 6 leaders. The rest of the riff-raff had already disappeared.

Yao Li Hua turned to the rest of the 5 leaders and spoke: "The president is already dead! What shall we do now? Let's hear it from everybody!"

Chapter 499: Turmoil!

Mu Xiong's expression was savage, as he bellowed in rage: "Let's bring our men and fight it out with Yue Zhong!"

Mu Xiong was a high-level Evolver and his strength was overbearing. However, he had muscles for brains, and only knew how to fight.

Ming Wei He frowned and rejected: "No way! Without enough firepower, even if we bring more men, we would not be a match for that devil."

It was not like in ancient times, tactics to do with overwhelming numbers were useless in the face of modern weaponry. Today's battle had opened the VPDC's eyes to the true might of Yue Zhong. Without sufficient firepower, they would only die if they continued to clash against Yue Zhong with their current strength.

Gui Jing's eyes flashed coldly as he spoke slowly: "We have been defeated this time! Right now, the best thing we can do is to retreat quickly and split up!"

Gui Jing's suggestion was to disband the VPDC. Right now, they had lost their troops, and were still facing a problem of food shortage. If they each went their own way, there might be a higher chance of survival.

Of course, this choice was the cruelest choice as well. It was not easy to find sufficient rations to feed over a hundred thousand people. Furthermore, the Mutant Beasts in the forests are not targets to be casually provoked. They knew very well that should the VPDC really disband and went their own way, out of those hundred thousand survivors, only a handful would survive.

It must be made clear that even hiding in the city, a single snowstorm could already claim the lives of over thousands of people. By hiding in the forests, things might become much worse.

Unless they were fortunate enough to discover a hiding place that can shelter them from the adverse weather conditions as well.

Chen Shu mulled over silently, before raising his head and spoke resolutely: "No way, that option will cause many of our countrymen to die! These are our comrades! We can't give up on them so easily."

Fan Shan had been silent all this while, as he observed the rest of the leaders, his eyes flashing with a strange glint.

Gui Jing countered: "Then what do we do about the rations issue? Are you going to find rations for them? Do you have the capability to find that much rations? As long as you can give a solution, I'll support you!"

"You!" Chen Shu glared at Gui Jing, before he snorted and kept quiet.

The ration issue was truly vexing, if it wasn't for it, the VPDC wouldn't have rashly launched an assault against Yue Zhong. They were truly in shortage of food.

This time, Fan Shan, who had been keeping quiet, suggested: "Let's negotiate with Yue Zhong, what do you guys think?"

When Mu Xiong heard Yue Zhong's name, his face instantly contorted in fury and he yelled out: "No! Not a chance! Yue Zhong is a butcher that had slaughtered our fellow countrymen, he's the devil. We can cooperate with anyone but him! Fan Shan, are you intending to betray our country and its citizens?!"

Gui Jing spoke up with a strange face: "I was just wondering how was it that our VPDC was defeated so tragically, seems like there was a traitor within our midst."

Ming Wei He's face turned steely as he barked: "Fan Shan, are you able to face our comrades who died? How can we bow to that invader? Are you really intending to betray your country?"

Chen Shu seemed as though he wanted to speak, but seeing the

tense atmosphere from Mu Xiong and the other 2, he decided to keep quiet.

The 6 leaders of the VPDC were all powerful Evolvers, even if they hide in the forest, as long as they didn't meet any overpowered Type 3 Mutant Beasts or those with special abilities, they would not die. Of course, the woods were still less safe than the city.

Fan Shan's face didn't change, but he replied woodenly: "Since you guys are not in favour, forget it."

Yao Li Hua tried to mediate: "Leave it guys! Everyone's just thinking for our country and people."

Right at this time, 5 Vietnamese soldiers rushed in to the meeting hall with urgent expressions: "Leader! We have something to report!"

Gui Jing and 4 other leaders were momentarily distracted by the entrance of those 5 soldiers.

At that instant, Yao Li Hua's pupils constricted, as he pulled out a handgun and fired at Mu Xiong, not before casting his ability [Strengthen Bullet].

A bullet carrying a terrifying force blasted Mu Xiong's head apart, killing this high-level Evolver instantly.

At the other side, a sharp dagger suddenly appeared in Fan Shan's right hand, and he activated his Second Order [High Speed Movement], his entire person flashing like a shadow. He appeared in front of Ming Wei He, and slashed at his throat instantly.

"What the fuck are you guys doing?" Gui Jing was after all forged through countless battles, and was a Endurance and Strength dual-attribute Evolver. He was in shock and fury, immediately activating his Second Order [Turtle Shell Body], turning his skin into a thick, hardened layer that looked like a turtle's shell.

With its protection, Gui Jing's body could withstand even the

impact from a 25mm cannon round. At the same time, his immense Strength could allow him to blow apart a head with just his fist. Amongst the 7 leaders of the VPDC, he was the strongest in physical damage.

At this time, the 5 soldiers that had rushed in turned on Gui Jing.

Gui Jing's fist exploded on one of the soldier's body, causing that soldier to instantly suffer a huge hole in his body. Gui Jing then flung his hand, tossing the corpse of the soldier towards the other 4.

Yao Li Hua prepared an Enhanced bullet as he spoke to Chen Shu:" Chen Shu! Our targets are Gui Jing, Mu Xiong and Ming Wei He!! For the sake of our VPDC and the lives of our hundred thousand countrymen, please lend us a hand!"

A number of Enhanced bullets blasted on Gui Jing's toughened body, causing a number of bloody holes. Even with his Second Order [Turtle Shell Body], it could not fully withstand the might of the Enhanced bullets.

At the same time, Fan Shan was flitting without stop, the dagger in his hands slashing towards Gui Jing in unpredictable movements. So far he managed to cause some white scars, but not actually injuring him.

To Agility-based experts, those with high Defences were their bane. They had to maintain a high level of vigilance towards them. The moment they were not careful, they would be caught in their grasps, and might be easily taken down in a single move.

Gui Jing surveyed his surroundings for a moment before making a dash for the exit. He wanted to leave the place and escape from this massacre.

The 4 Vietnamese soldiers charged at him, intending to impede him.

Gui Jing's fist landed on one of them, causing his head to be

smashed like a watermelon. He then grabbed another soldier and ripped him apart casually. Blood and inner organs splattered onto the floor. He then lashed out with a kick at one more soldier, sending the soldier flying like a cannonball into a wall.

While Gui Jing was slaughtering those ordinary soldiers, Yao Li Hua continued to fire his Enhanced bullets without stop, causing a number of wounds. He eyed Gui Jing about to run out of the hall and shouted: "Chen Shu! Are you not going to act?"

Hearing that enraged shout, Chen Shu sighed, and a cold light flashed in his eyes, as he activated his Second Order [Gravity Manipulation]. Instantly, a gravity of 8-fold enveloped Gui Jing, causing him to sink.

Yao Li Hua immediately seized the opportunity, his eyes narrowing and he expended a huge amount of Spirit and Stamina to cast [Enhance Bullets], firing once at Gui Jing.

With a flash, a terrifying bullet shot towards Gui Jing's heart.

Gui Jing tried his best to shift his body, but under that 8-fold gravity, his movements were impeded. In the end, the powerful bullet penetrated his heart, tearing a huge blood wound in his chest. His entire body knocked into the wall behind. The corners of his mouth twitched slightly, before his eyes turned dim.

Seeing Gui Jing dead, Yao Li Hua finally heaved a sigh of relief. He had a complicated look in his eyes as he gazed at the corpses.

Early the next morning, a jeep came to the entrance of Thai Nguyen city.

"Halt!! Get out of your vehicle!" A soldier stationed at the entrance stepped forward to block the jeep.

6 people stepped out of the jeep, 2 men and 4 women. The leader was Yao Li Hua. The other male was a young bodyguard. 2 of the women stood beside Yao Li Hua, One was about 18 or 19, her skin was fair and flawless, her hair thick and lush. Her figure was

extremely sexy, while it might not be explosively voluptuous, she was curvy in the right places. She had a demeanor that would cause most men to go crazy. The other young lady was about 11 or 12, and she had snow-white skin, and looks that were extremely adorable.

Yao Li Hua spoke kindly towards the soldier: "I am one of the leaders of the VPDC, Yao Li Hua. Today, I'm here to seek an audience with Leader Yue Zhong! Please relay the message!"

"Wait here!" The soldier reluctantly withdrew his gaze from the beautiful young woman and walked towards Thai Nguyen City.

Soon, Bai Xiao Sheng came out from Thai Nguyen, he had a look of greed as he saw the alluring woman, before speaking indifferently to Yao Li Hua: "Come with me!"

Chapter 500: Negotiating Survival

Yao Li Hua assessed Bai Xiao Sheng and his party, only to note that Bai Xiao Sheng and his men were exuding a strong killing intent. At the same time, he could faintly feel that every single one of them were a threat to him.

His heart immediately sunk: "Yue Zhong was truly hiding his power, to think he has so many experts under his command."

At first, Yao Li Hua had assumed that Yue Zhong only had the might of military firepower with him, and were lacking in experts. He was still feeling slightly haughty, that while Yue Zhong may have the firepower, the VPDC had the experts. The moment he saw Bai Xiao Sheng and the 30 experts of Level 40 and above, what little arrogance he had left immediately vanished.

Yao Li Hua entered Thai Nguyen and was immediately treated to a sight of work being carried out on various sites, as a number of heavy machine guns defended the main roads and transport channels. A number of soldiers exuding a palpable fierce aura were coldly observing the people nearby.

It was the first time he had seen such elite soldiers with proper bearing. There were many experts in the VPDC that could hold their own against Mutant Beasts, but they were lacking in conduct and bearing compared to Yue Zhong's troops.

Seeing the tight and heavy defences, Yao Li Hua sighed softly in his heart: "Truly, he is someone we could not have hoped to win against!"

With the VPDC's strength, forcefully trying to assail Thai Nguyen would just result in death. Both parties had a huge difference in their might, and Yao Li Hua was made clear of that fact once again.

Under Bai Xiao Sheng's lead, Yao Li Hua and his party came to Yue Zhong.

Inside the room, Mu Xiang Ling was decked in a neat green military uniform, looking suave and charming. She served tea to Yue Zhong as well as Yao Li Hua's party, before sitting down beside Yue Zhong.

At the same time, Ming Jia Jia was sitting on the other side, also dressed in military uniform. However, her expression was one of displeasure.

"His taste is abnormal. Looks like the rumors are true." Yao Li Hua had a strange look as he gazed at the 2 lolis.

Yue Zhong took up the cup and sipped it quietly, before looking at Yao Li Hua and directly confirming Yao Li Hua's identity: "Yao Li Hua. One of the VPDC's 7 leaders. What brings you here? Unless memory is failing me, you guys just tried to invade a couple of days ago. Now you're shamelessly appearing in front of me, what do you want?"

"Leader Yue Zhong, as to the matters previously, I apologize sincerely. On behalf of the VPDC, allow me to express our sincere apologies!" He stood up and bowed, keeping his head lowered.

Inwardly, Yao Li Hua was no different from his comrades, in that he wanted to tear this butcher in front of him into pieces. However, he had no choice but to bow, because he was too weak! Too weak!

In the past, when they were facing the westerners, even after winning the war, they had to lower their heads and compensate.

It was because they were too weak, and had no cards to play, nor rights to bargain.

Yao Li Hua kept his head lowered as he spoke solemnly: "On account of the friendship between China and Vietnam, please aid us by providing 10,000 tonnes of rations. We're begging you. As long as you provide that aid, the Vietnamese will never forget the goodwill you have shown us, and we will be your most loyal ally!"

The Chinese cared about their face, and Yao Li Hua felt that he had appealed to their better nature. When China had suffered in the past, and its people finding it hard to survive, China had still used its own resources to support Vietnam. They had cared about their face and image as the magnanimous big brother, that a little ration wouldn't count for much.

Yue Zhong's gaze turned chilly instantly as he released a huge killing intent that enveloped the whole room: "Just an apology and you expect it to be swept under the carpet? What about the soldiers I've lost?! An apology must be sincere! Otherwise, I wouldn't mind heading over in a month's time to wipe you out. Since I dare to kill 10,000, another 20,000 isn't an issue!"

With that billowing killing intent, Yao Li Hua's expression fell, and a hint of fear arose as he was affected directly.

As for the youthful bodyguard, he took 3 steps back, before falling onto the ground with an expression of horror.

The long-haired beauty beside Yao Li Hua became extremely pale, and her entire body was trembling.

As for the young Vietnamese loli, she was frightened and began bawling.

The moment that cute pixie-like girl started crying, Yue Zhong's killing intent was doused slightly, allowing everyone to recover slightly from the fury that reached one's bones.

Yue Zhong reclined back on the sofa and sat quietly, staring coldly at Yao Li Hua. Although he actually didn't have the intention to deploy his troops, he didn't mind using it as a threat.

Yao Li Hua's back was drenched in perspiration. The pressure that Yue Zhong emitted was at least 10 times that of Qian Ming Sheng. He kept his silence for a long while as he collected his thoughts, before replying carefully: "I apologize, Leader Yue Zhong. At our VPDC, we have 300 Chinese beauties, we're willing

to return them to appease your anger."

In their attempt to breach Thai Nguyen, the VPDC had deployed many Chinese as cannon fodder. However, the good-looking ladies were kept back at their base.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed in anger, as he threatened: "They are our people in the first place. Returning them is the natural thing to do. If you want to appease me, return them, on top of that, send 500 Vietnamese beauties over, of which a 100 must be virgins! If you don't consent, I can lead my troops and do so myself, at that time, don't blame me for not showing mercy."

Yao Li Hua immediately agreed profusely: "Ok!! Ok!! I promise you!"

If Yue Zhong really brought his men to invade, the death count would be at least in the thousands. Right now, all they had to do was abide by his demands of 800 people, and it was already as good a deal it could get.

The VPDC had too many dependants, and they had more women than men, giving 800 women over wasn't going to affect much. If Yue Zhong could be indulged in passion, then Yao Li Hua couldn't be happier.

Yue Zhong shot Yao Li Hua a cold look: "Alright, you may go. In 2 weeks, I want to see what you have promised. Otherwise...."

In such a society, having many women was more of a means to engage in sexual activities for the common citizen. However, to an established faction, they were a resource meant to ensure the survivability and continuation of the human bloodline. Procreation during an apocalypse was important. By demanding beauties from Yao Li Hua, on one hand, it was to gain valuable resources, the other was to ensure that the VPDC would not easily antagonize him, for fear of their Vietnamese people.

Yao Li Hua heaved a sigh of relief, before hastily adding: "Wait a

moment, Leader Yue Zhong. I still have a matter I would like to discuss."

"What is it?"

Yao Li Hua had already seen how unreasonable Yue Zhong could be, and he didn't hold much hope for Yue Zhong to offer help. He chose to use a trade: "I hope that you can offer up 10,000 tonnes of rations for exchange, to help the VPDC in getting past this critical situation."

Yue Zhong immediately replied with his conditions: "Sure! Equipment, skillbooks, steel, ammunition, medication, specialized tools, beauties, ammo shells, mutant beast nuclei, blood, flesh, bones, slaves, fuel, armored vehicles, any of the above can be used as trade."

Hearing those conditions, Yao Li Hua was almost despondent, every single thing that Yue Zhong had asked for was extremely rare in the current society, plus they were all important resources to an establishment.

Suddenly, he seemed to have thought of something as his eyes lit up and he asked: "Nuclei!! How much would each nuclei be worth?"

The VPDC had a number of these nuclei, as these bright coloured items looked beautiful but had no use. At first, when they appeared, many thought they were valuable, but now they were just like ornaments, and not worth much.

Yue Zhong replied casually: "An ordinary nuclei is worth a jin of rations, Type 2 ones are worth 20 jin rations each, Type 3 ones are worth 400 jin rations, Type 4 ones are worth 4,000 jin rations and Type 5s are worth 40,000 jin rations."

Not many people knew the usage of the nuclei. It was the perfect time to amass them. That was why Yue Zhong offered such cutthroat prices. It wasn't that he didn't want to offer higher, but

by offering higher, he might reveal the value of the nuclei.

When Yao Li Hua heard Yue Zhong's words, he excitedly stammered: "We have over 2,000 ordinary beast nuclei, a 130 Type 2 nuclei and 5 Type 3 nuclei!"

The numbers of experts in the VPDC were not little, and they had hunted a number of Mutant Beasts before. There were a lucky few who met the corpses of Type 3 Mutant Beasts and obtained their nuclei.

Yue Zhong then motioned to Mu Xiang Ling and said: "En! As for the details, you can work it out with her!"

Mu Xiang Ling was wise for her age, and intelligent. Not only was she adept at combat, she possessed the experiences and molding of a rough childhood. She had her ways during negotiations.

If one had to compare Strength and combat ability, she might not be able to surpass Yue Zhong, but in terms of cunning and wit, she was definitely vastly superior to Yue Zhong.

Mu Xiang Ling extended a smile towards Yao Li Hua and said: "Hi! I'm Mu Xiang Ling."

Yao Li Hua had a strange look as he looked at her, before commencing the negotiations.

After a round of sharp exchanges and negotiating, Yao Li Hua, who by then had a face full of perspiration, finally came to an agreement with Mu Xiang Ling.

In the contract, Yao Li Hua had to pay a huge price, he was forced to hand over 200 sets of equipment, 40 Level 3 Skill Books, 300 tonnes of steel, 2,000 ordinary nuclei, 130 Type 2 Nuclei, 5 Type 3 Nuclei, a 100 blood essences, 20,000 ammunition shells, 8 machine gun mounted vehicles, 1 tonne of fuel, 5 tonne of Mutant Beast bones from various Mutant Beasts, a thousand Vietnamese women, and many smaller items that he couldn't keep track of just to exchange for 10,000 tonnes of rations.

Table of Contents

[God and Devil World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 401: Yangtze Gang](#)

[Chapter 402: Counter Attack](#)

[Chapter 403: Bringing Down The House!](#)

[Chapter 404: The Clutches of Foreign Forces!](#)

[Chapter 405: The Judgement Corps!](#)

[Chapter 406: \[Raven\] Nano Combat Uniform Design!](#)

[Chapter 407: Kingdom of God](#)

[Chapter 408: The 4 Great Triads!](#)

[Chapter 409: Mutant Sparrow Flock!](#)

[Chapter 410: Mountain Range](#)

[Chapter 411: The Ravenous Beast Horde Attacks!](#)

[Chapter 412: Chen Hongye! Assassination Attempt!](#)

[Chapter 413: Killing Chen Hongye](#)

[Chapter 414: The Situation Gradually Collapses!](#)

[Chapter 415: Yue Zhong's Combat Strength!](#)

[Chapter 416: Continuous Level Up!](#)

[Chapter 417: Absorbing the Scattered Troops!](#)

[Chapter 418: The Warriors come to Submit!](#)

[Chapter 419: Type 3 Mutant Green Jiao-Python!](#)

[Chapter 420: Fighting the Green Jiao-Python!](#)

[Chapter 421: Promotion!Level 60!](#)

[Chapter 422: Di Ya's Resolve](#)

[Chapter 423: Chaos Begins!](#)

[Chapter 424: Mobilization!](#)

[Chapter 425: Snatching the Granary!](#)

[Chapter 426: Threats](#)

[Chapter 427: Negotiations Begin!](#)

[Chapter 428: Assassination! The Situation Spirals Out of Control!](#)

[Chapter 429: Chai Zi Cang submits](#)

[Chapter 430: Fractured Military!](#)

[Chapter 431: Forced Mobilization!](#)

[Chapter 432: Defeat of Zhu Lei's Troops!](#)

[Chapter 433: Continuous Submissions](#)

[Chapter 434: Gaining Guillin City](#)

[Chapter 435: Yu Xin's First Night!](#)

[Chapter 436: Strange Movements in Europe!](#)

[Chapter 437: Falcon Type I 14.5mm Sniper Rifle!](#)

[Chapter 438: Conflict At The Restaurant!](#)

[Chapter 439: Cleaning Up the Gangs!](#)

[Chapter 440: The Zombie Horde Moves!](#)

[Chapter 441: Devourer](#)

[Chapter 442: Collapsing the enemy With a Single shot!](#)

[Chapter 443: Type 3 Lightning!](#)

[Chapter 444: Chaos Strikes!](#)

[Chapter 445: The Powerful War Phoenix Squad!](#)

[Chapter 446: Fearsome Weapons of War!](#)

[Chapter 447: The Zombie Horde Attacks!](#)

[Chapter 448: Executing the Devourer!](#)

[Chapter 449: Terrifying Level 70 Devourer!](#)

[Chapter 450: Tank Destroyed!](#)

[Chapter 451: Defeating the Zombie Horde!](#)

[Chapter 452: Chen Yao Seeks Help!](#)

[Chapter 453: Li Shi Min!](#)

[Chapter 454: Fury!](#)

[Chapter 455: Kill Them All!](#)

[Chapter 456: Infuriated Vietnamese!](#)

[Chapter 457: Seeing Chen Yao Again!](#)

[Chapter 458: salt](#)

[Chapter 459: The Cruel Vietnamese Army!](#)

[Chapter 460: The 4 Pillars of the Vietnamese Army!](#)

[Chapter 461: Killing The Four Pillars](#)

[Chapter 462: Human Firepower](#)

[Chapter 463: Killing Wu Chen Yi!](#)

[Chapter 464: Revenge!](#)

[Chapter 465: Pen!](#)

[Chapter 466: Destined To Cooperate!](#)

[Chapter 467: Mutant Flower-Poison Spider!](#)

[Chapter 468: Huge Battle of Type 3 Mutant Beasts](#)

[Chapter 469: Continuous Harvest!](#)

[Chapter 470: Type 3 Ferocious Ape](#)

[Chapter 471: Triple Attribute Evolver!](#)

[Chapter 472: Snipe! Sky Wolf Battalion](#)

[Chapter 473: Wu Tong Xiong!](#)

[Chapter 474: Pouncing on Thin Air!](#)

[Chapter 475: Battle at Lang Son!](#)

[Chapter 476: The Oriole Behind \(From the idiom: The mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind: meaning to pursue a narrow gain, neglecting the greater danger\)](#)

[Chapter 477: Cooperation!](#)

[Chapter 478: Might of The Forces of Kingdom Of God](#)

[Chapter 479: Tragic Battle!](#)

[Chapter 480: Lang Son City Falls!](#)

[Chapter 481: The Fruits Of Victory Change Hands](#)

[Chapter 482: In-fighting!](#)

[Chapter 483: Cleaning Up](#)

[Chapter 484: Cang Ya!](#)

[Chapter 485: Surrounded](#)

[Chapter 486: Intense Battle!](#)

[Chapter 487: Harvest](#)

[Chapter 488: Immigration!](#)

[Chapter 489: Nangong Bing Yun](#)

[Chapter 490: Green Town!](#)

[Chapter 491: Night Raid](#)

[Chapter 492: Total Suppression!](#)

[Chapter 493: Envoy Appears!](#)

[Chapter 494: A Falling Out](#)

[Chapter 495: Viscous Undercurrents!](#)

[Chapter 496: The VPDC Attacks!](#)

[Chapter 497: Probing Attack!](#)

[Chapter 498: Crushing Defeat of the VPDC!](#)

[Chapter 499: Turmoil!](#)

[Chapter 500: Negotiating Survival](#)